# COMPLEX ANALYTIC VANISHING CYCLES FOR FORMAL SCHEMES

VLADIMIR G. BERKOVICH

Contents



This research was supported by Israel Science Foundation (grant No. 1463/15), US-Israel Binational Science Foundation, Minerva Foundation and Alexander von Humboldt Foundation, and was carried out when the author was a Friends of the Institute for Advanced Study member.

## 0. Introduction

0.1. **Previous work on vanishing cycles for formal schemes.** Let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation, $k^\circ$ its ring of integers, $k^{\circ\circ}$ the maximal ideal of $k^\circ$, and $\widetilde{k}=k^\circ/k^{\circ\circ}$ the residue field of $k$. A formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$ is said to be special if it is a locally finite union of open affine subschemes of the form $\mathrm{Spf}(A)$ with $A$ isomorphic to a quotient of $k^\circ\{T_1,\dots,T_m\}[[S_1,\dots,S_n]]$. If all of these open affine subschemes can be found with $n=0$, such $\mathfrak{X}$ is said to be of locally finite type (or of finite type if in addition $\mathfrak{X}$ is quasicompact). Each special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$ has a generic fiber $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$, which is a paracompact strictly $k$-analytic space, and a closed fiber $\mathfrak{X}_s$, which is a scheme of locally finite type over $\widetilde{k}$. The class of formal schemes of locally finite type is preserved under formal completion $\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ of $\mathfrak{X}$ along an open subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathfrak{X}_s$, and the class of special formal schemes is preserved under formal completion of $\mathfrak{X}$ along an arbitrary subscheme of $\mathfrak{X}_s$. For example, if $\mathcal{Y}$ is a scheme of finite type over $k^\circ$, then the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ (resp. $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$) of $\mathcal{Y}$ along its closed fiber $\mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{k^\circ} \widetilde{k}$ (resp. along an arbitrary subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$) is a formal scheme of finite type (resp. a quasicompact special formal scheme) over $k^\circ$. All of the special formal schemes considered in this paper are assumed to be quasicompact.

In [Ber96b] and [Ber15, §3.1], we constructed, for every special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$, a vanishing cycles functor $\Psi_\eta : \mathfrak{X}_\eta^\sim \to \mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}(G)^\sim$ from the category of étale sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ to the category of étale sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}} = \mathfrak{X}_s \otimes_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{k^{\mathrm{a}}}$ provided with a continuous discrete action of $G = \mathrm{Gal}(k^{\mathrm{a}}/k)$ compatible with the action of $G$ on $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$, where $k^{\mathrm{a}}$ is a fixed algebraic closure of $k$. In particular, if $\Lambda$ is an étale abelian sheaf on the spectrum of $k$, then for the locally constant sheaf $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}$ induced by $\Lambda$ there is an associated complex $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ of sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$. The construction is functorial and, therefore, any morphism of special formal schemes $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ gives rise to a morphism

$$\theta_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) : \varphi_{\overline{s}}^*(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \to R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}) \ .$$

The corresponding homomorphism between $q$-th cohomology sheaves is denoted by $\theta_\eta^q(\varphi, \Lambda)$. Among other things, we proved the following results. Suppose $\Lambda$ is finite of order not divisible by $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k})$. Then

(i) the sheaves $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are constructible;
(ii) one has $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) = R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}, R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$, where $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}} = \mathfrak{X}_\eta \widehat{\otimes}_k \widehat{k^{\mathrm{a}}}$;
(iii) given $\mathfrak{X}$, $\mathfrak{Y}$ and $\Lambda$, as above, there exists an ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ of $\mathfrak{Y}$ such that, for any pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$ and any $q$, one has $\theta_\eta^q(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta_\eta^q(\psi, \Lambda)$;
(iv) given a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over a Henselian discrete valuation ring with completion $k^\circ$ and a subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$, there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}_\eta})\big|_{\overline{\mathcal{Z}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta})$, where $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}_\eta})$ is the vanishing cycles complex of the scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ and $\overline{\mathcal{Z}} = \mathcal{Z} \otimes_{\widetilde{k}} \widetilde{k^{\mathrm{a}}}$.

0.2. **The purpose of the paper.** Although the above functor $\Psi_\eta$ gives rise to vanishing cycles complexes for arbitrary $\Lambda$'s, e.g., $\mathbf{Z}$, those complexes do not possess good properties, and the reason is that such properties are not satisfied by the integral étale cohomology groups of algebraic varieties and non-Archimedean analytic spaces.

On the other hand, if $\mathcal{Y}$ is a scheme of finite type over the ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0}$ of functions analytic in a neighborhood of zero in the complex plane $\mathbb{C}$, one can define vanishing cycles complexes $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}_\eta^h})$ on the analytification $\mathcal{Y}_s^h$ of $\mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0}} \mathbf{C}$ for arbitrary locally constant sheaves $\Lambda$ on an open punctured disc $D^*$ with center at zero in the complex plane $\mathbb{C}$. By [SGA7, Exp. XIV], if $\Lambda$ is finite, there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}_\eta^h})$, and the above property (iv) implies that, for any subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$, there is a canonical $\pi_1(\mathbb{C}^*)$-equivariant isomorphism

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Z}^h} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta})^h \ .$$

A natural question (mentioned, for example, by Kontsevich and Soibelman in [KS11, 7.1, 7.4]) is as follows. Can one extend the construction of the vanishing cycles complexes for special formal schemes over the completion $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{C},0}$ of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0}$ and for arbitrary locally constant sheaves $\Lambda$ on $D^*$ so that, in the case of the formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, one gets the complex $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Z}^h}$?

The purpose of this paper is to give a positive answer to this question and to derive a construction of integral "étale" cohomology groups for a class of non-Archimedean analytic spaces over the fraction field of $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{C},0}$, which includes the analytifications of proper schemes over that field.

We in fact construct vanishing cycles complexes also for special formal schemes over the completion $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{R},0}$ of the ring of convergent power series with real coefficients $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R},0}$. In this case they consist of sheaves provided with an action of the semidirect product $\pi_1(\mathbb{C}^*) \rtimes \langle c \rangle$, where $c$ is the complex conjugation on $\mathbb{C}$. For this we introduce the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ of so called $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces (see §0.3).

Furthermore, in the classical situation of [SGA7, Exp. XIV] (resp. in the situation of §0.1) the construction of the vanishing cycles complexes depends on the choice of a universal covering of a punctured open disc (resp. an algebraic closure of the field $k$) and, in fact, the object obtained is a functor from the corresponding groupoids. Our ground field here is a non-Archimedean field $K$ non-canonically isomorphic to the fraction field of either $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{C},0}$, or $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{R},0}$. For such $K$, we introduce a groupoid which plays the role of the above ones and allows us to work with an analog of the category of étale locally constant sheaves on a punctured open disc (see §0.4). Moreover, the use of this groupoid is a convenient way to encode dependence of the comparison between "étale" and de Rham cohomology groups on the choice of a generator of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$ (see §0.8).

0.3. **R-analytic spaces.** In the book [Ber90] we introduced an approach to non-Archimedean analytic geometry which is a natural generalization of the definition of a complex analytic space, and noticed that one can apply that approach to the field of real numbers $\mathbf{R}$ and get a new object, an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space, which is different from the usual notion of a real analytic space (see [GMT86]). For example, the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic affine line $\mathbb{R}$ can be identified with the closed upper half-plane $\widehat{\mathbf{H}} = \{z \in \mathbf{C} \big| \mathrm{Im}(z) \geq 0\}$ whereas the classical real analytic affine line is the field $\mathbf{R}$ naturally embedded $\mathbb{R}$. By the way, we denote the complex analytic affine line by $\mathbb{C}$ in order to distinguish it from the field $\mathbf{C}$ in spite of the fact that the canonical map $\mathbf{C} \to \mathbb{C}$ is a bijection.

Although $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces are closely related to complex analytic ones (called here $\mathbf{C}$-analytic spaces) and can be described in terms of the latter, they have an independent interest. For example, they include non-orientable manifolds, like Moebius strips and Klein bottles, and we show that there is an equivalence between the category of smooth $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces of dimension one and the category of so called Klein surfaces. In was in fact Klein who introduced in his 1882 book some kind of an analytic structure, called dianalytic, in order to endow with it non-orientable surfaces (see [AG71] for the history of this subject).

**R**-analytic spaces have some features of non-Archimedean ones. For example, the topology of the underlying topological spaces is not strong enough to describe expected properties of their cohomology, and there is a stronger étale topology. It is used to introduce étale universal coverings, étale fundamental groups, étale sheaves, and étale cohomology groups. Furthermore, there is the ground field extension functor $\mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n \to \mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : X \mapsto X_{\mathbf{C}}$. For such $X$, the **C**-analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is endowed with an involutive automorphism $c$, called the complex conjugation, so that $X$ is the quotient of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ by the cyclic group $\langle c\rangle$ (the automorphism and the quotient are considered in the category of locally **R**-ringed spaces).

We consider in fact **C**-analytic and **R**-analytic spaces simulteneously. For this, beginning with §2 we use the bold letter **F** for an Archimedean field, i.e., **R** or **C**, and denote the corresponding **F**-analytic affine space of dimension $n \ge 0$ by $\mathbb{F}^n$, or just $\mathbb{F}$ if $n = 1$. We fix a coordinate function $z$ on the affine line $\mathbb{F}$. The category of **F**-analytic spaces is denoted by $\mathbf{F}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$. In order to make exposition uniform, we use the notation $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ even for **C**-analytic spaces $X$ bearing in mind that in this case $X_{\mathbf{C}} = X$. We also denote by $\mathcal{K}$ the fraction field of the discrete valuation ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$. For the sake of uniformity, we use the notation $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$ for the fraction field of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0}$ even if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ and, as a result, $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathcal{K}$.

0.4. **The field $K$ and associated groupoids.** Beginning with §4, the capital letter $K$ is used for a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation and such that $\mathbf{F} \subset K^\circ$ and $\mathbf{F} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{K}$. Each generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$ induces a homomorphism $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0} \to K^\circ$ that takes the coordinate function $z$ on $\mathbb{F}$ to $\varpi$. It gives rise to an isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0} \widetilde{\to} K^\circ$ and an embedding $\mathcal{K} \hookrightarrow K$ whose image is dense in $K$. The valuation on $K$ induces a valuation on $\mathcal{K}$, which does not depend on the element $\varpi$. We also set $K_{\mathbf{C}} = K \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$. Of course, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $K_{\mathbf{C}} = K$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a quadratic extension of $K$, but in fact it is a notation for the pair $(K, K_{\mathbf{C}})$ since the constructions related to $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ depend on the original field $K$. For example, we denote by $c$ the automorphism $\alpha \mapsto \overline{\alpha}$ of $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $K$ that induces the complex conjugation on **C**.

Let $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ be the groupoid whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $K_{\mathbf{C}}^{\circ\circ}$ of $K_{\mathbf{C}}^\circ$ and morphisms are defined as follows. For $\varpi, \varpi' \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, a morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ is a transformation of $K_{\mathbf{C}}^\circ$ associated to an element $\beta \in K_{\mathbf{C}}^\circ$, and it is either a *$\beta$-morphism of first type*, i.e., of the form $\alpha \mapsto \alpha + \beta$ with $\exp(\beta) = \frac{\varpi}{\varpi'}$, or in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ also a *$\beta$-morphism of second type*, i.e., of the form $\alpha \mapsto \overline{\alpha} + \beta$ with $\exp(\beta) = \frac{\overline{\varpi}}{\varpi'}$. It is easy to see that one can compose morphisms, and so $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ is really a groupoid. Although in most constructions of the paper we work with the groupoid $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, in some of them we have to use the full subcategory $\Pi(K)$ of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$. We also use the non-full subcategory $\pi(K)$ of $\Pi(K)$ with the same set of objects and the sets $\mathrm{Hom}_{\pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi')$ consisting of the $\beta$-morphisms of first type with $\beta \in K^\circ$. Of course, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, all three categories coincide, and the group $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi)$ is canonically isomorphic to $\mathbf{Z}(1) = 2\pi i\mathbf{Z}$. Its generator, i.e., the $2\pi i$-morphism of first type is denoted by $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, then $\mathrm{Hom}_{\pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi')$ is always a one element set which corresponds to the unique element $\beta \in K^\circ$ with $\exp(\beta) = \frac{\varpi}{\varpi'}$. The $2\pi i$-morphism of first type $\varpi \to \varpi$ in $\Pi(K)$ is also denoted by $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$, and the 0-morphism of second type in $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi)$ is denoted by $c^{(\varpi)}$. For for any morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\pi(K)$ one has $\varphi \circ \sigma^{(\varpi)} = \sigma^{(\varpi')} \circ \varphi$ and $\varphi \circ c^{(\varpi)} = c^{(\varpi')} \circ \varphi$.

Since for given $\varpi$ and $\varpi'$ such a morphism $\varphi$ is unique, it gives rise to a canonical isomorphism $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi)\widetilde{\to}\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi',\varpi')$. In particular, all of the groups $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi)$ are canonically isomorphic to the semi-direct product $\mathbf{Z}(1)\rtimes\langle c\rangle$ with $c$ acting as inversion on the invariant subgroup.

There is a faithful functor from $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the following étale fundamental groupoid $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ of the field $K$. Given a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and an integer $n\geq 1$, we set $K^{(\varpi),n}=K_{\mathbf{C}}[T]/(T^n-\varpi)$. It is a Galois extension of $K$ generated over $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ by the image of $T$, which is denoted by $\varpi_n$. For every integer $m\geq 1$, there is a canonical embedding $K^{(\varpi),n}\hookrightarrow K^{(\varpi),mn}$ that takes $\varpi_n$ to $\varpi^m_{mn}$. The inductive limit $K^{(\varpi)}$ of the fields $K^{(\varpi),n}$ taken over those embeddings is an algebraic closure of $K$. The objects of $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ are the fields $K^{(\varpi)}$ for generators $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the set of morphisms $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K_{\mathbf{C}})}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi')})$ is the profinite set of isomorphisms of fields $K^{(\varpi)}\widetilde{\to}K^{(\varpi')}$ over $K$. We also denote by $G(K)$ the full subcategory of $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose family of objects are the fields $K^{(\varpi)}$ for generators $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$. For example, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$, $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K)}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi)})$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(K^{(\varpi)}/K)$, which is canonically isomorphic to $\widehat{\mathbf{Z}}(1)=\varprojlim_n\mu_n$ and, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K)}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi)})$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(K^{(\varpi)}/K)$, which is canonically isomorphic to the semi-direct product $\widehat{\mathbf{Z}}(1)\rtimes\langle c\rangle$. The functor $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\to G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ takes $\varpi\in\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the field $K^{(\varpi)}$, and it takes a $\beta$-morphism of first (resp. second) type $\varphi:\varpi\to\varpi'$ to the isomorphism $\varphi_{\overline{K}}:K^{(\varpi)}\widetilde{\to}K^{(\varpi')}$ over $K$ with $\varphi_{\overline{K}}(\varpi_n)=\exp(\frac{\beta}{n})\varpi'_n$ and which acts trivially (resp. as the complex conjugation) on $K_{\mathbf{C}}$. It gives rise to a functor $\Pi(K)\to G(K)$.

One can make similar constructions for the field $\mathcal{K}$ and get full subcategories $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})\subset\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $G(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})\subset\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$ of $\mathcal{K}^{\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$. One has also full subcategories $\pi(\mathcal{K})\subset\pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$, $\Pi(\mathcal{K})\subset\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$ and $G(\mathcal{K})\subset G(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$ whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$ of $\mathcal{K}^{\circ}$. The category $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$ is a subgroupoid of $G(\mathcal{K})$.

If $\mathcal{P}$ is a groupoid, a $\mathcal{P}$-space is a contravariant functor $P\mapsto X^{(P)}$ from $\mathcal{P}$ to the category of topological (or analytic) spaces. A $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $F$ on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is a family of sheaves $F^{(P)}$ on $X^{(P)}$ satisfying natural properties of compatibility with respect to morphisms in $\mathcal{P}$ (see §4.3). In §4.4 we show that the category of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $X$ is a topos. The derived category of abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $X$ is denoted by $D(X(\mathcal{P}))$. If $X$ is a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space, i.e., the corresponding functor takes all objects to the same space $X$ and all morphisms to the identity map, a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf is just a covariant functor from $\mathcal{P}$ to the category of sheaves on $X$. If it is a one point space, the abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on it are called $\mathcal{P}$-modules and their category is denoted by $\mathcal{P}$-Mod. The map from $X$ to a one point space defines a functor $\Lambda\mapsto\underline{\Lambda}_X$ from the category of $\mathcal{P}$-modules to that of abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $X$.

There is an equivalence between the category of étale abelian sheaves on the spectrum of $K$ and the category of discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules. Namely, if $\Lambda$ is an étale sheaf, the correspondence $\varpi\mapsto\Lambda(K^{(\varpi)})$ is a discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. For this reason one can work with discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules instead of étale abelian sheaves on the spectrum of $K$.

There is a parallel geometric construction. Namely, let $\mathbf{D}^*$ be the projective system of punctured open discs with center at zero in $\mathbb{F}$. In Example 4.2.1(i), we construct a $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*}$ that takes each $\varpi\in\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ to an étale universal covering $\mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)}$ of $\mathbf{D}^*$. Then the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto L(\mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)})$ gives rise to an equivalence between the category of étale abelian locally constant sheaves on $\mathbf{D}^*$ and the category of $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-Mod. For this reason, $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-Mod plays the role of the category of étale abelian locally constant sheaves on a punctured open disc (non-existent for the field $K$).

0.5. **Complex analytic vanishing cycles for formal schemes.** For a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$, we consider the complex analytification $\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}$ of $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}} = \mathfrak{X}_s \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$ as a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space on which morphisms of first type act trivially and those of second type act through the complex conjugation on $\mathbf{C}$.

The main purpose of this paper is to construct, for every (quasicompact) special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$, an exact functor

$$D^b(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod}) \to D^b(\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}}))) : \Lambda^{\cdot} \mapsto R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ .$$

(The notation $R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ for the resulting complex is suggestive.) We prove that the complexes $R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ possess the following properties:

(i) they are functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$, i.e., every morphism of special formal schemes $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ gives rise to a morphism of complexes

$$\theta^h_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^{\cdot}) : \varphi^{h*}_{\overline{s}}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \to R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$$

which, in its turn, induces homomorphisms $\theta^{h,q}_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ between $q$-th cohomology sheaves;

(ii) there is a canonical isomorphism

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}} \ ;$$

(iii) the sheaves $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are (algebraically) constructible in the sense of [Ver76, §2], and the action of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ on them is quasi-unipotent;

(iv) if a morphism $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ is formally smooth, then $\theta^h_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ is an isomorphism;

(v) given $\mathfrak{X}$ with rig-smooth generic fiber, there exists $n \geq 1$ such that, for every $\mathfrak{Y}$ *of finite type over* $K^\circ$, every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ congruent modulo $(K^{\circ\circ})^n$, every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ which is either finite or has no $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion, and every $q$, one has $\theta^{h,q}_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^{h,q}_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$;

(vi) given $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$ both with rig-smooth generic fibers, there exists an ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ of $\mathfrak{Y}$ such that, for every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$, every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ as in (v), and every $q$, one has $\theta^{h,q}_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^{h,q}_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$;

(vii) given a complex of discrete $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]$-modules $\Lambda^{\cdot}$ with finite cohomology modules, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))^h \widetilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ ,$$

where $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ is the vanishing cycles complex on $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$ from §0.1;

(viii) given a morphism of germs of $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$, a subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{B,b}} \mathbf{F}$, and $\Lambda^{\cdot} \in D(\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod})$, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta}) \ .$$

Here is an explanation of the objects on both sides of the isomorphism in (viii).

First of all, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ of $\mathcal{Y}$ along the subscheme $\mathcal{Z}$ is a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ$, and the right hand side in (viii) is the value at $\Lambda^{\cdot}$ of the above exact functor $R\Psi^h_\eta$ associated to it.

Furthermore, the scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ defines an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h$ over an open neighborhood of $b$ in $B$. If the neighborhood is small enough, there is an induced morphism $\mathcal{Y}^h \to \mathbb{F}$. The same construction applied to the schemes $\mathcal{Y}_s$ and $\mathcal{Y}_\eta = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}} \mathcal{K}$ gives the $\mathbf{F}$-analytification $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ and a space $\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta$, which can be identified with the preimage of $\mathbb{F}^*$ under the above morphism. The complex of $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$-modules $\Lambda^{\cdot}$ defines a complex of $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-modules which is considered as a complex of locally constant sheaves on $\mathbb{F}^*$ whose pullback on $\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta$ is denoted by $\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}$. The complex $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})$ on the left hand side in (viii) is the value at $\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}$ of the derived functor of the $\mathbf{F}$-analytic vanishing cycles functor $\Psi_\eta$ from [SGA7, Exp. XIV] (its definition, extended to the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, is recalled in §2.3).

The continuity properties (v) and (vi) are stronger than corresponding results from [Ber96b] and [Ber15] (mentioned in §0.1(iii)), but the assumptions on rig-smoothness are probably superfluous. In any case, if $\mathfrak{X} = \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ as in (viii), then $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is rig-smooth if and only if there exists an open neighborhood $V$ of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$ such that the induced morphism $V \to \mathbb{F}$ is smooth outside the preimage of zero.

**Remark 0.5.1.** Let $\mathbf{F}$ be the field $\mathbf{C}$ (resp. $\mathbf{R}$). Recall that an $\mathbf{F}$-valued function in a neighborhood of zero in $\mathbf{R}^n$ is said to be smooth if it is infinitely differentiable. Such a function defines a Taylor series expansion $\mathrm{T}(f)$ which is an element of $\mathbf{F}[[T_1, \dots, T_n]]$. Recall also that, by Borel's Lemma ([GG73, Ch. IV, §2]), each element of the latter ring is the Taylor series expansion of some smooth $\mathbf{F}$-valued function in an open neighborhood of zero in $\mathbf{R}^n$. Suppose now that such a function $f$ is equal to zero at zero. Then $\mathrm{T}(f)$ lies in the maximal ideal of the above ring and, therefore, it defines a morphism of formal schemes $\mathfrak{X} = \mathrm{Spf}(\mathbf{F}[[T_1, \dots, T_n]]) \to \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0})$. Since $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$ is a one point space, $\psi^q_f = R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are just finitely generated abelian groups provided with a quasi-unipotent action of the infinite cyclic group $2\pi i\mathbf{Z}$ (resp. the semi-direct product $2\pi i\mathbf{Z} \rtimes \langle c\rangle$). The groups $\psi^q_f$ are functorial in $f$, i.e., each morphism (resp. isomorphism) of smooth germs $(\mathbf{R}^m, 0) \to (\mathbf{R}^n, 0)$ defines homomorphisms (resp. isomorphisms) $\psi^q_f \to \psi^q_g$, where $g$ is the lift of $f$ to $(\mathbf{R}^m, 0)$. The continuity property (vi) implies that, given $f$ on $(\mathbf{R}^n, 0)$ and $g$ on $(\mathbf{R}^m, 0)$, there exists $k \geq 1$ such that, for any pair of morphisms $(\mathbf{R}^m, 0) \to (\mathbf{R}^n, 0)$ that have the same $k$-jets and take $f$ to $g$, the corresponding homomorphisms $\psi^q_f \to \psi^q_g$ coincide. Notice that if, after an automorphism of $(\mathbf{R}^n, 0)$, the Taylor series $\mathrm{T}(f)$ coincides with that of a function analytic in an open neighborhood of zero in $\mathbb{F}^n$, then $\psi^q_f$ are isomorphic to the vanishing cycles cohomology groups of that analytic function. But there exist $f$'s without this property (see [Sh76]). It would be interesting to know the geometric meaning of the groups $\psi^q_f$ for arbitrary smooth complex or real valued functions $f$.

0.6. **Ingredients of the construction.** The main ingredients used in the construction of the vanishing cycles complexes and establishing their properties are Michael Temkin's work on functorial desingularization of quasi-excellent schemes in characteristic zero ([Tem08], [Tem18]), the work of Kazuya Kato and his collaborators on log geometry ([Kato89], [KN99], [Nak98]), and author's work on vanishing cycles for formal schemes ([Ber93], [Ber96b], [Ber15]) and on the structure of polystable formal schemes ([Ber99]).

Namely, a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of locally finite type over a discrete valuation Henselian ring $R$ (such as $K^\circ$ or $\mathcal{K}^\circ = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$) is said to be distinguished if locally in the étale topology it is isomorphic to an affine scheme of the form Spec$(A)$ for $A = R[T_1, \dots, T_n]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \varpi)$, where $1 \le m \le n$, $e_i \ge 1$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, and $\varpi$ is a generator of the maximal ideal of $R$. We always consider such $\mathcal{Y}$ as a log scheme provided with the canonical log structure (which is, for the above affine scheme, is generated by the coordinate functions $T_1, \dots, T_m$).

A special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$ is said to be distinguished if locally in the étale topology it is isomorphic to an affine formal scheme of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is a distinguished scheme over $K^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ is the union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{K^\circ} \widetilde{K}$. The log structure on the scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ induces a log structure on the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$. Using results from [Ber99], we show that the latter log structure coincides with the canonical one, i.e., the value of the monoid sheaf on $\mathfrak{U}$ étale over $\mathfrak{X}$ is the multiplicative submonoid of $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U})$ consisting of the functions invertible on the generic fiber $\mathfrak{U}_\eta$. In particular, this log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ as well as that induced on the complex analytification $\mathfrak{X}_s^h$ of the closed fiber $\mathfrak{X}_s$ is functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$.

Furthermore, Temkin's results from [Tem08] and [Tem18] imply that each special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$ admits a proper hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ by distinguished formal schemes $\mathfrak{Y}_n$, $n \ge 0$. Each $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space $Y_n = \mathfrak{Y}_{n,\bar{s}}^h$ provided with the log structure induced from $\mathfrak{Y}_n$ defines, by the construction of Kato and Nakayama from [KN99], a topological space $Y_n^{\log}$. By the above, the latter form an augmented simplicial topological space $a^{\log} : Y_\bullet^{\log} = (Y_n^{\log})_{n \ge 0} \to \mathfrak{X}_{\bar{s}}^h$. We define the vanishing cycles complexes $R\Psi_\eta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ on $\mathfrak{X}_{\bar{s}}^h$ in terms of this augmented simplicial topological space, and show that their cohomology sheaves $R^q\Psi_\eta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are (algebraically) constructible in the sense of [Ver76].

Finally, in order to establish properties of those complexes and, in particular, to verify that they do not depend on the choice of the proper hypercovering, we use results from [KN99] and [Nak99] to show that the same construction for the groups $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$ gives the analytification of the vanishing cycles complexes $R\Psi_\eta((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ introduced in [Ber96b] and [Ber15].

0.7. **Integral "étale" cohomology of restricted analytic spaces.** For a quasicompact special formal scheme flat over $K^\circ$ and a $\Pi(K_\mathbf{C})$-module $\Lambda$, we set

$$H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\bar{\eta}}, \Lambda) = R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}_{\bar{s}}^h, R\Psi_\eta^h(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \ .$$

This definition imitates the property (ii) from §0.1 and, if $\Lambda$ comes from a finite discrete $G(K_\mathbf{C})$-module, gives the usual étale cohomology groups of the analytic space $\mathfrak{X}_{\bar{\eta}}$ with coefficients in $\Lambda$. We believe that the groups on the left hand side depend only on the $K$-analytic space $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ for arbitrary $\Lambda$'s, but can deduce from results of the previous subsection only the following fact. For any admissible proper morphism $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ (i.e., a proper morphism with $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}_\eta$), the induced maps $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\bar{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\bar{\eta}}, \Lambda)$ are isomorphisms. This leads us to introduction of the category $K$-$\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ of *restricted $K$-analytic spaces*, which is the localization of the category quasicompact special formal schemes flat over $K^\circ$ with respect to admissible proper morphisms. Its objects are denoted by $\widehat{X}$, $\widehat{Y}$ and so on. There is an evident faithful (but not fully faithful) functor $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n} \to K\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : \widehat{X} \mapsto X$ so that the generic fiber functor $\mathfrak{X} \mapsto \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ goes through it. Raynaud theory implies that this functor gives rise to an equivalence between the full subcategory of $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ formed by formal schemes flat and of finite type over $K^\circ$ and the category of compact strictly $K$-analytic spaces.

We fix for every restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ a formal model $\mathfrak{X}$ and, for a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$, we set $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) = H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda)$. For $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, the $\varpi$-component of the latter is denoted by $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)}, \Lambda)$. If $\Lambda$ has no $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion, one has $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) = H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \Lambda$. We prove that

(i) the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda)$ are well defined, and the correspondence $\widehat{X} \mapsto H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda)$ is functorial in $\widehat{X}$;

(ii) $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ are quasi-unipotent $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules and finitely generated over $\mathbf{Z}$;

(iii) for every prime $l$, there are canonical $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-equivariant isomorphisms

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathbf{Z}_l \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}_l) = \varprojlim H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}/l^n\mathbf{Z}) \ ,$$

where $H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}/l^n\mathbf{Z})$ are the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\varpi \mapsto H^q(X^{(\varpi)}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}/l^n\mathbf{Z})$ and the latter are étale cohomology groups of $X^{(\varpi)} = X \widehat{\otimes}_K \widehat{K^{(\varpi)}}$ from [Ber93];

(iv) there are canonical $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-equivariant homomorphisms

$$H^q(|\overline{X}|, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$$

compatible with the canonical homomorphisms

$$H^q(|\overline{X}|, \mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}) \ ,$$

where the groups on the left hand side are the cohomology groups of the underlying topological $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $|\overline{X}|$ of $\overline{X}$;

(v) in the situation of (viii) from §0.5, if $\mathcal{Y}$ is separated, then for $\widehat{X}$ represented by $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ there are canonical $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-equivariant isomorphisms

$$H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \ ,$$

where $H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z}) = \varinjlim H^q(V_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z})$ with the inductive limit taken over open neighborhoods $V$ of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$ and $V_{\overline{\eta}}$ is the preimage of $\mathbb{C}^*$ in $\overline{V}$;

(vi) in the situation of (viii) from §0.5, if $\mathcal{Y}$ is separated and $\mathcal{Y} = \mathcal{Y}_\eta$, then every morphism $X \to \mathcal{Y}^{\text{an}}$ from a compact strictly $K$-analytic space $X$ gives rise to canonical $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-equivariant homomorphisms $H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(\overline{X}, \mathbf{Z})$, which are also functorial in $X$ and $\mathcal{Y}$.

The property (iii), applied to $X = \mathcal{Y}^{\text{an}}$ for a proper scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ over $K$, gives rise to a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-equivariant isomorphism

$$H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^{\text{an}}}, \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathbf{Z}_l \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}}, \mathbf{Z}_l) \ ,$$

where the right hand side is the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\varpi \mapsto H^q(\mathcal{Y}^{(\varpi)}, \mathbf{Z}_l)$ and the latter is the $l$-adic étale cohomology group of the scheme $\mathcal{Y}^{(\varpi)} = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_K K^{(\varpi)}$.

In (v), if $\mathcal{Y}$ comes from a separated scheme $\mathcal{Y}'$ of finite type over $\mathbf{F}$, i.e., $\mathcal{Y} = \mathcal{Y}' \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathcal{K}^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y}'$, then $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ is just the cohomology group $H^q(\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}, \mathbf{Z})$ at which morphisms of first type in $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ act trivially, and those of second type act through complex conjugation on $\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}$.

In (vi), $\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}}$ is the $K$-analytic space associated (in [Ber15, §3.2]) to the scheme $\mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{B,b}} (\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b} \otimes_{K^\circ} K)$, and $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h} = \mathcal{Y}^h \times_{\mathbb{F}^*} \mathbb{C}$. The group $H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}, \mathbf{Z})$ is in fact an inductive limit of the corresponding cohomology groups taken over open neighborhoods of the point $b$ in $B$ (see §2). If the above $\mathcal{Y}$ is proper over $\mathcal{K}$, the property (v) implies that there is a canonical isomorphism $H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}}}, \mathbf{Z})$.

We conjecture that the above $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ are provided with a mixed Hodge structure which is functorial in $\widehat{X}$ and such that, if $X = \mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}}$ for a proper scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ over $\mathcal{K}$ as in the previous paragraph, it coincides with the limit mixed Hodge structure on the groups $H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}, \mathbf{Z})$.

0.8. **Comparison with de Rham cohomology.** A restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ is said to be rig-smooth, if the $K$-analytic space $X$ is rig-smooth. For such $\widehat{X}$, its distinguished formal models form a cofinal family in that of all formal models, and the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ are defined as the hypercohomology of the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ}$ of logarithmic differential forms over $K^\circ$ of a fixed distinguished formal model $\mathfrak{X}$ of $\widehat{X}$. Notice that, if $X$ is compact and, in particular, $\mathfrak{X}$ is of finite type over $K^\circ$, then there are canonical isomorphisms $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ) \otimes_{K^\circ} K \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/K)$, where the latter are the usual de Rham cohomology groups of $X$, i.e., the hypercohomology groups of the de Rham complex of differential forms $\Omega^{\cdot}_{X/K}$ considered in the G-topology of $X$. We show that the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ do not depend on the choice of a distinguished formal model up to a canonical isomorphism, and they are provided with the Gauss-Manin connection $\nabla : H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ) \to H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ) \otimes_{K^\circ} \omega^1_{K^\circ}$. We are going to describe a comparison result from §11 that relates the groups $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{F})$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ in a form which reminds Fontaine's $p$-adic Hodge theory.

First of all, if $W$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-ring for a groupoid $\mathcal{P}$ (i.e., a covariant functor from $\mathcal{P}$ to the category of rings), then a $W$-module is a left $\mathcal{P}$-module $D$ such that, for every $P \in \mathcal{P}$, $D^{(P)}$ is a module over the ring $W^{(P)}$ with the property that, for every morphism $\varphi : P \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$, one has $\varphi_D(\alpha x) = \varphi_W(\alpha)\varphi_D(x)$ for all $\alpha \in W^{(P)}$ and $x \in D^{(P)}$. If all $D^{(P)}$ coincide, $D$ is said to be single.

For example, the field $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ can be considered as a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-field. Namely, one associates to each $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ the field $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ and to each morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ of first (resp. second) type the automorphism of $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ that takes $f(\varpi)$ for $f = \sum_{n \ge n_0} a_n T^n \in \mathbf{C}((T))$ to $f(\varpi')$ (resp. $\overline{f}(\varpi')$, where $\overline{f} = \sum_{n \ge n_0} \overline{a}_n T^n$). This induces the structure of a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring on $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $D$ is a $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$-module, a $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism of $D$ is a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-automorphism $\vartheta$ such that $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(\alpha x) = \overline{\alpha}\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x)$ for all $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\alpha \in K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $x \in D^{(\varpi)}$. As above, the field $K$ and the ring $K^\circ$ can be considered as a single $\pi(K)$-field and a single $\pi(K)$-ring, respectively.

Furthermore, let $W(K)$ be the algebra of $\mathbf{F}$-linear endomorphisms $K$ generated by multiplications by elements of $K$ and derivations $\frac{\partial}{\partial \varpi}$ for generators $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$. If $\varpi$ is fixed, each element of $W(K)$ has a unique representation in the form $g_n\frac{\partial^n}{\partial\varpi^n}+g_{n-1}\frac{\partial^{n-1}}{\partial\varpi^{n-1}}+\ldots+g_0$ with $n\ge 0$ and $g_i\in K$. The algebra $W(K)$ can be considered as a single $\pi(K)$-ring. Namely, one associated to each $\varpi\in\pi(K)$ the algebra $W(K)$ and to each morphism $\varpi\to\varpi'$ in $\pi(K)$ the automorphism of $W(K)$ that acts on $K$ as above and takes $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ to $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi'}$. Notice that $K$ is a left $W(K)$-module. The algebra $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ can be considered as a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring such that a morphism $\varphi:\varpi\to\varpi'$ in $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ acts on $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ as in the previous paragraph and takes $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ to $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi'}$.

Finally, for a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$, let $\delta_\varpi$ denote the derivation $\varpi\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ on $K$ which preserves $K^\circ$ and all of its ideals. Let $W(K^\circ)$ be the $K^\circ$-subalgebra of $W(K)$ generated by the derivations $\delta_\varpi$. By the way, the Gauss-Manin connection on the groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ gives rise to an action of the ring $W(K^\circ)$ on them. (The action of $\delta_\varpi$ is the composition of the connection $\nabla$ with the isomorphism $\omega^1_{K^\circ}\widetilde{\to}K^\circ : d\log(\varpi)\mapsto 1$.) The $\pi(K)$-ring structure on $W(K)$ induces a $\pi(K)$-structure on $W(K^\circ)$, and $K^\circ$ is a single $W(K^\circ)$-module. In the same way, $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ is a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring, and $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a single $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module.

For a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $W(K^\circ)$-) module $D$, a real number $\lambda$ and an element $\varpi\in\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $\pi(K)$), we set $D^{(\varpi)}_\lambda=\{x\in D^{(\varpi)}\big|(\delta_\varpi-\lambda)^n(x)=0$ for some $n\ge 1\}$. If $\lambda$ is fixed, the correspondence $\varpi\mapsto D^{(\varpi)}$ is a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $\pi(K)$-) submodule of $D$ denoted by $D_\lambda$. For a subset $I\subset\mathbf{R}$, we set $D_I=\oplus_{\lambda\in I}D_\lambda$. We also denote by $\widetilde{D}$ the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $\pi(K)$-) module $D/(K^{\circ\circ}\cdot D)$. A distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module (resp. $W(K^\circ)$-module for $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$) is a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $W(K^\circ)$-) module $D$, which in the case $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$ is provided with a $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear (resp. $K^\circ$-linear) automorphism of order two $\vartheta$ and which possesses the following properties:

(1) $D$ is free of finite rank over $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $K^\circ$);
(2) the map $D\to\widetilde{D}$ induces an isomorphism of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $\pi(K)$-) modules $D_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}\widetilde{\to}\widetilde{D}$;
(3) for $\varpi\in\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $\pi(K)$), the actions of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ and $\delta_\varpi$ on $D^{(\varpi)}$ are related by the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)}=\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ (resp. $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with $\cos(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$ and anti-commutes with $\sin(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$).

Let $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-Dist (resp. $W(K^\circ)$-Dist) be the category of distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $W(K^\circ)$-) modules. Let also $\mathbf{F}\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-Qun (resp. $\mathbf{F}\Pi(K)$-Qun) denote the category of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$- (resp. $\Pi(K)$-) modules in the category of finitely dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces $V$ such that, for each $\varpi$, the action of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ on $V$ is quasi-unipotent. We show that the functor

$$W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Dist}\to\mathbf{F}\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Qun}: D\mapsto\widetilde{D}^{\vartheta=1}$$

is an equivalence of categories, where $\widetilde{D}^{\vartheta=1}$ is the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-submodule $\varpi\mapsto\{x\in\widetilde{D}\big|\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x)=1\}$, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, and $\widetilde{D}$, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$. If $V\in\mathbf{F}\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-Qun, one can provide the tensor product $V\otimes_{\mathbf{F}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ with a distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module structure so that the correspondence $V\mapsto V\otimes_{\mathbf{F}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a functor inverse to the above one.

The comparison result we are talking about states that, for a separated rig-smooth restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$, the groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\widehat{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ are provided with the structure of a single distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module which extends the action induced by the Gauss-Manin connection, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{C})\otimes_{\mathbf{C}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\rm dR}(\widehat{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})\ .$$

It follows that there are induced isomorphisms of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{C})\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}\ .$$

The above isomorphisms take place also for $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, but in this case one can in fact relate the groups $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{R})$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$.

Suppose that $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, and let us consider $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ as a $\Pi(K)$-module. (Recall that $W(K^\circ)$ is a $\pi(K)$-module.) We show that the functor

$$W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Dist}\to W(K^\circ)\text{-Dist}: D\mapsto D^{c=1}$$

is an equivalence of categories. An inverse functor takes $E\in W(K^\circ)$-Dist to $E\otimes_{K^\circ}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$, which is provided with a distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module structure, and therefore there is an equivalence of categories

$$\mathbf{R}\Pi(K)\text{-Qun}\widetilde{\to}W(K^\circ)\text{-Dist}\ .$$

The above comparison result implies that the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ are provided with the structure of a distinguished $W(K^\circ)$-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{R})\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)\otimes_{K^\circ}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}\ ,$$

which induce isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K^\circ)$-modules

$$(H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{R})\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})^{c=1}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$$

and of quasi-unipotent $\Pi(K)$-modules

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}},\mathbf{R})\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)^{\vartheta=1}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}\oplus iH^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)^{\vartheta=-1}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}\ .$$

In both cases (when $\mathbf{F}$ is either $\mathbf{C}$, or $\mathbf{R}$), the action of $\delta_\varpi$ on $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ is induced by the derivation $\delta_\varpi$ on $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ and an operator $-\frac{1}{2\pi i}\mathrm{Log}(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$ on $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)},\mathbf{C})$ with $\mathrm{Log}(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$, defined in §4.5. If $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, the automorphism $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ on $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ is induced by the complex conjugation on $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ in $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)},\mathbf{R})\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$. Furthermore, in both cases the action of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ on $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)},\mathbf{F})$ is induced by the operator $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)=\cos(2\pi\delta_\varpi)-i\sin(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$ on $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}\mathbf{C}$. If $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, the action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ on $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)},\mathbf{R})$ is induced by the complex conjugation on the right hand side, i.e., it is the identity (resp. minus identity) on the first (resp. second) summand.

In §11, we also describe the above de Rham cohomology groups and the isomorphism when $\widehat{X}$ comes from a geometric object as in the situation of (viii) from §0.5.

0.9. **Plan of the paper.** In §1, we introduce $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces and establish their basic properties necessary for the paper.

Our purpose in §2 is to recall the construction of and various facts about the nearby and vanishing cycles functors from [SGA7, Exp. XIV] and to extend them to $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces. As was mentioned at the end of §0.3, for this and for further exposition, we use the bold letter $\mathbf{F}$ for either $\mathbf{R}$, or $\mathbf{C}$. We recall the framework of pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces and their cohomology which is convenient for dealing with the analytifications $\mathcal{X}^h$ of schemes $\mathcal{X}$ finitely presented over a Stein germ. In the situations we consider, pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces play the role of non-Archimedean objects associated to formal completions of the corresponding schemes. For example, in the situation of the property §0.5(viii) we give a characterization of rig-smoothness of the generic fiber of the formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ in terms of a certain pro-**F**-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_\eta$. In §2.4, we prove a comparison theorem (Theorem 2.4.1) for the class of schemes from the same property §0.5(viii), which is more general than that in *loc. cit.*. In §2.5, we recall some notions of log geometry and especially a beautiful construction of Kato and Nakayama from [KN99] that associates to every fine log complex analytic space $(X, M_X)$ a topological space $X^{\log}$ and a proper surjective map $\tau : X^{\log} \to X$. Their results easily imply a description of the vanishing cycles complex $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{X_\eta})$ of a vertical log smooth **F**-analytic space $X$ over the log open disc $(D, M_D)$ with $M_D = \mathcal{O}_D \cap \mathcal{O}^*_{D^*}$ in terms of the space $X^{\log}_{\overline{s}}$ associated to the log structure on $X_{\overline{s}} = (X_s)_{\mathbf{C}}$ induced from $X$ (Theorem 2.5.2).

In §3, $k$ is an arbitrary non-Archimedean field with non-trivial discrete valuation. We introduce distinguished schemes and special formal schemes over $k^\circ$, and deduce from Temkin's result [Tem18] that, if $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$, every reduced special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ flat over $k^\circ$ admits a blow-up $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which induces an isomorphism over the rig-smooth locus of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ and such that $\mathfrak{Y}$ is distinguished. This implies that every special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ admits a distinguished proper hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ (i.e., such that each $\mathfrak{Y}_n$ is distinguished and the morphism $\mathfrak{Y}_n \to \mathfrak{X}$ is proper). Furthermore, let $\mathfrak{X}$ be the formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ with $\mathcal{Y}$ a distinguished scheme over $k^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ the union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s$. Using results from [Ber99], we prove that the log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ generated by the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{Y}$ coincides with the canonical log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ whose value on $\mathfrak{U}$ étale over $\mathfrak{X}$ is $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U}) \cap \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U}_\eta)^*$.

In §4.1, we introduce various groupoids related to the field $K$ from §0.4. They include the groupoids $\pi(K)$ and $\Pi(K)$, already mentioned in §0.5, as well as groupoids $\pi(K^\circ_r)$ and $\Pi(K^\circ_r)$ related to the log scheme $\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ_r} = \mathrm{Spec}(K^\circ_r)$, where $K^\circ_r = K^\circ/(K^{\circ\circ})^r$, $r \geq 1$, with the log structure induced by the canonical one on $\mathrm{Spec}(K^\circ)$. In §4.2, we consider examples of $\mathcal{P}$-spaces for those groupoids and, in §4.3, we introduce the notion of a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf and a $\mathcal{P}$-cosheaf on a $\mathcal{P}$-space and consider important examples of those objects. In addition to the $\Pi(K)$-ring $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ and the $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-ring $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$, mentioned in §0.8, we introduce a related $\Pi(K^\circ_r)$-ring $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$. In §4.4, we show that the category of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is equivalent to the category of sheaves on an explicitely constructed site $X(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}}$. Finally, in §4.5, we introduce distinguished modules over $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$, $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$, and construct an equivalence of each of their categories with a corresponding category of quasi-unipotent modules of finite dimension over $\mathbf{C}$ similar to that mentioned in §0.8.

In §5.1, we introduce distinguished log **F**-analytic spaces over the analytification $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r} = \mathrm{pt}^h_{K^\circ_r}$ of the log scheme $\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$ mentioned in the previous paragraph. They include log spaces obtained from distinguished special formal schemes over $K^\circ$ and from distinguished log **F**-analytic spaces over $(D, M_D)$ from §2.5. For a distinguished log **F**-analytic space $X$ over $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$, we describe the $\Pi(K^\circ_r)$-sheaves that appear in Theorem 2.5.2 in terms of the log structure on $X$, and use it for a description of vanishing cycles sheaves in the situation of §0.5(viii) for a class of schemes $\mathcal{Y}$.

Our purpose in §6 is to prove that, for a log formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$ from a certain class that includes distinguished ones, the analytification $(R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h$

of the vanishing cycles complex, introduced in [Ber96b], has the same description in terms of the topological space $(\mathfrak{X}^h_{\bar{s}})^{\log}$ as in Theorem 2.5.2 (Theorem 6.1.1). For this we use, among other things, the log étale cohomology developed by Kazuya Kato and his collaborators.

In §7, we introduce the complex $R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ for an arbitrary special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$ in terms of the simplicial topological space $(\mathfrak{Y}^h_{\bullet,\bar{s}})^{\log}$ associated to a distinguished proper hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$. We prove the property §0.5(iii) and use it together with the main result of §6 to show that the construction does not depend on the choice of the hypercovering and is functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$. We then extend the construction to an exact functor $R\Psi^h_\eta$ on arbitrary complexes $\Lambda^\cdot$ taking the property §0.5(ii) as a definition, and prove the comparison property §0.5(vii). In §7.2 we prove the property §0.5(iv) and, in §7.3, we prove the comparison property §0.5(viii).

In §8, we prove the continuity properties §0.5(v) and (vi).

In §9, we introduce the category of restricted $K$-analytic spaces $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$, define the groups $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ for such a space $\widehat{X}$, and prove all of their properties listed in §0.7.

In §10, we study a purely $\mathbf{F}$-analytic object, the complex $\omega^\cdot_{X/K^\circ_r}$ of log differential forms on a distinguished log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$ over the log space $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$. We construct a complex of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-sheaves $L^\cdot_{X_\mathbf{C}}$ and a quasi-isomorphism $L^\cdot_{X_\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{X_\mathbf{C}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}}$. This implies, for example, that the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ have the structure of a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module. We also construct a quasi-isomorphism of $L^\cdot_{X_\mathbf{C}}$ with a complex closely related to that from the construction of the vanishing cycles complex in §7.1. Our construction is a refinement of that from Steenbrink's paper [Ste76, §2], but it is done in the framework of log geometry of Kato-Nakayama [KN99].

In §11, we prove the comparison results formulated in §0.8.

We remark that the terms "nearby" and "vanishing cycles", introduced in [Ber94] and used in this paper (as well as in [Ber96b] and [Ber15]) for the functors $\Theta$ and $\Psi_\eta$, are not standard ones used in literature. Nevertheless, all of these functors have the same meaning as the corresponding functors with the same notations from [SGA7], and we recall their definition.

## 1. $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces

**1.1. Affine space over R.** For $n \geq 0$ the $n$-dimensional *affine space over* $\mathbf{R}$, denoted by $\mathbb{R}^n$, is the set of multiplicative seminorms on the ring of polynomials $A = \mathbf{R}[T_1, \dots, T_n]$ that extend the Archimedean absolute value $|\ |_\infty$ on $\mathbf{R}$. It is provided with the weakest topology with respect to which all functions $\mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbf{R}$ of the form $x \mapsto |f|_x$ with $f \in A$ are continuous, where $|\ |_x$ is the seminorm on $A$ that corresponds to a point $x \in \mathbf{A}^n_\mathbf{R}$. The Gelfand-Mazur theorem implies that the kernel $\mathrm{Ker}(|\ |_x)$ of the latter seminorm is a maximal ideal of $A$ and the quotient $\mathcal{H}(x) = A/\mathrm{Ker}(|\ |_x)$ is either $\mathbf{R}$ or $\mathbf{C}$. This identifies $\mathbb{R}^n$ with the maximal spectrum $\mathrm{Max}(A)$ of $A$. It follows also that the canonical map $\rho : \mathbb{C}^n \to \mathbb{R}^n$ which takes a point $a \in \mathbb{C}^n$ to the seminorm $f \mapsto |f(a)|_\infty$ is surjective, and it induces a homeomorphism between the quotient of $\mathbb{C}^n$ by the complex conjugation and the affine space $\mathbb{R}^n$.

The above map identifies $\mathbf{R}^n$ with the set of *real* points of $\mathbb{R}^n$, i.e., points $x$ with $\mathcal{H}(x) = \mathbf{R}$. Each real point has one preimage in $\mathbb{C}^n$. Points from the complement $\mathbb{R}^n \backslash \mathbf{R}^n$ are said to be *complex* ones. A complex point $x$ has two preimages $\mathbf{x}'$, $\mathbf{x}''$ in $\mathbb{C}^n$ with $\mathbf{x}'' = \overline{\mathbf{x}}'$ and, for the corresponding isomorphisms $\chi_{\mathbf{x}'} : \mathcal{H}(x) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{H}(\mathbf{x}') = \mathbf{C}$ and $\chi_{\mathbf{x}''} : \mathcal{H}(x) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{H}(\mathbf{x}'') = \mathbf{C}$, one has $\chi_{\mathbf{x}''}(a) = \overline{\chi_{\mathbf{x}'}(a)}$ for all $a \in \mathcal{H}(x)$. Moreover, the map $\rho : \mathbb{C}^n \to \mathbb{R}^n$ is a local homeomorphism at the points $\mathbf{x}'$ and $\mathbf{x}''$.

The topological space $\mathbb{R}^n$ is provided with a sheaf of local $\mathbf{R}$-algebras $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n}$ as follows. For an open subset $U \subset \mathbb{R}^n$, the $\mathbf{R}$-algebra $\mathcal{O}(U)$ consists of the functions $f : U \to \mathbf{C}$ which are local limits of rational functions with real coefficients, i.e., such that every point $x \in U$ has an open neighborhood $U'$ in $U$ with the property that, for every $\varepsilon > 0$, there exist polynomials $P, Q \in A$ with $Q(x') \neq 0$ and $|f(x') - \frac{P(x')}{Q(x')}| < \varepsilon$ for all $x' \in U'$. Since the space $\mathbb{R}^n$ coincides with the maximal spectrum of $A$, analytic functions are local limits of polynomials with real coefficients and, for every point $x \in \mathbb{R}^n$, the completion of $A$ with respect to powers of the corresponding maximal ideal coincides with the completion $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{R}^n,x}$ of the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n,x}$.

The definition in fact implies the following. Let $c$ denote the following involution of the locally ringed space $(\mathbb{C}^n, \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C}^n})$. It takes a point $z = (z_1, \dots, z_n)$ to the point $\overline{z} = (\overline{z}_1, \dots, \overline{z}_n)$ and an analytic function $f$ on an open subset $\mathcal{U} \subset \mathbb{C}^n$ to the analytic function $f^c$ on the image $c(\mathcal{U})$, where $f^c(z) = \overline{f(\overline{z})}$ . Then there is a canonical isomorphism of sheaves $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n} \widetilde{\to} (\rho_* \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C}^n})^{c=1}$. It follows that, if a point $x \in \mathbb{R}^n$ is real, the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n,x}$ is the $\mathbf{R}$-algebra of power series with coefficients in $\mathbf{R}$ which are convergent in a neighborhood of $x$ in $\mathbf{R}^n$. If a point $x$ is complex and $\mathbf{x} \in \rho^{-1}(x)$, then $\rho$ is a local isomorphism at $\mathbf{x}$, and it gives rise to an isomorphism $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n,x} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C}^n,\mathbf{x}}$. Notice that the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n}$ is coherent, and any subsheaf of ideals in it is locally of finite type.

**Remarks 1.1.1.** (i) The affine space $\mathbb{R}^n$ can be identified with a closed subset of $\mathbb{C}^n = \mathbf{C}^n$, which is a disjoint union $\coprod_{k=0}^n W_k$ of the locally closed subsets

$$W_k = \{(z_1, \dots, z_n) \big| z_1, \dots, z_k \in \mathbf{R},\ \mathrm{Im}(z_{k+1}) > 0\} \ .$$

Under this identification, $W_0$ is the open subset $\{(z_1, \dots, z_n) \in \mathbf{C}^n \big| \mathrm{Im}(z_1) > 0\}$ and $W_n$ is the closed subset $\mathbf{R}^n \subset \mathbf{C}^n$. The sheaf $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n}$ is identified with a subsheaf of the restriction of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C}^n}$ to $\mathbb{R}^n$ such that, for an open subset $U \subset \mathbb{R}^n$, $\mathcal{O}(U)$ consists of the complex analytic functions in an open neighborhood of $U$ in $\mathbb{C}^n$ that take real values at points from the intersection $U \cap \mathbf{R}^n$.

(ii) In the particular case $n = 1$, the affine line $\mathbb{R}$ is identified with the closed upper half-plane $\widehat{\mathbf{H}} = \{z \in \mathbf{C} \big| \mathrm{Im}(z) \geq 0\}$ so that its set of complex points is the Poincaré upper half-plane $\mathbf{H} = \{z \in \mathbf{C} \big| \mathrm{Im}(z) > 0\}$.

Let $x$ be a point of $\mathbb{R}^n$, which is the image of a point $z = (z_1, \dots, z_n) \in \mathbb{C}^n = \mathbf{C}^n$. For a tuple $r = (r_1, \dots, r_n) \in (\mathbf{R}_+^*)^n$, we set $D(z; r) = \{z' \in \mathbb{C}^n \big| |z'_j - z_j| < r_j$ for all $1 \leq j \leq n\}$ (the open polydisc in $\mathbb{C}^n$), and denote by $D(x; r)$ its image in $\mathbb{R}^n$ (it is an open subset of $\mathbb{R}^n$). If the point $x$ is complex and $r_j \leq |\mathrm{Im}(z_j)|$ for some $1 \leq j \leq n$, then there is an isomorphism of locally ringed spaces $D(z; r) \widetilde{\to} D(x; r)$, and in this case the latter is called a *complex open polydisc in* $\mathbb{R}^n$. If the point $x$ is real, i.e., $z_j \in \mathbf{R}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq n$, then $D(z; r) \to D(x; r)$ is a double cover, and the latter is called a *real open polydisc in* $\mathbb{R}^n$.

1.2. **R-analytic spaces.** Let $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$ denote the *category of locally* $\mathbf{R}$*-ringed spaces*, i.e., the subcategory of the category of locally ringed spaces whose structural sheaves are commutative $\mathbf{R}$-algebras and in which morphisms are defined in the usual way but through homomorphisms of $\mathbf{R}$-algebras. An example of such a space is the following one, called a *local model* (of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space). Let $U$ be an open subset of $\mathbb{R}^n$ and let $\mathcal{J}$ be a finitely generated subsheaf of ideals in $\mathcal{O}_\mathcal{U} = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}^n}\big|_\mathcal{U}$. The local model associated with these data is the support $X$ of $\mathcal{O}_\mathcal{U}/\mathcal{J}$ with the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_X$, which is the restriction of $\mathcal{O}_\mathcal{U}/\mathcal{J}$ to $X$.

The category of $\mathbf{R}$-*analytic spaces* $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ is a full subcategory of $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$ consisting of the spaces locally isomorphic to a local model. We call a *local chart* of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ a tuple $(\mathcal{W}, \varphi, Y, (\mathcal{U}, \mathcal{J}))$ consisting of an open subset $\mathcal{W} \subset X$, an isomorphism $\varphi : \mathcal{W} \widetilde{\to} Y$, where $Y$ is a local model associated to a pair $(U, \mathcal{J})$ as above for an open subset $U \subset \mathbb{R}^n$ and a finitely generated subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{J} \subset \mathcal{O}_U$. For a point $x \in X$, one sets $\mathcal{H}(x) = \mathcal{O}_{X,x}/\mathbf{m}_x$, where $\mathbf{m}_x$ is the maximal ideal of $\mathcal{O}_{X,x}$. If $\mathcal{H}(x) = \mathbf{R}$, the point is said to be *real*. Otherwise, it is said to be *complex*. The set of real points $X(\mathbf{R})$ is closed in $X$. Notice that every real (resp. complex) point has a fundamental system of local charts as above in which $U$ is a real (resp. complex) polydisc in $\mathbb{R}^n$.

**Remarks 1.2.1.** (i) Any complex analytic space $Y$ can be considered as an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space, which will be denoted by $Y_\mathbf{R}$. Indeed, given a point $z = (z_1, \dots, z_n) \in \mathbb{C}^n = \mathbf{C}^n$, take a real number $r$ bigger than $-\mathrm{Im}(z_1)$. Then the shift $\mathbb{C}^n \to \mathbb{C}^n : z' \mapsto z' + (ri, 0, \dots, 0)$ gives rise to an isomorphism between an open neighborhood of the point $z$ and an open neighborhood of its image in the subset $W_0 \subset \mathbf{C}^n$ from Remark 1.1.1(i), which can be identified with an open subset of $\mathbb{R}^n$.

(ii) The functor $\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n \to \mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : Y \mapsto Y_\mathbf{R}$ is not fully faithful. The easiest example is as follows. The automorphism group of the zero dimensional affine complex analytic space $\mathbb{C}^0$ is trivial, but that of the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $\mathbb{C}^0_\mathbf{R}$ consists of two elements, the trivial one and the one induced by the complex conjugation. Here is another example. The automorphism group of the upper-half plane $\mathbf{H}$, considered as complex analytic space, is $\mathrm{PSL}_2(\mathbf{R})$, which is also the group of orientation-preserving isometries of the hyperbolic plane $\mathbf{H}$, but the automorphism group of the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $\mathbf{H}_\mathbf{R}$ is $\mathrm{PGL}_2(\mathbf{R})$, which is the group of isometries that are not necessarily orientation-preserving. Namely, a matrix $\gamma$ with negative determinant takes a point $z \in \mathbf{H}$ to the point $\gamma(z) = \frac{a\overline{z}+b}{c\overline{z}+d} \in \mathbf{H}$ and a function $f$ to the function $\gamma^* f$ for which $(\gamma^* f)(z) = \overline{f(\gamma(z))}$. A morphism between complex analytic spaces, considered in the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$, will be called an $\mathbf{R}$-*morphism*. For example, the involution $c$ of $\mathbb{C}^n$ from the previous subsection is an $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism.

We are going to describe the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ in terms of a category of complex analytic spaces provided with an additional structure.

We say that a pair $(\mathcal{V}, \mathcal{J})$, consisting of an open subset of $\mathbb{C}^n$ and a finitely generated subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{J} \subset \mathcal{O}_\mathcal{V}$, is *c-invariant* if $c(\mathcal{V}) = \mathcal{V}$ and, for every open subset $\mathcal{W} \subset \mathcal{V}$, the conjugation isomorphism $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{W}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}(c(\mathcal{W})) : f \mapsto f^c$ takes $\mathcal{J}(\mathcal{W})$ onto $\mathcal{J}(c(\mathcal{W}))$. If a pair $(\mathcal{V}, \mathcal{J})$ is $c$-invariant, the complex conjugation on $\mathbb{C}^n$ gives rise to an involutive $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism $c : Y \widetilde{\to} Y$ of the corresponding local model $Y$ of a complex analytic space. We say that an involutive $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism $c : Y \widetilde{\to} Y$ of a local model $Y$ is a *complex conjugation* if it is induced by that of an associated $c$-invariant pair $(\mathcal{V}, \mathcal{J})$. A complex analytic space *with complex conjugation* is a pair $(Y, c)$ consisting of a complex analytic space $Y$ provided with an $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism $c : Y \widetilde{\to} Y$ such that $Y$ can be covered by $c$-invariant local charts with the property that the restriction of $c$ to the corresponding local model is a complex conjugation. This implies that the automorphism $c$ of $Y$ is an involution, and group $\{1,c\}$ acting on such $Y$ will be denoted by $\langle c\rangle$. The quotient of $Y$ by the action of $\langle c\rangle$ is the object of the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$ whose underlying topological space is the quotient $X=Y/\langle c\rangle$ provided with the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_X=(\rho_*\mathcal{O}_Y)^{\langle c\rangle}$. It will be denoted just by $Y/\langle c\rangle$.

Complex analytic spaces with complex conjugation form a category $\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$ whose morphisms are morphisms in $\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ which commute with the complex conjugation automorphisms. We are going to construct an *extension of scalars functor*

$$\mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n\to\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n^{cc}:X\mapsto X_{\mathbf{C}}=X\widehat{\otimes}_{\mathbf{R}}\mathbf{C}\ .$$

First of all, let $X$ be a local model of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space associated to a pair $(U,\mathcal{I})$ for an open subset $U\subset\mathbb{R}^m$ and a subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{I}\subset\mathcal{O}_U$. We let $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ denote the local model of a complex analytic space associated to the $c$-invariant pair $(\mathcal{U},\mathcal{I}')$, where $\mathcal{U}=\rho^{-1}(U)\subset\mathbb{C}^m$ and $\mathcal{I}'$ is the subsheaf of ideals in $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{U}}$ generated by $\mathcal{I}$. Given a second local model $Y$ of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space, associated to a similar pair $(V,\mathcal{J})$ with $V\subset\mathbb{R}^n$, and a morphism $\varphi:X\to Y$ in $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$, consider the induced morphism $X\to\mathbb{R}^n$. It defines (and is determined by) a homomorphism of $\mathbf{R}$-algebras $\mathbf{R}[T_1,\dots,T_n]\to\mathcal{O}(X)$. The latter defines a homomorphism of $\mathbf{C}$-algebras $\mathbf{C}[T_1,\dots,T_n]\to\mathcal{O}(X_{\mathbf{C}})$ which, in its turn, determines a morphism of complex analytic spaces $X_{\mathbf{C}}\to\mathbb{C}^n$ whose image lies in $\mathcal{V}=\rho^{-1}(V)$. Since the subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{J}'\subset\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{V}}$ is generated by $\mathcal{J}$, it follows that $\varphi$ induces a morphism of local models $\varphi_{\mathbf{C}}:X_{\mathbf{C}}\to Y_{\mathbf{C}}$. This morphism commutes with the complex conjugation on both local models. It follows also that, if the morphism $\varphi$ is an isomorphism, then so is the morphism $\varphi_{\mathbf{C}}$. Notice that there is a canonical isomorphism in $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$, $X_{\mathbf{C}}/\langle c\rangle\widetilde{\to}X$, and one has $(X_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c\rangle}=X(\mathbf{R})$.

If $X$ is an arbitrary $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space and $\{X^i\}_{i\in I}$ is a covering of $X$ by local charts, we define $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ by gluing the complex analytic local charts $X^i_{\mathbf{C}}$ along the open subsets $(X^i\cap X^j)_{\mathbf{C}}$. The complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ does not depend on the choice of a covering up to a canonical isomorphism, and this gives the required extension of scalars functor $X\mapsto X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The involutions $c$ on $X^i_{\mathbf{C}}$'s are compatible and, therefore, they give rise to an involution $c:X_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}X_{\mathbf{C}}$, which is an $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. By the construction, the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is an object of $\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$, and the correspondence $X\mapsto X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a functor. It follows also from the construction that there is a canonical isomorphism in $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{L}rs$, $X_{\mathbf{C}}/\langle c\rangle\widetilde{\to}X$, and one has $(X_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c\rangle}=X(\mathbf{R})$. If the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is considered as an object of the category $\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$ we denote it by $X^{cc}_{\mathbf{C}}$.

**Proposition 1.2.2.** *(i) The functor* $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n\to\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}:X\mapsto X^{cc}_{\mathbf{C}}$ *is an equivalence of categories;*

*(ii) for every* $Y\in\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$*, the quotient* $Y/\langle c\rangle$ *is an object of* $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$*, and the correspondence* $Y\mapsto Y/\langle c\rangle$ *is an equivalence of categories inverse to that from (i).*

*Proof.* It suffices to show that, for every $Y\in\mathbf{C}$-$\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$, the quotient $Y/\langle c\rangle$, considered as a locally ringed space, is locally isomorphic to an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. Let $y$ be a point of $Y$, and let $(\mathcal{W},\varphi,Z,(V,\mathcal{J}))$ be a $c$-invariant local chart with $y\in\mathcal{W}$. Suppose first that $c(y)\neq y$. Then we can find an open neighborhood $V'$ of $y$ in $V$ with $V'\cap c(V')=\emptyset$. If $\mathcal{W}'$ is the preimage of $Z\cap V'$ in $\mathcal{W}$, it follows that the morphism $\rho:Y\to Y/\langle c\rangle$ gives rise to an isomorphism of $\mathcal{W}'$ onto its image. Suppose now that $c(y)=y$. We can shrink $\mathcal{W}$ and assume that $V$ is an open polydisc in

$\mathbb{C}^n$ with center at zero, which is the image of the point $y$. Then $D = V/\langle c\rangle$ is a real open polydisc in $\mathbb{R}^n$, $\mathcal{O}(V)$ is the $\mathbf{C}$-algebra of power series with coefficients in $\mathbf{C}$ convergent in $V$, and $\mathcal{O}(D)$ is the subalgebra of the series with real coefficients. Notice that every function $g \in \mathcal{O}(V)$ is represented in a unique way as a sum $u+iv$ for $u, v \in \mathcal{O}(D)$ and, for the function $g^c \in \mathcal{O}(V)$, one has $g^c = u - iv$. It follows that, if $g \in \mathcal{J}(V)$, then $g^c \in \mathcal{J}(V)$ and, therefore, $u = \frac{1}{2}(g+g^c)$ and $v = -\frac{i}{2}(g-g^c)$ belong to the ideal $I = \mathcal{J}(V) \cap \mathcal{O}(D)$. It is also easy to see that $J(V) = I\mathcal{O}(V)$, that the ideal $I$ is generated over $\mathcal{O}(D)$ by the real and imaginary parts of generators of the finitely generated ideal $\mathcal{J}(V)$ of $\mathcal{O}(V)$, and that $I$ generated the subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{I} = \mathcal{J} \cap \mathcal{O}_V$ of $\mathcal{O}_V$. Thus, the sheaf $(\rho_*\mathcal{O}_Z)^{\langle c\rangle}$ on the quotient space $Z/\langle c\rangle$ coincides with the restriction of the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_D/\mathcal{I}$ and, therefore, the quotient $Z/\langle c\rangle$ is a local model of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. This implies the required fact. □

Let $X$ be an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. The action of the complex conjugation on the structural sheaf $\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, compatible with the action of $c$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, induces a similar action on the constant subsheaf $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \subset \mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. By the above construction, one has $\mathcal{O}_X = (\rho_*\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})^{\langle c\rangle}$. We introduce the following subsheaf of $\mathcal{O}_X$: $\mathfrak{c}_X = (\rho_*\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})^{\langle c\rangle}$. It is called the *sheaf of constant analytic functions on* $X$. Notice that $\rho^{-1}(\mathfrak{c}_X)$ is a subsheaf of the constant sheaf $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and that $X(\mathbf{R}) = \{x \in X \big| \mathfrak{c}_{X,x} = \mathbf{R}\}$. The complex conjugation on the field of complex numbers induces an automorphism $\vartheta$ of the constant sheaf $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (compatible with the trivial action on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$), which commutes with the above complex conjugation $c$ on $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. It follows that $\vartheta$ induces an automorphism of the sheaf $\mathfrak{c}_X$, also denoted by $\vartheta$. Notice that $\mathfrak{c}_X^{\langle\vartheta\rangle} = \mathbf{R}_X$.

Let $Y$ be a complex analytic space. For a local chart $(\mathcal{W}, \varphi, Z, (V, \mathcal{J}))$ of $Y$, we set $V^c = c(V)$, denote by $\mathcal{J}^c$ the subsheaf of ideals of $\mathcal{O}_{V^c}$ consisting of local sections of the form $f^c(z) = \overline{f(\overline{z})}$ for local sections $f$ of $\mathcal{O}_V$, and denote by $Z^c$ the local model associated to the pair $(V^c, \mathcal{J}^c)$. Then the involution $c : \mathbb{C}^n \to \mathbb{C}^n$ induces a conjugation isomorphism of local models $c : Z^c \widetilde{\to} Z$. Any local chart $(\mathcal{W}', \varphi', Z', (V', \mathcal{J}'))$ of $Y$ with $\mathcal{W}' \subset \mathcal{W}$ gives rise to an open immersion of local models $Z'^c \hookrightarrow Z^c$ which is compatible with the conjugation isomorphisms on $Z$ and $Z'$. Thus, when $\mathcal{W}$ runs through local charts of $Y$, one glue local models $Z^c$ and get a complex analytic space $Y^c$ and a *conjugation isomorphism* $c = c_Y : Y^c \widetilde{\to} Y$, which is an $\mathbf{R}$-morphism. Notice that one can identify $(Y^c)^c$ with $Y$ so that the conjugation isomorphism $c_{Y^c} : Y = (Y^c)^c \widetilde{\to} Y^c$ is inverse to $c_Y : Y^c \widetilde{\to} Y$.

For example, if $Y \in \mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$, there is an evident isomorphism of complex analytic spaces $Y \widetilde{\to} Y^c$ whose composition with the above $\mathbf{R}$-morphism $c : Y^c \widetilde{\to} Y$ coincides with the complex conjugation $c : Y \widetilde{\to} Y$ defined on $Y$.

If $Z$ is a complex analytic space, then the conjugation isomorphisms $c_Z$ and $c_{Z^c}$ define a complex conjugation on the disjoint union $Z \coprod Z^c$, and the correspondence $Z \mapsto Z \coprod Z^c$ is a functor $\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n \to \mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n^{cc}$ left adjoint to the forgetful functor $\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n^{cc} \to \mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$. Notice that $(Z \coprod Z^c)/\langle c\rangle = Z_{\mathbf{R}}$ and $(Z_{\mathbf{R}})_{\mathbf{C}} = Z \coprod Z^c$. Furthermore, the same $c_Z$ and $c_{Z^c}$ together with the permutation define a complex conjugation on the direct product $Z \times Z^c$, and we get an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $\mathrm{Res}_{\mathbf{C}/\mathbf{R}}(Z) = (Z \times Z^c)/\langle c\rangle$.

**Proposition 1.2.3.** *The functors* $\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n \to \mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : Y \mapsto Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ *and* $Y \mapsto \mathrm{Res}_{\mathbf{C}/\mathbf{R}}(Y)$ *are left and right adjoint, respectively, to the extension of scalars functor* $\mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n \to \mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : X \mapsto X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

The functor $Y \mapsto \mathrm{Res}_{\mathbf{C}/\mathbf{R}}(Y)$ is called the *Weil restriction of scalars functor*.

*Proof.* Given an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$, each morphism of complex analytic spaces $Y \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to Y$) induces a morphism $Y^c \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to Y^c$), which is compatible with the complex conjugation on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and the conjugation morphism $Y^c \widetilde{\to} Y$. It defines therefore a morphism of complex analytic spaces with complex conjugation $Y \coprod Y^c \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to Y \times Y^c$). By Proposition 1.2.2, the latter gives rise to a morphism $Y_{\mathbf{R}} = (Y \coprod Y^c)/\langle c \rangle \to X = X_{\mathbf{C}}/\langle c \rangle$ (resp. $X \to \mathrm{Res}_{\mathbf{C}/\mathbf{R}}(Y) = (Y \times Y^c)/\langle c \rangle$). □

Proposition 1.2.2 allows one to extend various constructions, notions and results from the category of complex analytic spaces to that of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic ones. For example, the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ admits fiber product. Namely, given morphisms of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces $Y \to X$ and $Z \to X$, the fiber product $Y \times_X Z$ is the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $(Y_{\mathbf{C}} \times_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} Z_{\mathbf{C}})/\langle c \rangle$. Notice the canonical map between the underlying topological spaces $|Y \times_X Z| \to |Y| \times_{|X|} |Z|$ is not a bijection in general. It is a proper map and, for points $y \in Y$ and $z \in Z$ over the same point $x \in X$, the preimage of the point $(y, z)$ is the space $\mathcal{M}(\mathcal{H}(y) \otimes_{\mathcal{H}(x)} \mathcal{H}(z))$, which consists of at most two points. (Recall that map of locally Hausdorff topological spaces $T \to S$ is said to be proper if it is Hausdorff, i.e., the diagonal map $T \to T \times_S T$ is closed, and the preimage of a compact subset is compact.) The zero dimensional affine space $\mathbb{R}^0$ is a final object of the category $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$, and so this category admits direct products. Notice that, for an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ and a complex analytic space $Y$, one has $X \times Y_{\mathbf{R}} \widetilde{\to} (X_{\mathbf{C}} \times Y)_{\mathbf{R}}$. For example, $X \times \mathbb{C}^0_{\mathbf{R}} \widetilde{\to} (X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}}$.

Let $\varphi : Y \to X$ be a morphism of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces. It is said to be *separated* if it Hausdorff as a map of topological spaces. It is said to be *proper* if it is proper as a map of topological spaces. It is said to be *finite* if it is proper and the preimage of each point of $X$ is a finite subset of $Y$. It is said to be a *closed immersion* if it is finite and the induced homomorphism of sheaves $\mathcal{O}_X \to \varphi_*(\mathcal{O}_Y)$ is surjective. It is said to be a *locally closed immersion* if, for every point $y \in Y$, there are open neighborhoods $V$ of $y$ and $U$ of $\varphi(y)$ such that $\varphi$ induces a closed immersion $V \to U$. One can easily see that $\varphi$ possesses one of these properties if and only if the induced morphism of complex analytic spaces $\varphi_{\mathbf{C}} : Y_{\mathbf{C}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ possesses that property. Notice that the canonical morphism $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$ is finite (of degree two), and the diagonal morphism $\Delta_{Y/X} : Y \to Y \times_X Y$ is a locally closed immersion. If $\varphi : Y \to X$ is a locally closed immersion, $U$ and $V$ are as above, and $\mathcal{J} = \mathrm{Ker}(\mathcal{O}_U \to \varphi_*(\mathcal{O}_V))$, then the quotient $\mathcal{J}/\mathcal{J}^2$ can be considered as an $\mathcal{O}_V$-module. All these sheaves are compatible on intersections, and so they define a coherent $\mathcal{O}_Y$-module which is said to be the *conormal sheaf of* $\varphi$ and denoted by $\mathcal{N}_{Y/X}$.

Given a morphism of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$, the conormal sheaf of the diagonal morphism $\Delta_{Y/X}$ is said to be the *sheaf of one-forms of* $\varphi$ and denoted by $\Omega^1_{Y/X}$. The $q$-th exterior power of $\Omega^1_{Y/X}$ is said to be the *sheaf of q-forms of* $\varphi$ and denoted by $\Omega^q_{Y/X}$. As usual, the direct sum $\oplus_{q=0}^{\infty} \Omega^q_{Y/X}$ forms a differential graded algebra $\Omega^{\cdot}_{Y/X}$ which, in the case $X = \mathbb{R}^0$, is denoted just by $\Omega^{\cdot}_Y$.

Furthermore, a morphism $\varphi : Y \to X$ is said to be *flat* (resp. *unramified*) *at a point* $y \in Y$ if the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{Y,x}$ is a flat $\mathcal{O}_{X,x}$-module (resp. $\mathbf{m}_y = \mathbf{m}_x \mathcal{O}_{X,x}$), where $x = \varphi(y)$. It is said to be *étale at* $y$ if it is flat and unramified at $y$. The morphism $\varphi$ is étale at $y$, if and only if either it is a local isomorphism at $y$, or $\mathcal{H}(x) = \mathbf{R}$ and there exist open neighborhoods $\mathcal{V}$ of $y$ and $\mathcal{U}$ of $X$ such that $\varphi$ gives rise to a morphism $\mathcal{V} \to \mathcal{U}$ which is the composition of an isomorphism $\mathcal{V} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{U}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and the canonical morphism $(\mathcal{U}_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} \to \mathcal{U}$. The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be *unramified* (resp. *étale*) if it is unramified (resp. étale) at all points of $Y$. A morphism $\varphi : Y \to X$ is unramified if and only if $\Omega^1_{Y/X} = 0$, and the morphism $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$ is étale.

A morphism $\varphi : Y \to X$ is said to be *smooth at* $y$ if there is an open neighborhood $\mathcal{V} \subset Y$ of $y$ such that $\varphi\big|_{\mathcal{V}}$ is a composition of an étale morphism $\psi : \mathcal{V} \to X \times \mathbb{R}^n$ and the canonical projection $X \times \mathbb{R}^n \to X$. Notice that, if $\varphi$ is smooth but not étale at $y$ (i.e., the above $n$ is positive), one can always find a composition as above in which $\psi$ is a local isomorphism. Indeed, if $\psi$ is not a local isomorphism, then $y$ is a complex point and $\psi(y)$ is a real point. Shrinking $Y$, we may therefore assume that $\varphi$ goes through an étale morphism $\psi' : Y \to X \times \mathbb{C}^n_{\mathbf{R}}$, which is of course a local isomorphism at $y$. After a shift on $\mathbb{C}^n$, we can make the image of $\psi'(y)$ in $\mathbb{C}^n$ lying outside $\mathbf{R}^n$. Then the composition of $\psi'$ with the canonical morphism $X \times \mathbb{C}^n_{\mathbf{R}} \to X \times \mathbb{R}^n$ is a local isomorphism at $y$. The morphism $\varphi$ is said to be *smooth* if it is smooth at all points of $Y$. If $\varphi$ is smooth of pure dimension $n \geq 0$, the $\mathcal{O}_Y$-module $\Omega^1_{Y/X}$ is locally free of rank $n$. An $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ is said to be *smooth* if the morphism $X \to \mathbb{R}^0$ is smooth. In this case, one has $\mathrm{Ker}(\mathcal{O}_X \stackrel{d}{\to} \Omega^1_X) = \mathfrak{c}_X$. If $X$ is of pure dimension $n \geq 1$, then $X$ is smooth if and only if it is locally isomorphic to the affine space $\mathbb{R}^n$. A Hausdorff smooth $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space of pure dimension $n$ will be said to be an $\mathbf{R}$-*analytic manifold of dimension* $n$.

Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a scheme of locally finite type over $\mathbf{R}$. Then the contravariant functor from $\mathbf{R}$-$\mathcal{A}n$ to the category of sets that takes an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $Y$ to the set of morphisms $\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbf{R}\text{-}\mathcal{L}rs}(Y, \mathcal{X})$ is representable by an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $\mathcal{X}^h$ and a morphism $\mathcal{X}^h \to \mathcal{X} : x \mapsto \mathbf{x}$. The construction of $\mathcal{X}^h$ and establishment of its properties follow the usual way of the complex GAGA. We only notice that, as a set, $\mathcal{X}^h$ coincides with the set $\mathcal{X}_0$ of closed points of $\mathcal{X}$, i.e., the points whose residue field is $\mathbf{R}$ or $\mathbf{C}$. For every $x \in X$, the local homomorphism $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X},\mathbf{x}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x}$ is faithfully flat and induces an isomorphism of completions $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{X},\mathbf{x}} \widetilde{\to} \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x}$. One also has $(\mathcal{X}^h)_{\mathbf{C}} = (\mathcal{X} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C})^h$.

Notice that , if an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ is connected, then the $\mathbf{R}$-algebra $\mathfrak{c}_X(X)$ is either $\mathbf{R}$, or isomorphic to $\mathbf{C}$. In the latter case, $X$ is isomorphic to $Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ for a complex analytic space $Y$, and one has $X_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} Y \coprod Y^c$.

**Proposition 1.2.4.** *The following properties of a connected* $\mathbf{R}$*-analytic space* $X$ *are equivalent:*

- (i) *the complex analytic space* $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ *is connected;*
- (ii) *for any connected* $\mathbf{R}$*-analytic space* $Y$*, the direct product* $X \times Y$ *is connected;*
- (iii) $\mathfrak{c}_X(X) = \mathbf{R}$.

*Proof.* (i)$\Longrightarrow$(ii). The fibers of the projection $X \times Y \to Y$ are homeomorphic either to $X$, or to $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. Since $Y$ is connected and the projection is an open map, it follows that $X \times Y$ is connected.

(ii)$\Longrightarrow$(iii). Since $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} = X \times \mathbb{C}^0_{\mathbf{R}}$, it follows that $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is connected. This would be impossible if $\mathfrak{c}_X(X)$ is isomorphic to $\mathbf{C}$.

(iii)$\Longrightarrow$(i). Suppose that $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is not connected, and consider first the case $X(\mathbf{R}) \neq \emptyset$. Let $\mathcal{V}$ be the connected component of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ that contains the unique preimage of a point from $X(\mathbf{R})$. Then $c(\mathcal{V}) \cap \mathcal{V} \neq \emptyset$. Since $c(\mathcal{V})$ is also a connected component of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, it follows that $c(\mathcal{V}) = \mathcal{V}$. This implies that $\mathcal{V} = \rho^{-1}(\mathcal{U})$ for $\mathcal{U} = \rho(\mathcal{V})$. If $\mathcal{V} \neq X$, then the image of $\mathcal{W} = X_{\mathbf{C}} \backslash \mathcal{V}$ in $X$ does not intersect $\mathcal{U}$, i.e., it is an open subset of $X$ and the complement of $\mathcal{U}$ in $X$. This contradicts connectivity of $X$. Consider now the case $X(\mathbf{R}) = \emptyset$. Then $\rho : (X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$ is a local isomorphism which is a double topological covering of $X$. If some connected component $\mathcal{V}$ of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ has nonempty intersection with $c(\mathcal{V})$, then $c(\mathcal{V}) = \mathcal{V}$, and the above reasoning shows that $\mathcal{V}$ should coincide with $X$. Suppose therefore that $c(\mathcal{V}) \cap \mathcal{V} = \emptyset$ for all connected components $\mathcal{V}$ of $X$. If $\mathcal{V} \cup c(\mathcal{V}) \neq X_{\mathbf{C}}$, then the image of $\mathcal{W} = X_{\mathbf{C}} \backslash (\mathcal{V} \cup c(\mathcal{V}))$ in $X$ does not intersect $\rho(\mathcal{V})$, and this contradicts connectivity of $X$. Thus, $\mathcal{V} \cup c(\mathcal{V}) = X_{\mathbf{C}}$. Since there is an isomorphism of complex analytic spaces $c(\mathcal{V}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{V}^c$, it follows that $X = \mathcal{V}_{\mathbf{R}}$ and, therefore, $\mathfrak{c}_X(X)$ is isomorphic to $\mathbf{C}$. This contradicts the assumption. □

A connected $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ is said to be *geometrically connected* if it possesses the equivalent properties of Proposition 1.2.4.

1.3. **Klein surfaces as R-analytic manifolds of dimension one.** We recall the definition of Klein surfaces from [AG71].

Let $W$ be an open subset of the closed upper half-plane $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}$. A function $f : W \to \mathbf{C}$ is said to be *analytic* if it is the restriction of a function analytic in an open neighborhood of $W$ in $\mathbf{C}$. A function $f : W \to \mathbf{C}$ is said to be *antianalytic* if the function $W \to \mathbf{C} : z \mapsto \overline{f(z)}$ is analytic. A function $f : W \to \mathbf{C}$ is said to be *dianalytic* if its restriction to any connected component of $W$ is either analytic, or antianalytic.

Furthermore, a *dianalytic atlas* on a topological space $X$ consists of an open covering $\{U_j\}_{j \in J}$ of $X$ and, for each $j \in J$, a homeomorphism $h_j$ of $U_j$ with an open subset of $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}$ such that, for every pair $j, k \in J$, the function $h_k \circ h_j^{-1} : h_j(U_j \cap U_k) \to h_k(U_j \cap U_k) \subset \widehat{\mathbf{H}} \subset \mathbf{C}$ is dianalytic. A *Klein surface* is a Hausdorff topological space $X$ provided with a *dianalytic structure* i.e., a maximal dianalytic atlas. Such a space $X$ is a two dimensional manifold with boundary $\partial(X)$. The boundary consists of the points $x \in X$ such that there exists a local dianalytic chart $(U, h)$ (from the dianalytic structure of $X$) with $x \in U$ and $h(x) \in \mathbf{R} \subset \widehat{\mathbf{H}}$.

A *morphism of Klein surfaces* $\varphi : X' \to X$ is a continuous map with the properties that $\varphi(\partial(X')) \subset \partial(X)$ and, for every point $x' \in X'$, there exist local dianalytic charts $(U', h')$ of $X'$ and $(U, h)$ of $X$ such that $x' \in U'$, $\varphi(U') \subset U$ and the induced map $h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1} : h'(U') \to h(U)$ is of the form $\phi \circ g$, where $g$ is an analytic function on $h'(U')$ and $\phi$ is the "folding map" $\mathbf{C} \to \widehat{\mathbf{H}} : a + bi \mapsto a + |b|i$.

Let $X$ be a Klein surface. We provide it as follows with a sheaf of local $\mathbf{R}$-algebras $\mathcal{O}_X$. Let $\{(U, h_U)\}_U$ be the maximal dianalytic atlas of $X$. For an open subset $W \subset X$, we define $\mathcal{O}(W)$ as the $\mathbf{R}$-algebra of families $\{f_U\}_U$ of continuous functions $f_U : U \cap W \to \mathbf{C}$ with the following properties:

(1) for every chart $U$, the function $f_U \circ h_U^{-1} : h_U(U \cap W) \to \mathbf{C}$ is analytic and takes real values at $h_U(U \cap W) \cap \partial(X)$;
(2) for every pair charts $U$, $V$ with $U \cap V \cap W \neq \emptyset$ and every connected component $S$ of $U \cap V \cap W$, one has $f_U\big|_S = f_V\big|_S$ (resp. $f_U\big|_S = \overline{f}_V\big|_S$), if the restriction of $h_V \circ h_U^{-1}$ to $S$ is analytic (resp. antianalytic).

Notice that the same sheaf $\mathcal{O}_X$ is obtained if one uses an arbitrary (not necessarily maximal) dianalytic atlas. We also notice that, if we identify the closed upper half-plane $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}$ with $\mathbb{R}$, the properties (1) and (2) imply that the restriction of the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_X$ to a chart $U$ is identified with that of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{R}}$ to $h_U(U)$. This means that $(X, \mathcal{O}_X)$ is an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic manifold of dimension one. Moreover, the boundary $\partial(X)$ is nothing else than the set of $\mathbf{R}$-points of $(X, \mathcal{O}_X)$.

**Proposition 1.3.1.** *The correspondence $X \mapsto (X, \mathcal{O}_X)$ gives rise to an equivalence between the category of Klein surfaces and the category of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic manifolds of dimension one.*

*Proof.* Step 1. *The correspondence $X \mapsto (X, \mathcal{O}_X)$ is a functor.* Let $\varphi : X' \to X$ be a morphism of Klein surfaces. We have to associate to it a homomorphism of sheaves $\varphi^* : \varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_X) \to \mathcal{O}_{X'}$ that gives rise to a morphism of locally $\mathbf{R}$-ringed spaces $(X', \mathcal{O}_{X'}) \to (X, \mathcal{O}_X)$. It suffices to define a system of compatible homomorphisms $\mathcal{O}(U) \to \mathcal{O}(U') : f \mapsto \varphi^* f$ for all pairs of local dianalytic charts $(U, h)$ of $X$ and $(U', h')$ of $X'$ with $\varphi(U') \subset U$. By the definition, the map $h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1} : h'(U') \to h(U)$ is of the form $\phi \circ g'$, where $g'$ is an analytic function on $h'(U')$ and $\phi$ is the "folding map" $\mathbf{C} \to \widehat{\mathbf{H}} : a + bi \mapsto a + |b|i$. We define the value of $\varphi^* f$ at a point $x' \in U'$ as follows: $(\varphi^* f)(x')$ equals to $f(\varphi(x'))$, if $g'(h'(x')) \in \widehat{\mathbf{H}}$, and to $\overline{f(\varphi(x'))}$, if $g'(h'(x')) \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H}$. We have to check that $\varphi^* f \in \mathcal{O}(U')$ and that, for every local chart $(U'', h'')$ of $X$ with $\varphi(U'') \subset U$ and $U' \cap U'' \neq \emptyset$, the above function $v' = \varphi^* f$ on $U'$ and the similar function $v''$ on $U''$ are compatible on $U' \cap U''$.

First of all, since $\varphi(\partial(X')) \subset \partial(X)$ and $f$ takes real values at $U \cap \partial(X)$, $v'$ takes real values at $U' \cap \partial(X')$. Furthermore, the restriction of $v' \circ h'^{-1}$ to the open set $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$ is clearly analytic. The restriction of the map $h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1} : h'(U') \to h(U)$ to the open set $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \widehat{\mathbf{H}})$ is equal to the antianalytic function $z \mapsto \overline{g'(z)}$ and, therefore, the restriction of $v' \circ h'^{-1}$ to that set, which corresponds to the function $z \mapsto \overline{(f \circ h^{-1})(\overline{g'(z)})}$, is analytic. Finally, let $x'$ be a point of $U'$ with $g'(h'(x')) \in \mathbf{R}$. There is an open disc $D$ in $\mathbf{C}$ with center at $g'(h'(x'))$ such that $D \cap \widehat{\mathbf{H}} \subset h(U)$ and the function $(f \circ h^{-1})\big|_{D \cap \widehat{\mathbf{H}}}$ is the restriction of an analytic function in $D$. We now notice that, for any analytic function $u$ on $D$ that takes real values at $D \cap \mathbf{R}$, one has $u(z) = \overline{u(\overline{z})}$ for all points $z \in D$. This implies that the above two analytic functions on $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$ and $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \widehat{\mathbf{H}})$ are restrictions of the same analytic function on $h'(U')$, i.e., $\varphi^* f \in \mathcal{O}(U')$.

Let now $(U'', h'')$ be a local chart of $X$ with $\varphi(U'') \subset U$ and $U' \cap U'' \neq \emptyset$. As above, the map $h \circ \varphi \circ h''^{-1} : h''(U'') \to h(U)$ is of the form $\phi \circ g''$, where $g''$ is an analytic function on $h''(U'')$, and the value of $v''$ at point $x' \in U''$ is as follows: $v''(x')$ equals to $f(\varphi(x'))$, if $g''(h''(x')) \in \widehat{\mathbf{H}}$, and to $\overline{f(\varphi(x'))}$, if $g''(h''(x')) \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H}$. Let $W$ be a connected component of $U' \cap U''$, and denote by $w$ the restriction of the function $h'' \circ h'^{-1}$ to $h'(W)$. One has

$$(h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1})\big|_{h'(W)} = (h \circ \varphi \circ h''^{-1})\big|_{h''(W)} \circ w \ .$$

By the previous paragraph, the function $h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1}$ and $h \circ \varphi \circ h''^{-1}$ restricted to $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$ and $g''^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$ (resp. $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H})$ and $g''^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H})$) are equal to the analytic functions $z \mapsto g'(z)$ and $g''(z)$ (resp. the antianalytic functions $z \mapsto \overline{g'(z)}$ and $\overline{g''(z)}$), respectively. Thus, if the function $w$ is analytic, we get $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{H}) = g''^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$ and $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H}) = g''^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H})$, and this implies that $v'\big|_W = v''\big|_W$. If the function $w$ is antianalytic, we get $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{H}) = g''^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H})$ and $g'^{-1}(\mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{H}) = g''^{-1}(\mathbf{H})$, and this implies that $v'\big|_W = \overline{v}''\big|_W$.

Step 2. *The functor considered is fully faithful.* Given Klein surfaces $X$ and $X'$, let $\varphi : (X', \mathcal{O}_{X'}) \to (X, \mathcal{O}_X)$ be a morphism of $R$-analytic manifolds. Since the boundary of a Klein surface coincides with the set of real points of the corresponding **R**-analytic space, we have $\varphi(\partial(X')) \subset \partial(X)$. Let now $(U,h)$ and $(U',h')$ be dianalytic charts of $X$ and $X'$, respectively, with $\varphi(U') \subset U$. We have to show that the induced map $h \circ \varphi \circ h'^{-1} : h'(U') \to h(U)$ is of the form $\phi \circ g$ for an analytic function $g$ on $h'(U')$. The latter map is the underlying map of a morphism $\psi : \mathcal{U}' = h'(U') \to \mathcal{U} = h(U)$ of **R**-analytic open subspaces of $\mathbb{R} = \widehat{\mathbf{H}}$. Consider the induced morphism $\psi_{\mathbf{C}} : \mathcal{U}'_{\mathbf{C}} \to \mathcal{U}_{\mathbf{C}}$ of complex analytic open subspaces of **C**. This morphism is defined by a complex analytic function $f$ on $\mathcal{U}'_{\mathbf{C}}$. If $g$ denotes the restriction of $f$ to $\mathcal{U}'$, which is a closed subset of $\mathcal{U}'_{\mathbf{C}}$, we get $\psi = \phi \circ g$.

Step 3. *The functor is essentially surjective.* Indeed, let $X$ be an $R$-analytic manifold of dimension one. It is covered by open charts $U$ with given isomorphisms $h_U : U \widetilde{\to} h(U) \subset \mathbb{R}$. If we identify $\mathbb{R}$ with $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}$, we get a dianalytic atlas on $X$, which defines the structure of a Klein surface on $X$. □

1.4. **Étale fundamental group of an R-analytic space.** A morphism of **R**-analytic spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$ is said to be an *étale covering map* if it is an étale morphism with the property that each point of $X$ has an open neighborhood $\mathcal{U}$ for which $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{U})$ is a disjoint union of spaces such that the induced morphism from each of them to $\mathcal{U}$ is finite étale. In this situation $Y$ is said to be an *étale covering space over* $X$. The category of étale covering spaces over $X$ is denoted by $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X)$. Notice that any morphism in this category is automatically an étale covering map. Notice also that any topological space $Y$ provided with a topological covering map $Y \to X$ has a canonical structure of an **R**-analytic space for which this map is an étale covering map. If all points of $X$ are complex, then each étale covering map $Y \to X$ is a topological covering map and, in particular, $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X)$ coincides with the category $\mathrm{Cov}(X)$ of topological covering spaces over $X$.

Furthermore, we say that an étale covering space $Y$ over a connected **R**-analytic space $X$ is an *étale universal covering*, if it is connected and, for any étale covering space $Y'$ over $X$, there exists a morphism $Y \to Y'$ over $X$. Notice that, if $Y'$ is connected, any such morphism $Y \to Y'$ is surjective. The remark from the previous paragraph implies that, if $X$ is not geometrically connected, i.e., $X = Z_{\mathbf{R}}$ for a complex analytic space $Z$, then for a topological universal covering $Y$ of $Z$, $Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ is an étale universal covering of $X$ and, in particular, any étale universal covering of $X$ is isomorphic to $Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $X$.

**Proposition 1.4.1.** *Let $X$ be a geometrically connected* **R***-analytic space, and let $Y$ be a topological universal covering over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. Then*

(i) *$Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ is an étale universal covering over $X$;*
(ii) *any étale universal covering of $X$ is isomorphic to $Y_{\mathbf{R}}$;*
(iii) *the complex conjugation $c$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ lifts to an* **R***-automorphism of $Y$;*
(iv) *if $X(\mathbf{R}) \neq \emptyset$, the complex conjugation $c$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ lifts to a complex conjugation $c_Y$ on $Y$ and, in particular, $Y$ is isomorphic to $Z_{\mathbf{C}}$ for a geometrically connected étale covering space $Z$ over $X$.*

Notice that the set of liftings of $c$ to $Y$ (from (iii)) is a principal homogeneous space for the group of automorphisms of $Y$ over $X$.

*Proof.* (i) Let $Z$ be an étale covering space over $X$. Then $Z_{\mathbf{C}}$ is an étale covering space over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and, therefore, there exists a morphism $Y \to Z_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. By Proposition 1.2.3, the latter gives rise to a morphism $Y_{\mathbf{R}} \to Z$ over $X$.

(ii) Let $Z$ be an étale universal covering space over $X$. By the definition there are morphisms $\varphi : Y_{\mathbf{R}} \to Z$ and $\psi : Z \to Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $X$. They are themselves étale covering maps, and their composition is a morphism $\psi \circ \varphi : Y_{\mathbf{R}} \to Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $X$ which gives rise to a morphism $Y \to Y$ over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. Since $Y$ is an étale universal covering space over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, the latter is an isomorphism and, therefore, $\psi \circ \varphi$ is an isomorphism. This implies that $\psi : Y_{\mathbf{R}} \to Z$ is an open immersion. Since $Z$ is connected, it follows that $\psi$ is an isomorphism.

(iii) Consider the cartesian diagram of maps of topological spaces

$$\begin{array}{ccc} Y & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & X_{\mathbf{C}} \\ {\scriptstyle\beta}\uparrow & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle c} \\ Y' & \xrightarrow{\alpha'} & X_{\mathbf{C}} \end{array}$$

Since $\alpha' : Y' \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a topological covering map, $Y'$ has the canonical structure of a complex analytic space with respect to which $\alpha'$ is a local isomorphism. Let $x$ be a point $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. If $c(x) \neq x$ (resp. $c(x) = x$), we can find an open neighborhood $U$ of $x$ such that $c(U) \cap U = \emptyset$ (resp. $c(U) = U$) and $\alpha^{-1}(U) = \coprod_{i \in I} V_i$ with $V_i \subset Y$ for which $\alpha$ induces a complex analytic isomorphism $U_i \xrightarrow{\sim} U$. Then $\alpha'^{-1}(c(U)) = \coprod_{i \in I} V'_i$ with $V'_i = V_i \times_U c(U)$. Then $\alpha'$ induces a complex analytic isomorphism $V'_i \xrightarrow{\sim} c(U)$ and $\beta$ induces an $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphism $V'_i \xrightarrow{\sim} V_i$. In this way $Y'$ is identified with the complex analytic space $Y^c$ and $\beta$ is identified with the complex conjugation $c : Y^c \xrightarrow{\sim} Y$. Furthermore, since both $\alpha$ and $\alpha'$ are universal coverings of the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, there is a complex analytic isomorphism $Y \xrightarrow{\sim} Y^c$ over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ whose composition with $\beta : Y^c \xrightarrow{\sim} Y$ is a required $\mathbf{R}$-automorphism of $Y$.

(iv) Let $x$ be a point of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ over a real point of $X$. Then $c(x) = x$ and, as in the proof of (iii), we can find an open neighborhood $U$ of $x$ such that $c(U) = U$ and $\alpha^{-1}(U) = \coprod_{i \in I} V_i$ with $V_i \subset Y$ for which $\alpha$ induces a complex analytic isomorphism $V_i \xrightarrow{\sim} U$. Let $y$ be a point in $\alpha^{-1}(x)$. It lies in some $V_i$. Let now $y'$ be a point in $\alpha'^{-1}(x)$ that lies in $V'_i$, and let $\delta : Y \xrightarrow{\sim} Y'$ be the complex analytic isomorphism of topological universal coverings over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ that takes $y$ to $y'$. *We claim that the composition $c' = \beta \circ \delta : Y \xrightarrow{\sim} Y$ defines a complex conjugation on $Y$.* Indeed, since the $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphism $c'$ is compatible with the complex conjugation $c$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, one has $c'(y) = y$. Then the complex analytic isomorphism $c'^2 : Y \xrightarrow{\sim} Y$ is an automorphism of the topological universal covering of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ that takes the point $y$ to itself. It follows that $c'^2$ is the identity map on $Y$. It remains to show that $Y$ is covered by $c'$-invariant local charts.

First of all, as in the proof of (iii), $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is covered by open subsets $U$ with either $c(U) \cap U = \emptyset$, or $c(U) = U$, and such that $\alpha^{-1}(U) = \coprod_{i \in I} \widetilde{U}_i$ and $\beta^{-1}(U) = \coprod_{i \in I} \widetilde{U}'_i$ with $\widetilde{U}_i \xrightarrow{\sim} U$ and $\widetilde{U}'_i \xrightarrow{\sim} c(U)$ for all $i \in I$. The $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphism $\beta$ induces $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphisms $\widetilde{U}'_i \xrightarrow{\sim} \widetilde{c(U)}_i$, and the complex analytic isomorphism $\delta$ gives rise to isomorphisms $\widetilde{U}_i \xrightarrow{\sim} \widetilde{U}'_{\sigma(i)}$, where $\sigma$ is a permutation of the set $I$. It follows that the involution $c'$ gives rise to $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphisms $\widetilde{U}_i \xrightarrow{\sim} \widetilde{c(U)}_{\sigma(i)}$. Thus, $Y$ is covered by the $c'$-invariant open sets $\widetilde{U}_i \cup \widetilde{c(U)}_{\sigma(i)}$. □

**Corollary 1.4.2.** *In the situation of Proposition 1.4.1(iv), the automorphism group of $Y_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $X$ is a semi-direct product of the automorphism group of $Y$ over $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and the complex conjugation $c_Y$.* □

A *geometric point* of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ is a morphism $\mathbf{x} : \mathbb{C}^0_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$. It is nothing else than a point of the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The image of a geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ in $X$ will be denoted by $x$. A geometric point $\mathbf{x} : \mathbb{C}^0_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$ defines the following covariant functor $F_{\mathbf{x}} : \mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X) \to \mathcal{E}ns$. It takes an étale covering space $Y$ over $X$ to the set of geometric points $\mathbf{y} : \mathbb{C}^0_{\mathbf{R}} \to Y$ whose composition with the étale covering map $Y \to X$ is the geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ or, equivalently, the preimage of the point $\mathbf{x} \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$ in $Y_{\mathbf{C}}$. Similarly, any point $x \in X$ defines a functor $F_x : \mathrm{Cov}(X) \to \mathcal{E}ns$ that takes a topological covering space $Y$ over $X$ to the preimage of $x$ in $Y$.

**Proposition 1.4.3.** *Let $X$ be a connected $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. Then for any pair of geometric points $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}$ of $X$, there exists an isomorphism of functors $F_{\mathbf{x}} \widetilde{\to} F_{\mathbf{y}}$.*

*Proof.* Consider first the case when all points of $X$ are complex. Then any étale covering map $\varphi : Y \to X$ is a topological covering map and, therefore, $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y) \widetilde{\to} F_x(Y) = \varphi^{-1}(x)$. Thus, any path from $x$ to $y$ in $X$ defines a required isomorphism of functors.

Consider now the case when $X(\mathbf{R}) \neq \emptyset$ and, in particular, $X$ is geometrically connected. Then $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}}$ is connected. The geometric points $\mathbf{x}$ and $\mathbf{y}$ can be lifted to geometric points $\mathbf{x}'$ and $\mathbf{y}'$ of $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}}$ with respect to the canonical morphism $(X_{\mathbf{C}})_{\mathbf{R}} \to X$. By the previous case, there exists an isomorphism of functors $F_{\mathbf{x}'} \widetilde{\to} F_{\mathbf{y}'}$. It gives rise to the required isomorphism $F_{\mathbf{x}} \widetilde{\to} F_{\mathbf{y}}$. ☐

Given geometric points $\mathbf{x}$ and $\mathbf{y}$ of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$, the *homotopy class of an étale path* from $\mathbf{x}$ to $\mathbf{y}$ is an isomorphism of functors $\gamma : F_{\mathbf{x}} \widetilde{\to} F_{\mathbf{y}}$. For brevity, we call it the *étale path* from $\mathbf{x}$ to $\mathbf{y}$ and denote by $\gamma : \mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{y}$. The *étale fundamental groupoid* of an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$ is the category $\Pi_1(X)$ whose objects are geometric points $\mathbf{x}$ of $X$ (i.e., points of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$) and the sets of morphisms $\Pi_1(X, \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ are the sets of étale paths $\gamma : \mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{y}$. The *étale fundamental group* of $X$ at a geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ is the group $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x}) = \Pi_1(X, \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$. The corresponding topological fundamental groupoid and the topological fundamental group of the underlying topological space $|X|$ of $X$ will be denoted by $\Pi_1(|X|)$ and $\pi_1(|X|, x)$, respectively. For example, if $X$ is connected but not geometrically connected, then the evident functor $\Pi_1(X) \to \Pi_1(|X|) : \mathbf{x} \mapsto x$ is an equivalence of categories, which is not a bijection between their sets of objects.

**Proposition 1.4.4.** *Let $X$ be a connected $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. Then for any geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ of $X$, the functor $F_{\mathbf{x}}$ gives rise to an equivalent of categories*

$$\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X) \widetilde{\to} \pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})\text{-}\mathcal{E}ns \ .$$

The right hand side is the category of $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-sets.

*Proof.* Step 1. Let $\varphi : Y \to X$ is an étale covering morphism. *Then there is a bijection between connected components of $Y$ and $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-orbits in $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$.* Indeed, any set of points from $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$ lying in one connected component of $Y$ is a union of $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-orbit. On the other hand, let $\mathbf{y}_1$ and $\mathbf{y}_2$ are geometric points of a connected component $Y'$ of $Y$ over $\mathbf{x}$. By Proposition 1.4.3, there exists an étale path $\gamma : \mathbf{y}_1 \mapsto \mathbf{y}_2$. Then $\varphi \circ \gamma$ is an étale path $\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{x}$, i.e., an element of $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$ which takes $\mathbf{y}_1$ to $\mathbf{y}_2$ in $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$.

Step 2. *The functor considered is fully faithful.* Indeed, let $Y$ and $Z$ be connected étale covering spaces over $X$. Then morphisms $Y \to Z$ in $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X)$ correspond to connected components $W$ of $Y \times_X Z$ for which the projection $W \to Y$ is an isomorphism. On the other hand, $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-equivariant maps $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y) \to F_{\mathbf{y}}(Z)$ correspond to $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-orbits $\Sigma$ in $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y \times_X Z) = F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y) \times F_{\mathbf{x}}(Z)$ for which the projection $\Sigma \to F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$ is a bijection. The claim therefore follows from Step 1.

Step 3. *The functor is essentially surjective.* Firts of all, we need the following fact.

**Lemma 1.4.5.** *Let $Y$ be an étale universal covering of $X$. Then $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$ is a principal homogeneous space for $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$.*

*Proof.* Step 1 implies that the group $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$ acts transitively on the set $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$. Furthermore, let $g$ be a nonrivial element of $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$. Then there exists a connected étale covering space $Z$ over $X$ such that $g$ acts nontrivially on $F_x(Z)$. Since there is a morphism $Y \to Z$ over $X$ that induces a surjective $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-equivariant map $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y) \to F_x(Z)$, it follows that the element $g$ acts nontrivially on the set $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$. This implies the lemma. □

**Corollary 1.4.6.** *In the situation of Lemma 1.4.5, the following is true*

(i) *the group $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$ is isomorphic to the automorphism group of $Y$ over $X$;*
(ii) *if $X$ is geometrically connected, then there is an exact sequence*

$$1 \longrightarrow \pi_1(X_{\mathbf{C}}, \mathbf{x}) \longrightarrow \pi_1(X, \mathbf{x}) \longrightarrow \langle c \rangle \longrightarrow 1 ,$$

*and if $X(\mathbf{R}) \neq \emptyset$, this sequence splits.*

*Proof.* (i) Let $\mathbf{y}$ be a fixed point from $F_{\mathbf{x}}(Y)$. By Lemma 1.4.5, for any automorphism $\varphi$ of $Y$ over $X$ there exists a unique element $h \in \pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$ with $\varphi(y) = h^{-1}y$. Then $\varphi(gy) = gh^{-1}y$ for all $g \in \pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$. The correspondence $\varphi \mapsto h$ gives a required isomorphism.

(ii) follows from (i) and Proposition 1.4.1. □

It suffices to consider the case when $X$ is geometrically connected. Let $\Sigma$ be a transitive $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-set. Fix a point $\sigma \in \Sigma$, denote by $H$ its stabilizer in $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$, and set $H_0 = H \cap \pi_1(X_{\mathbf{C}}, \mathbf{x})$. Let $Z$ be the complex analytic quotient $Y/H_0$. If $H_0 = H$, then the étale covering space over $X$ that corresponds to the $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-set $\Sigma$ is $Z_{\mathbf{R}}$. If $H_0 \neq H$, then $H_0$ is an invariant subgroup of index two in $H$, and the nontrivial element of the quotient $H/H_0$ acts as a complex conjugation $c$ on $Z$. In this case, the étale covering space over $X$ that corresponds to the $\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-set $\Sigma$ is the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $Z/\langle c \rangle$. □

**Example 1.4.7.** Let $\mathbb{R}^*$ be the punctured $\mathbf{R}$-analytic affine line $\mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}$. Its scalars extension $\mathbb{R}^*_{\mathbf{C}}$ is the punctured complex analytic affine line $\mathbb{C}^*$, and the complex analytic affine line $\mathbb{C}$ is a topological universal covering of $\mathbb{C}^*$ with respect to the exponential map $\mathbb{C} \to \mathbb{C}^* : b \mapsto e^b$. It follows that $\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{R}}$ is an étale universal covering of $\mathbb{R}^*$. The automorphism group of $\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $\mathbb{R}^*$, which will be denoted by $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*)$, is canonically isomorphic to the group $2\pi i \mathbf{Z} \rtimes \langle c \rangle$.

1.5. **Étale topology of an R-analytic space.** For an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$, let $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X)$ denote the category of étale morphisms $U \to X$. The *étale topology* on $X$ is the Grothendieck topology on the category $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X)$ generated by the pretopology in which the set of coverings of $(U \to X) \in \acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X)$ is formed by the families $\{U_i \stackrel{f_i}{\to} U\}_{i \in I}$ such that $U = \bigcup_{i \in I} U_i$. The site obtained in this way is denoted by $X_{\text{ét}}$ (the *étale site* of $X$), and the category of sheaves of sets on $X_{\text{ét}}$ is denoted by $X_{\text{ét}}^{\sim}$. The cohomology groups of an abelian sheaf $A$ on $X_{\text{ét}}$ will be denoted by $H^q(X, A)$, and those of an abelian sheaf $A$ on the underlying topological space will be denoted by $H^q(|X|, A)$.

By the way, it will be convenient for us to use a similar site $Y_{\text{ét}}$ for a topological space $Y$. It is defined in the same way as above for maps $V \to Y$ which are local homeomorphisms at each point of $V$ (such maps will be called étale). Of course, $Y_{\text{ét}}^{\sim}$ coincides with the usual category of sheaves on the topological space $Y$. The convenience of using the site $Y_{\text{ét}}$ is, for example, in follows. Any continuous map $\varphi : Y \to X$ to our $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$, which goes through a continuous map $Y \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$, gives rise to a morphism of sites $Y_{\text{ét}} \to X_{\text{ét}}$ and, in particular, one can use usual operations on sheaves (direct image, inverse image and so on).

The stalk of an étale sheaf $A$ at a geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ is denoted by $A_{\mathbf{x}}$. One has $A_{\mathbf{x}} = \varinjlim A(V)$, where $V$ runs through open neighborhoods of the point $\mathbf{x}$ in $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. It is a set provided with an action of the Galois group $G_{\mathbf{x}} = \mathrm{Gal}(\mathcal{H}(\mathbf{x})/\mathcal{H}(x))$. The latter is trivial if $x$, the image of $\mathbf{x}$ in $X$, is a complex point, and is of order two, if $x$ is a real point. There is a morphism of sites $\pi : X_{\text{ét}} \to |X|$ and, if all points of $X$ are complex, it gives rise to an equivalence of topoi $|X|^{\sim} \widetilde{\to} X_{\text{ét}}^{\sim}$. For any abelian sheaf $A$ on $X_{\text{ét}}$, one has $(R^q\pi_*A)_x \widetilde{\to} H^q(G_{\mathbf{x}}, A_{\mathbf{x}})$. It follows that $(\pi_*A)_x = A_{\mathbf{x}}^{G_{\mathbf{x}}}$ and, for $q \geq 1$, the sheaves $R^q\pi_*(A)$ are supported at the subset $X(\mathbf{R})$. The above morphism of sites gives rise to a spectral sequence

$$E_2^{p,q} = H^p(|X|, R^q\pi_*A) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(X, A) \ .$$

In particular, if all points of $X$ are complex or the sheaf $A$ is uniquely divisible by two, for all $q \geq 0$ one has $H^q(|X|, \pi_*A) \widetilde{\to} H^q(X, A)$.

For example, if $F$ is a coherent sheaf of $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules, then the étale presheaf $\widetilde{F}$ whose value at an étale morphism $\varphi : U \to X$ is $(\varphi^{-1}(F) \otimes_{\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_X)} \mathcal{O}_U)(U)$ is a sheaf, and one has $H^q(X, \widetilde{F}) \widetilde{\to} H^q(|X|, F)$ for all $q \geq 0$. The latter groups will be denoted just by $H^q(X, F)$.

The restriction of an étale sheaf $A$ on $X$ to the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is denoted by $A_{\mathbf{C}}$. It is provided with an action of the group $\langle c \rangle$ compatible with its action on the space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The correspondence $A \mapsto A_{\mathbf{C}}$ gives rise to an equivalence $X_{\text{ét}}^{\sim} \widetilde{\to} X_{\mathbf{C}}(\langle c \rangle)^{\sim}$ between the category $X_{\text{ét}}^{\sim}$ and the category $X_{\mathbf{C}}(\langle c \rangle)^{\sim}$ of $c$-sheaves on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, i.e., sheaves provided with an action of the group $\langle c \rangle$ compatible with its action on the space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The functor $\mathcal{I}^{\langle c \rangle}$, which takes a $c$-sheaf $B$ to the subsheaf of $c$-invariant sections in the direct image on $B$ with respect to the morphism $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to X$, is inverse to the above one (and exact). If $I^{\langle c \rangle}$ denotes the functor that takes a $\langle c \rangle$-module to the subgroup of $c$-invariant elements, then for any étale abelian sheaf $A$ there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Gamma(X, A) \widetilde{\to} RI^{\langle c \rangle}(R\Gamma(X_{\mathbf{C}}, A_{\mathbf{C}}))$ and, in particular, there is a Hochschield-Serre spectral sequence of the étale Galois cover $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $X$

$$E_2^{p,q} = H^p(\langle c \rangle, H^q(X_{\mathbf{C}}, A_{\mathbf{C}})) \Longrightarrow H^q(X, A) \ .$$

It follows that, if the sheaf $A$ is uniquely divisible by two, then for all $q \geq 0$ one has $H^q(X, A) \widetilde{\to} H^q(X_{\mathbf{C}}, A_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c \rangle}$.

A Hausdorff $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space is said to be *Stein* if $H^q(X, F) = 0$ for all coherent $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules $F$ and all $q \geq 1$. It is easy to see that $X$ is Stein if and only if the complex analytic space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is Stein. Indeed, if $F$ is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$-module, then its direct image $\rho_*(F)$ is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_X$ module, where $\rho$ is the morphism $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to X$.

Since $R^q\rho_*(F) = 0$ for all $q \geq 1$, it follows that $H^q(X_{\mathbf{C}}, F) = H^q(X, \rho_*(F))$ for all $q \geq 0$, and this implies the direct implication. On the other hand, if $F$ is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_X$-module, then $H^q(X, F)\widetilde{\to}H^q(X_{\mathbf{C}}, F)^{\langle c\rangle}$ for all $q \geq 0$, and this implies the converse implication.

An étale sheaf of sets $F$ on $X$ is said to be *locally constant* if there is an étale covering $\{U_i \to X\}_{i\in I}$ such that the restriction of $F$ to each $U_i$ is a constant sheaf. The functor $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X) \to \widetilde{X_{\text{ét}}}$ that takes an étale covering space $Y$ over $X$ to the étale sheaf representable by it gives rise to an equivalence of categories between $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X)$ and the category $\mathcal{L}con^{\text{ét}}(X)$ of étale locally constant sheaves on $X$. Proposition 1.4.4 implies that, if $X$ is connected, the functor from the latter that takes an étale locally constant sheaf $F$ to the stalk $F_{\mathbf{x}}$ at a geometric point $\mathbf{x}$ gives rises to an equivalence of categories $\mathcal{L}con^{\text{ét}}(X)\widetilde{\to}\pi_1(X, \mathbf{x})$-$\mathcal{E}ns$.

**Remark 1.5.1.** There is an alternative description of the category $\mathcal{L}con^{\text{ét}}(X)$ which will be used later. Namely, let $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét},un}(X)$ be the full subcategory of $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét}}(X)$ consisting of étale universal coverings of $X$. The category $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét},un}(X)$ is a groupoid. Then the correspondence $F \mapsto F(Y)$ gives rise to an equivalence between $\mathcal{L}con^{\text{ét}}(X)$ and the category of contravariant functors $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét},un}(X) \to \mathcal{E}ns$. The same is true for any full subgroupoid of $\mathrm{Cov}^{\text{ét},un}(X)$.

## 2. Vanishing cycles in Archimedean analytic geometry

Beginning with this section, the bold letter $\mathbf{F}$ is used to denote an Archimedean field, i.e., $\mathbf{R}$ or $\mathbf{C}$, and the corresponding $\mathbf{F}$-analytic affine space of dimension $n \geq 0$ is denoted by $\mathbb{F}^n$, or just $\mathbb{F}$ if $n = 1$. (There is a canonical embedding of sets $\mathbf{F}^n \hookrightarrow \mathbb{F}^n$, which is a bijection only if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ or $n = 0$.) The category of $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces is denoted by $\mathbf{F}$-$\mathcal{A}n$. The residue field $\mathcal{O}_{X,x}/\mathbf{m}_x$ of a point $x$ of an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$ is denoted by $\mathcal{H}(x)$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $\mathcal{H}(x) = \mathbf{C}$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, then $\mathcal{H}(x)$ is either $\mathbf{R}$, or (non-canonically) isomorphic to $\mathbf{C}$. We also denote by $\mathcal{K}$ the fraction field of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, and set $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0} = \mathcal{K} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$. In order to make exposition uniform, we use the notation $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ even for $\mathbf{C}$-analytic spaces $X$ bearing in mind that in this case $X_{\mathbf{C}} = X$.

### 2.1. The analytification of a scheme over a Stein germ.

Recall that a Stein compact is a compact subset $\Sigma$ of an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$ which has a fundamental system of open neighborhoods which are Stein spaces. For example, if $\Sigma = \{x\}$ is just a point, it is a Stein compact and $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma) = \mathcal{O}_{X,x}$ is the stalk of the structural sheaf of $X$ at $x$. A natural framework for dealing with the analytification of schemes finitely presented over the ring $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$ is that of pro-analytic spaces. This framework is developed in [SGA4, Exp. I] (see also [Ber96a, §2]). We recall briefly some notations and facts.

The category $\mathrm{Pro}(C)$ of pro-objects of a category $C$ is defined as follows. Its objects are covariant functors $I \to C : i \mapsto X_i$, where $I$ is a small cofiltered category, and they are denoted by $"\varprojlim_I" X_i$. Morphisms between such objects are defined as follows: $\mathrm{Hom}("\varprojlim_J" Y_j, "\varprojlim_I" X_i) = \varprojlim_I \varinjlim_{J^\circ} \mathrm{Hom}(Y_j, X_i)$. The category $\mathrm{Pro}(C)$ admits cofiltered projective limits, and if $C$ admits fiber products, then so is $\mathrm{Pro}(C)$. If $C$ is the category $\mathbf{F}$-$\mathcal{A}n$,, we get the category of pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic (or just pro-analytic) spaces $\mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{F}$-$\mathcal{A}n)$ . A pro-analytic space $"\varprojlim_I" X_i$ gives rise to the underlying locally ringed space $|\mathbf{X}|$ of $\mathbf{X}$. Namely, the underlying topological space $|\mathbf{X}|$ of $\mathbf{X}$ is the projective limit of the underlying topological spaces $|X_i|$ of $X_i$ and $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{X},x} = \varinjlim_{I^\circ} \mathcal{O}_{X_i,x_i}$, where $x_i$ is the image of $x$ in $X_i$. We remark that the space $|\mathbf{X}|$ may be empty even when $\mathbf{X}$ is nontrivial. We also notice that there is an evident functor $\mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{F}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n) \to \mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n) : \mathbf{X} \mapsto \mathbf{X}_\mathbf{C}$. (If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $\mathbf{X}_\mathbf{C} = \mathbf{X}$.)

An example of pro-analytic spaces is provided by $\mathbf{F}$-germs of analytic spaces. Recall (see [Ber93, §3.4]) that the latter are pairs $(X, \Sigma)$, where $X$ is an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space and $\Sigma$ is a subset of $X$, and the set of morphisms $\mathrm{Hom}((X', \Sigma'), (X, \Sigma))$ is the inductive limit of the sets of morphisms $\varphi : \mathcal{U}' \to X$ with $\varphi(\Sigma') \subset \Sigma$, where $\mathcal{U}'$ runs through open neighborhoods of $\Sigma'$ in $X'$. If $\Sigma$ is a Stein compact, the germ $(X, \Sigma)$ is said to be *Stein*.

There is a fully faithful functor $\mathbf{F}$-*Germs* $\to \mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{F}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n)$ from the category of $\mathbf{F}$-germs $\mathbf{F}$-*Germs* that takes $(X, \Sigma)$ to $X(\Sigma) = \text{"}\varprojlim\text{"}\,\mathcal{U}$ , where $\mathcal{U}$ runs through open neighborhoods of $\Sigma$ in $X$. This functor commutes with direct products, but does not commute in general with fiber products. For example, let $\varphi : Y \to X$ be a morphism of complex analytic spaces and $x \in X$. Then the fiber product $Y \times_X (X, x)$ in the category $\mathbf{F}$-*Germs* is the $\mathbf{F}$-germ $(Y, \varphi^{-1}(x))$, i.e., it gives rise to $Y(\varphi^{-1}(x)) = \text{"}\varprojlim\text{"}\,\mathcal{V}$, where $\mathcal{V}$ runs through *all* open neighborhoods of the fiber $\varphi^{-1}(x)$. The corresponding fiber product $Y(x) := Y \times_X X(x)$ in the category $\mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{F}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n)$ is $\text{"}\varprojlim\text{"}\,\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{U})$, where $\mathcal{U}$ runs through open neighborhoods of $x$. We remark that the canonical morphism $Y(\varphi^{-1}(x)) \to Y(x)$ induces an isomorphism between the underlying locally ringed spaces, and there is a morphism $Y_x \to Y(\varphi^{-1}(x))$ which induces a homeomorphism between the underlying topological spaces. (Here $Y_x$ is the analytic space which is the fiber of $Y$ at $x$ in the usual sense.) We also notice that the evident functor $\mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{F}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n) \to \mathrm{Pro}(\mathbf{C}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n)$ takes $\mathbf{F}$-*Germs* to $\mathbf{C}$-*Germs*.

For an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$, the category of morphisms of $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces $Y \to X$ is denoted by $X\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$. Such an $Y$ is said to be an *$X$-analytic space*. If $\mathbf{X} = \text{"}\varprojlim_I\text{"}\,X_i$ is a pro-analytic space, then an *$\mathbf{X}$-analytic space* is an object of the category $\mathbf{X}\text{-}\mathcal{A}n := \varinjlim_{I^\circ} X_i\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$ . If $P$ is a class of morphisms between $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces which is preserved under any base change, then one can extend in the evident way the class $P$ to morphisms between $\mathbf{X}$-analytic spaces.

**Construction 2.1.1.** Let $(X, \Sigma)$ be a Stein germ. We are going to construct an *analytification* functor $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : \mathcal{Y} \mapsto \mathcal{Y}^h$ where, for a commutative ring $A$, $A\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch$ denotes the category of schemes finitely presented over $A$. This is done in two steps.

(1) For a Stein space $U$, there is an analytification functor

$$\mathcal{O}(U)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to U\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : \mathcal{Y} \mapsto \mathcal{Y}^h \ .$$

Namely, for a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}(U)$, $\mathcal{Y}^h$ represents the functor on $U\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$ that takes a morphism $Z \to U$ to the set of morphisms of locally ringed spaces $Z \to \mathcal{Y}$ over $\mathcal{O}(U)$. For example, if $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$, where $A = \mathcal{O}(X)[T_1, \ldots, T_m]/\mathbf{a}$ with finitely generated ideal $\mathbf{a}$, then $\mathcal{Y}^h$ is the closed analytic subspace of $U \times \mathbb{F}^m$ defined by the coherent subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{J}$ generated by $\mathbf{a}$.

(2) An $X(\Sigma)$-*scheme* is an object of the category

$$X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch = \varinjlim_{U\supset\Sigma} \mathcal{O}(U)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \ ,$$

where the inductive limit is taken over the open Stein neighborhoods of $\Sigma$ in $S$. There is a natural fully faithful functor $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch : \mathcal{Y} \mapsto \underline{\mathcal{Y}}$. Namely, if $\mathcal{Y}$ is finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$, it follows from [EGA4, Théorème (8.8.2)] that there exists a scheme $\mathcal{Y}_U$ finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}(U)$ for an open Stein neighborhood $U$ of $\Sigma$, and $\underline{\mathcal{Y}}$ is defined by this $\mathcal{Y}_{\mathcal{U}}$. The analytification functor from (1) defines a functor $X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : \mathcal{Z} \mapsto \mathcal{Z}^h$, and the required analytification functor $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$ is the composition of the latter with the functor $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch \to X(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{S}ch$, i.e., $\mathcal{Y}^h = (\underline{\mathcal{Y}})^h$ for $\mathcal{Y}$ as above is defined by $\mathcal{Y}^h_U$. We notice that there is a canonical morphism of pro-objects in the category of locally ringed spaces $\mathcal{Y}^h \to \underline{\mathcal{Y}}$. We also notice that, given morphisms of Stein germs $(X', \Sigma') \to (X, \Sigma)$, there is a canonical isomorphism of $X'(\Sigma')$-analytic spaces

$$(\mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)} \mathcal{O}_{X'}(\Sigma'))^h \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{Y}^h \times_{X(\Sigma)} X'(\Sigma') \ .$$

**Lemma 2.1.2.** *If a morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ of schemes finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$ is separated (resp. proper, resp. finite, resp. closed immersion, resp. open immersion, resp. étale, resp. smooth), then so is the induced morphism of $X(\Sigma)$-analytic spaces $\varphi^h : \mathcal{Z}^h \to \mathcal{Y}^h$.* □

For a pro-analytic space $\mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$, the category of étale sheaves of sets $\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X})$ is defined as the inductive limit of the categories of étale sheaves of sets $\mathbf{T}(X_i)$ on $X_i$. An étale sheaf on $\mathbf{X}$ is said to be *locally constant* if it comes from an étale locally constant sheaf on some $X_i$. Furthermore, there are abelian categories of étale abelian sheaves $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X})$ and of étale sheaves of $R$-module $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X}, R)$, where $R$ is a commutative ring. Their derived categories are denoted by $D(\mathbf{X})$ and $D(\mathbf{X}, R)$. If all of the transition morphisms $X_i \to X_j$ are étale (e.g., open immersions), then the category $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X})$ has injectives, and so the values of the left exact functor $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X}) \to \mathcal{A}b : F \mapsto F(\mathbf{X}) = \varinjlim_{I^\circ} F(X_i)$ are $H^q(\mathbf{X}, F) = \varinjlim_{I^\circ} H^q(X_i, F)$.

Given a morphism of pro-analytic spaces $\varphi : \mathbf{Y} = "\varprojlim_J" Y_j \to \mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$, there is a well defined inverse image functor $\varphi^* : \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X}) \to \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{Y})$ and, in the situations we really need, there is a direct image functor $\varphi_* : \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{Y}) \to \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X})$ which is right adjoint to $\varphi^*$ (see [Ber96a, §2]). Namely, the functor $\varphi_*$ is defined if the morphism $\varphi$ makes $\mathbf{Y}$ an $\mathbf{X}$-analytic space. In this case we may assume that $I = J$ and $\varphi$ is defined by a morphism of analytic spaces $Y_i \to X_i$ for some $i \in I$. If $F$ is a sheaf on $\mathbf{Y}$, we can increase $i$ and assume that it is defined by a sheaf $F_i$ on $Y_i$. Then $\varphi_*$ is defined by the sheaf $\varphi_{i*}(F)$ on $X_i$. The restriction of $\varphi_*$ to the category of abelian sheaves is a left exact functor $\varphi_* : \mathbf{S}(\mathbf{Y}) \to \mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X})$. If all of the transition morphisms $X_j \to X_i$ are étale, the categories $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X})$ and $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{Y})$ have enough injectives, and the high direct images $R^q\varphi_*(F)$ are defined by the sheaves $R^q\varphi_{i*}(F)$. If the morphism $\varphi$ is separated, $\varphi_*$ has a left exact subfunctor $\varphi_! : \mathbf{S}(\mathbf{Y}) \to \mathbf{S}(\mathbf{X})$ which are defined in the evident way and, in the above situation, the high direct image $R^q\varphi_!(F)$ is defined by the sheaf $R^q\varphi_{\mathcal{U}!}(F_{\mathcal{U}})$ on $X$. For example, $\varphi_*$ is well defined for all morphisms in the category $B(\Sigma)\text{-}\mathcal{A}n$.

**Proposition 2.1.3.** *(Comparison Theorem for Cohomology with Compact Support) Let $(X, \Sigma)$ be a Stein germ, and let $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ be a compactifiable morphism between schemes finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$. Then for any étale abelian torsion sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Z}$, there is a canonical isomorphism $(R\varphi_!\mathcal{F})^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_!\mathcal{F}^h$.*

*Proof.* We can shrink $X$ and assume that it is a Stein space, the schemes $\mathcal{Z}$ and $\mathcal{Y}$ are base changes of schemes $\mathcal{Z}'$ and $\mathcal{Y}'$ finitely presented over $\mathcal{O}(X)$, the morphism $\varphi$ is induced by a compactifiable morphism $\varphi' : \mathcal{Z}' \to \mathcal{Y}'$, and the sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ is defined by an abelian torsion sheaf $\mathcal{F}'$ on $\mathcal{Z}'$. It suffices therefore to show that the canonical homomorphism $(R^q\varphi'_!\mathcal{F}')^h \to R^q\varphi'^h_!\mathcal{F}'^h$ of sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}'^h$ is an isomorphism. For this it suffices to verify that this homomorphism induces an isomorphism of stalks of both sheaves at every point $y \in \mathcal{Y}'^h$. By the well known results on étale and classical cohomology, the stalks of the sheaves on the left and right hand sides are $H^q_c(\mathcal{Z}'_y, \mathcal{F}'_y)$ and $H^q_c(\mathcal{Z}'^h_y, \mathcal{F}'^h_y)$, respectively, and the classical comparison theorem for cohomology with compact support implies the required fact. □

**Remarks 2.1.4.** (i) We say that a Stein germ $(X, \Sigma)$ (or a Stein compact $\Sigma$) is *noetherian* if the ring $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$ is noetherian. By a theorem of Frisch-Siu ([Fri67, (I,9)] and [Siu69]), a Stein compact $\Sigma$ is noetherian if and only if it possesses the following property: if $Y$ is a closed analytic subspace of an open neighborhood of $\Sigma$, then the set of connected components of the intersection $Y \cap \Sigma$ is finite.

(ii) One can prove the following analog of the generic comparison theorem [Ber93, 7.5.1] in which noetherian Stein compacts play the role of affinoid spaces. Suppose that $\mathcal{S}$ is a scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$, where $(X, \Sigma)$ is a noetherian Stein germ, $f : \mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{S}$ and $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ are morphisms of finite type, and $\mathcal{F}$ is an étale constructible abelian (torsion) sheaf on $\mathcal{Z}$. Then there exists a dense open subset $\mathcal{U} \subset \mathcal{S}$ such that

1. The sheaves $R^q\varphi_*\mathcal{F}\big|_{f^{-1}(\mathcal{U})}$ are constructible and almost all of them are equal to zero.
2. The formation of the sheaves $R^q\varphi_*\mathcal{F}$ is compatible with any base change $\mathcal{S}' \to \mathcal{S}$ such that the image of $\mathcal{S}'$ is contained in $\mathcal{U}$.
3. In (2), assume that $\mathcal{S}'$ is a scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{X'}(\Sigma')$, where $(X', \Sigma')$ is a noetherian Stein germ, and that the morphism $\mathcal{S}' \to \mathcal{S}$ is the composition $\mathcal{S}' \to \mathcal{S} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)} \mathcal{O}_{X'}(\Sigma') \to \mathcal{S}$ for a morphism of germs $(X', \Sigma') \to (X, \Sigma)$. Let $\varphi'$ be the morphism $\mathcal{Z}' = \mathcal{Z} \times_\mathcal{S} \mathcal{S}' \to \mathcal{Y}' = \mathcal{Y} \times_\mathcal{S} \mathcal{S}'$, and let $\mathcal{F}'$ be the inverse image of $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Z}'$. Then there is a canonical isomorphism
$$(R\varphi'_*\mathcal{F}')^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi'^h_*\mathcal{F}'^h \ .$$

The proof is the same as that in *loc. cit.* which, in its turn, follows the proof of Deligne's generic theorem 1.9 from [SGA4$\frac{1}{2}$, Th. finitude]. If $\mathcal{S} = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{F})$ is a point, the above fact gives the classical comparison theorem from [SGA4, Exp. XI]. Here is another case of application. Let $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ be a morphism between schemes of finite type over the fraction field $\mathcal{K}$ of the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, and let $\mathcal{F}$ be a constructible sheaf on $\mathcal{Z}$. Then there is a canonical isomorphism $(R\varphi_*\mathcal{F})^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_*\mathcal{F}^h$.

2.2. **An example.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, where $b$ is a point of an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $B$. For an $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$-scheme $\mathcal{Y}$, we set $\mathcal{Y}_\eta = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}} \mathcal{K}$ (the *generic fiber* of $\mathcal{Y}$) , $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}} = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}} \mathbf{F}$ (the *special fiber* of $\mathcal{Y}$), and

$\mathcal{Y}_s = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{B,b}} \mathcal{H}(b)$ (the *closed fiber* of $\mathcal{Y}$). For example, if $(B,b) = (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, then $\mathcal{Y}_s = \widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$. In general, there are morphisms of schemes

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathcal{Y}_\eta & \xrightarrow{j} & \mathcal{Y} & \xleftarrow{i} & \mathcal{Y}_s \\ & & & \nwarrow^{\tilde{i}} & \downarrow \\ & & & & \widetilde{\mathcal{Y}} \end{array}$$

By Construction 2.1.1, applied to the germ $(B,b)$, there is an associated diagram of morphisms of $B(b)$-analytic spaces (which are also pro-analytic spaces over $\mathbb{F}(0)$)

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathcal{Y}^h_\eta & \xrightarrow{j^h} & \mathcal{Y}^h & \xleftarrow{i^h} & \mathcal{Y}^h_s \\ & & & \nwarrow^{\tilde{i}^h} & \downarrow \\ & & & & \widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}^h \end{array}$$

Notice that $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ is just the $\mathbf{F}$-analytification of the scheme $\mathcal{Y}_s$ and that the vertical arrow induces a homeomorphism $\mathcal{Y}^h_s \xrightarrow{\sim} |\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}^h|$.

Furthermore, every subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$ defines a $\mathbf{F}$-germ $(\mathcal{Y}^h, \mathcal{Z}^h)$ which, in its turn, defines a pro-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h) = "\varprojlim" V$ , where $V$ runs through open neighborhoods of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$. The *generic fiber* of the latter is the pro-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_\eta = "\varprojlim" V_\eta$ over $\mathbb{F}^*$, where $V_\eta$ is the preimage of $\mathbb{F}^*$ in $V$. There are canonical morphisms of pro-analytic spaces $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h) \to \mathcal{Y}^h$ and $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_\eta \to \mathcal{Y}^h_\eta$, which are isomorphisms if $\mathcal{Y}$ is proper over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ and $\mathcal{Z} = \mathcal{Y}_s$.

On the other hand, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ of $\mathcal{Y}$ along a subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$ is a formal scheme of finite type over $\mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b})$, where $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b}$ is the $\mathbf{m}_b$-adic completion of $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$. This completion is a special $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$-algebra and, therefore, $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ is a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ = \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, where $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$ is the completion of $\mathcal{K}$ with respect to a fixed discrete valuation. Notice that, for every open neighborhood $\mathcal{V}$ of $\mathcal{Z}$ in $\mathcal{Y}$ there are canonical isomorphisms $\mathcal{V}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)$ and $\widehat{\mathcal{V}}_{/\mathcal{Z}} \xrightarrow{\sim} \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$. Recall (see [Ber06, §1.1]) that a strictly $k$-analytic space $X$ is said to be rig-smooth if, for every connected strictly affinoid domain $V \subset X$, the sheaf of differentials $\Omega^1_V$ is locally free of rank $\dim(V)$. If $\mathrm{char}(k) = 0$, this is equivalent to the property that the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{X,x}$ of every point $x \in X$ with $[\mathcal{H}(x) : k] < \infty$ is regular. The following statement is a characterization of rig-smoothness of the generic fiber of $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ in simple complex analytic terms.

**Theorem 2.2.1.** *In the above situation, the following are equivalent:*

(a) *the $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$-analytic space $(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta$ is rig-smooth;*
(b) *there is an open neighborhood $\mathcal{V}$ of $\mathcal{Z}$ in $\mathcal{Y}$ such that $\mathcal{V}_\eta$ is regular;*
(c) *the morphism $\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}^h)_\eta \to \mathbb{F}^*$ is smooth.*

The property (c) just tells that there is an open neighborhood $V$ of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$ such that the induced morphism $V \to \mathbb{F}$ is smooth outside the preimage of zero.

*Proof.* First of all, we remark that, for every closed point $y \in \mathcal{Y}_s$, there is a canonical isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{Y},y} \xrightarrow{\sim} \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{Y}^h,y}$. Since the local rings considered are excellent, it follows that regularity of the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y},y})_\eta$ is equivalent to regularity of the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y}^h,y})_\eta$. In particular, if the property (b) holds, then the schemes $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y}^h,y})_\eta$ are regular for all closed points $y \in \mathcal{Z}$. Conversely, suppose the latter is true. Then the schemes $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y},y})_\eta$ are regular for all closed points $y \in \mathcal{Z}$ and, therefore, they are contained in the regularity locus $\mathcal{U}$ of $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$. If now $\mathcal{V}$ is the complement of the Zariski closure of the set $\mathcal{Y}_\eta \backslash \mathcal{U}$ in $\mathcal{Y}$, then $\mathcal{V} \supset \mathcal{Y}_s$ and $\mathcal{V} \cap \mathcal{Y}_\eta = \mathcal{U}$, i.e., (b) holds.

(a)$\Longleftrightarrow$(b). Since $(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta \widetilde{\to} \pi^{-1}(\mathcal{Z})$, where $\pi$ is the reduction map $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta \to \mathcal{Y}_s$, the $K$-analytic space $(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta$ is rig-smooth if and only if the spaces $(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\{z\}})_\eta$ are rig-smooth for all closed points $z \in \mathcal{Z}$. (Since the latter spaces have no boundary, rig-smoothness for them is equivalent to smoothness.) The above remark therefore reduces the situation to the case $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{B,b})$ and $\mathcal{Z} = \mathcal{Y}_s = \{b\}$, and we have to show that $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ is smooth if and only if the scheme $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$ is regular.

Till the end of the proof we set $K = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}$. Let $A = \mathcal{O}_{B,b}$. Then $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}} = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{A})$, where $\widehat{A}$ is the $\mathbf{m}_b$-adic completion of $A$. By a result of de Jong [deJ95, 7.1.9], the map $y \mapsto \mathbf{n}_y$ that takes a point $y \in \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ with $[\mathcal{H}(y) : K] < \infty$ to the preimage of $\mathbf{m}_y$ under the canonical homomorphism $\widehat{A} \otimes_{K^\circ} K \to \mathcal{O}_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta,y}$ is a bijection between the set of such points and the set of maximal ideals of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{K^\circ} K$, and this homomorphism induces an isomorphism between the $\mathbf{n}_y$-adic completion of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{K^\circ} K$ and the $\mathbf{m}_y$-adic completion of $\mathcal{O}_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta,y}$. We now notice that the above maximal ideals $\mathbf{n}_y$ of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{K^\circ} K$ correspond to the prime ideals $\mathfrak{p} \subset \widehat{A}$ which have coheight one and whose intersection with $K^\circ$ is zero. Moreover, the $\mathbf{n}_y$-adic completion of $\widehat{A} \otimes_{K^\circ} K$ coincides with the $\mathfrak{p}$-adic completion of the localization $(\widehat{A})_\mathfrak{p}$. This implies that the $K$-analytic space $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ is rig-smooth if and only if the affine scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(\widehat{A})$ is regular at all points that correspond to the above prime ideals $\mathfrak{p} \subset \widehat{A}$. Since the ring $A$ is excellent, the latter is equivalent to regularity of the affine scheme $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$.

(b)$\Longrightarrow$(c). Indeed, replacing $\mathcal{Y}$ by $\mathcal{V}$, we may assume that $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$ is regular. By Temkin's result on desingularization from [Tem08], there exists a blow-up $\varphi : \mathcal{Y}' \to \mathcal{Y}$ with $\mathcal{Y}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{Y}_\eta$ and such that $\mathcal{Y}'$ is regular and the support of $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}} = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}} \mathbf{F}$ is a divisor with strict normal crossings. Given a closed point $y' \in \mathcal{Z}'$, the preimage of $\mathcal{Z}$ in $\mathcal{Y}'_s$, let $t_1, \ldots, t_d$ be a system of regular parameters of $\mathcal{Y}'$ at $y'$ such that $t_1, \ldots, t_n$ for $1 \le n \le d$ define the irreducible components of $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$ passing through $y'$. Then $z = t_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot t_n^{e_n} u$ for some $e_i \ge 1$ and $u \in \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathcal{Y}',y}$. We can find an étale neighborhood $\psi : \mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}'$ of the point $y'$ such that all of the functions $t_1, \ldots, t_d, u$ are defined on $\mathcal{Y}''$ and the ring $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Y}'')$ contains an $e_1$-th root of $u$. If $y'' \in \psi^{-1}(y)$, it induces an isomorphism of complex analytic germs $(\mathcal{Y}''^h, y'') \widetilde{\to} (\mathcal{Y}^h, y)$. We set $t'_1 = \frac{t_1}{\sqrt[e_1]{u}}$, and $\mathcal{P} = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}[T_1, \ldots, T_d]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_n^{e_n} - z))$. The homomorphism

$$\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}[T_1, \ldots, T_d]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_n^{e_n} - z) \to \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Y}'') : T_1 \mapsto t'_1,\ T_i \mapsto t_i \text{ for } 2 \le i \le d,$$

gives rise to a morphism $\chi : \mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{P}$. If $p = \chi(y'')$, there is an induced isomorphism of completions $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{P},p} = \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{P}^h,p} \widetilde{\to} \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{Y}'',y''} = \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathcal{Y}''^h,y''}$ and, therefore, it induces an isomorphism of complex analytic germs $(\mathcal{Y}''^h, y'') \widetilde{\to} (\mathcal{P}^h, p)$. Since the morphism $\mathcal{P}^h_\eta \to \mathbf{C}^*$ is smooth, it follows that there exists an open neighborhood $V_y$ of $y$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$ for which the morphism $V_y \cap \mathcal{Y}^h_\eta \to \mathbf{C}^*$ is smooth. Then the property (c) holds for the union $V = \bigcup V_y$ taken over all closed points $y \in \mathcal{Z}$.

(c)$\Longrightarrow$(a). By the remark at the beginning of the proof, it suffices to consider the case when $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{B,b})$ and $\mathcal{Z} = \mathcal{Y}_s = \{b\}$, and we have to show that the space $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ is rig-smooth.. Recall the definition of the Jacobian ideal $H_{A/R}$ of $A = \mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ over $R = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$. Fix generators $f_1, \dots, f_n$ of the maximal ideal of $A$, and consider the associated surjective homomorphism $S = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F}\times\mathbb{F}^n,0} \to A$ over $R$ that takes $T_i$ to $f_i$, $1 \le i \le n$. Let $g_1, \dots, g_m$ be generators of the kernel the latter surjection, and denote by $\Delta$ the matrix $(\frac{\partial g_i}{\partial T_j})_{1\le i\le m, 1\le j\le n}$ with coefficients in $S$. Furthermore, for a subset $L \subset \{1, \dots, m\}$, let $H_L$ denote the ideal of $S$ generated by the $r\times r$-minors of $\Delta$ whose rows correspond to the elements of $L$, where $r = |L|$. Let also $J_L$ denote the ideal of $S$ generated by $g_i$'s with $i \in L$, and set $J = (g_1, \dots, g_m) = \mathrm{Ker}(S \to A)$. The Jacobian ideal of $A$ over $R$ is the ideal

$$H_{A/R} = \mathrm{rad}\left(\sum_L (J_L : J) H_L A\right) ,$$

where $(J_L : J) = \{x \in S \big| xJ \subset J_L\}$. It is well known that the ideal $H_{A/R}$ depends only on the homomorphism $R \to A$. Let $V$ be an open neighborhood of the point $b$ in $B$ for which the latter homomorphism is induced by a morphism $V \to \mathbb{F}$ such that all elements from a finite system of generators of $H_{A/R}$ are defined over $V$. By the assumption, we can shrink $V$ and assume that the morphism $V \to \mathbb{F}$ is smooth outside the preimage of zero. The Jacobian criterion of smoothness implies that the ideal $H_{A/R}$ contains a nonzero element of the maximal ideal of $R = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$. It follows that the similar Jacobian ideal $H_{\widehat{A}/\widehat{R}}$ for the completions of $R$ and $A$ contains a nonzero element of the maximal ideal of $K^\circ = \widehat{R}$. Finally, the strictly $K$-analytic space $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ can be covered by strictly affinoid domains $X$ such that $X = \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ for an affine formal scheme $\mathfrak{X} = \mathrm{Spf}(D)$ of finite type over $K^\circ$ and the canonical embedding $X \to \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ is induced by a morphism of formal scheme $\mathfrak{X} \to \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$. It follows that the Jacobian ideal $H_{D/K^\circ}$ contains a nonzero element of the maximal ideal of $K^\circ$, i.e., it is open in $D$. By [Tem08, Proposition 3.3.2], $X$ is rig-smooth. This implies that $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ is rig-smooth. $\square$

**Remark 2.2.2.** Let $\mathfrak{X} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$, where $A = \mathbf{C}[[T_1, \dots, T_n]]$ and $n \ge 1$. Each nonzero element $f$ of the maximal ideal of $A$ defines a homomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ = \mathbf{C}[[z]] \to A : z \mapsto f$ that makes $\mathfrak{X}$ a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ$. Since the ring $A$ is regular, it follows that the $(n-1)$-dimensional $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$-analytic space $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is rig-smooth. Furthermore, the number $\mu(f) = \dim_{\mathbf{C}}(A/J(f))$, where $J(f)$ is the ideal generated by the partial derivatives $\frac{\partial f}{\partial T_i}$, is said to be the Milnor number of $f$. If $\mu(f) < \infty$, then $f$ is equivalent to a polynomial $g$, i.e., there exists an adic automorphism $\alpha$ of $A$ over $\mathbf{C}$ with $\alpha(f) = g$. The polynomial $g$ defines a morphism $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(A) \to \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[z])$ which is smooth outside the zero point 0 in its open neighborhood, and the automorphism $\alpha$ defines an isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\{0\}} \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}$ over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ$. If $n \ge 3$, there exists an element $f$ of the maximal ideal of $A$ which is not equivalent to a convergent power series from $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C}^n,0}$ (see [Sh76]).

2.3. **Nearby and vanishing cycles functors.** In this subsection we recall the definition of the nearby and vanishing cycles functors in complex analytic geometry (see [SGA7, Exp. XIV]).

Recall that $\mathbb{C}$ is a topological universal covering of $\mathbb{C}^*$ with respect to the exponential map $b \mapsto e^b$, and $\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{R}}$ is an étale universal covering of $\mathbb{R}^*$. Let $\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}$ be the field of functions meromorphic in the preimage $\overline{D^*}$ of some punctured open disc with center at zero $D^*$ in $\mathbb{F}$ and algebraic over $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$. It is an algebraic closure of $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$ (and of $\mathcal{K}$), and it is generated over $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$ by the functions $b \mapsto e^{\frac{b}{n}}$, $n \geq 1$. We set $G = \mathrm{Gal}(\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}/\mathcal{K})$. The action of the Galois group $G_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathrm{Gal}(\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}/\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ on those functions gives rise to an isomorphism $G_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} \varprojlim \mu_n$, where $\mu_n$ is the group of $n$-th roots of unity. The element $\sigma = (e^{\frac{2\pi i}{n}})_{n \geq 1}$ is a topological generator of $G_{\mathbf{C}}$. The canonical action of the fundamental group $\pi_1(\mathbb{C}^*)$ on $\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}$ identifies it with a dense subgroup of $G_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the shift $b \mapsto b + 2\pi i$ of $\mathbb{C}$, which is a generator of $\pi_1(\mathbb{C}^*)$, corresponds to the above element $\sigma$.

If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the Galois group $G$ is a semidirect product $G_{\mathbf{C}} \rtimes \langle c \rangle$ with the complex conjugation $c$ acting trivially on the functions $b \mapsto e^{\frac{b}{n}}$ and acting on $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$ in the evident way. There is a canonical embedding $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*) \hookrightarrow G$ which identifies the former with a dense subgroup of the latter. (Recall that we denote by $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*)$ the automorphism group of $\mathbb{C}_{\mathbf{R}}$ over $\mathbb{R}^*$.)

We set $\mathbf{D} = \mathbb{F}(0) = \text{"}\varprojlim\text{"} D$ and $\mathbf{D}^* = \text{"}\varprojlim\text{"} D^*$, where $D$ runs through open discs in $\mathbb{F}$ with center at zero. The zero point, which is complement of $D^*$ in $D$ and of $\mathbf{D}^*$ in $\mathbf{D}$, can be identified with the one point space $\mathbb{F}^0$. (Notice that $\mathbf{D} = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0})^h$, $\mathbf{D}^* = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{K})^h$, and $\mathbb{F}^0 = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{F})^h$.) For a pro-analytic space $\mathbf{X}$ over $\mathbf{D}$, we set $\mathbf{X}_\eta = \mathbf{X} \times_{\mathbf{D}} \mathbf{D}^*$ (the *generic fiber of* $\mathbf{X}$) and $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}} = \mathbf{X} \times_{\mathbf{D}} \mathbb{F}^0$ (the *special fiber of* $\mathbf{X}$). Furthermore, suppose we are given a closed immersion $\mathbf{X}_s \to \widetilde{\mathbf{X}}$ from an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathbf{X}_s$ which induces a homeomorphism $|\mathbf{X}_s| \widetilde{\to} |\widetilde{\mathbf{X}}|$. This space $\mathbf{X}_s$ is said to be the *closed fiber of* $\mathbf{X}$. There are morphisms of pro-analytic spaces

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{X}_\eta & \xrightarrow{j} & \mathbf{X} & \xleftarrow{i} & \mathbf{X}_s \\ & & & \nwarrow^{\tilde{i}} & \downarrow \\ & & & & \widetilde{\mathbf{X}} \end{array}$$

Notice that if $\mathbf{X}$ is a $\mathbf{D}$-analytic space, then $\mathbf{X}_s \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{\mathbf{X}}$. The $\mathbf{F}$-analytic *nearby cycles functor* is the functor $\Theta : \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X}_\eta) \to \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X}_s)$ from the category of étale sheaves on $\mathbf{X}_\eta$ to that of étale sheaves on $\mathbf{X}_s$ defined by $\Theta(F) = i^*(j_*(F))$. If $F^\cdot \in D(\mathbf{X}_\eta)$, one has $R\Theta(F^\cdot) = i^*(Rj_*(F^\cdot))$ in $D(\mathbf{X}_s)$.

Furthermore, we set $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*} = \text{"}\varprojlim\text{"} \overline{D^*}$ and $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}} = \mathbf{X}_\eta \times_{\mathbf{D}} \overline{\mathbf{D}^*}$ . We also set $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}} = (\mathbf{X}_s)_{\mathbf{C}}$. (Of course, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $\mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathbf{X}$ and $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}} = \mathbf{X}_s$.) These are pro-topological spaces over $\mathbf{D}$ provided with an action of the group $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$, and there is a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}} & \xrightarrow{\overline{j}} & \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}} & \xleftarrow{\overline{i}} & \mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}} \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathbf{X}_\eta & \xrightarrow{j} & \mathbf{X} & \xleftarrow{i} & \mathbf{X}_s \end{array}$$

The $\mathbf{F}$-analytic *vanishing cycles functor* $\Psi_\eta : \mathbf{T}(\mathbf{X}_\eta) \to \mathbf{T}_{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}(\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}})$ is defined by $\Psi_\eta(F) = \overline{i}^*(\overline{j}_*\overline{F})$, where $\mathbf{T}_{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}(\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}})$ is the category of $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaves on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ (i.e., sheaves provided with an action of $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$ compatible with its action on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$) and $\overline{F}$ is the pullback of $F$ on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}}$. If $F^\cdot \in D^+(\mathbf{X}_\eta)$, one has $R\Psi_\eta(F^\cdot) = \overline{i}^*(R\overline{j}_*(\overline{F}^\cdot))$ in the derived category $D^+(\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}(\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)))$ of abelian $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaves on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$.

We notice that $(\mathbf{X_C})_s = \mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ and, since $(\mathbf{X}_\eta)_\mathbf{C} = (\mathbf{X_C})_\eta$, one has $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}} = (\mathbf{X_C})_{\overline{\eta}}$. It follows that, for any $F^{\cdot} \in D^+(\mathbf{X}_\eta)$, there are canonical isomorphisms

$$(R\Theta(F^{\cdot}))_\mathbf{C} \widetilde{\to} R\Theta(F^{\cdot}_\mathbf{C}),\ R\Theta(F^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle}(R\Theta(F^{\cdot}_\mathbf{C})),\ \text{and } R\Psi_\eta(F^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(F^{\cdot}_\mathbf{C}) \ ,$$

where $\mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle}$ denotes the exact functor that takes a $\langle c\rangle$-sheaf $L$ on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ to the subsheaf $(\pi_* L)^{\langle c\rangle}$ of $c$-invariant sections of its direct image with respect to the morphism $\rho : \mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}} \to \mathbf{X}_s$. These isomorphisms reduce verification of various facts on nearby and vanishing cycles to the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$.

Furthermore, if $\mathcal{I}^{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}$ denotes the functor that takes a $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaf $L$ on $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ to the subsheaf $(\rho_* L)^{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}$, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$R\mathcal{I}^{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}(R\Psi_\eta(F^{\cdot})) \widetilde{\to} R\Theta(F^{\cdot}) \ .$$

As above, this isomorphism reduces verification of various facts on nearby cycles to verification of corresponding facts on vanishing cycles.

**Example 2.3.1.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$ and a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ (as in §1.2). If the above $\mathbf{X}$ is the analytification $\mathcal{Y}^h$ of $\mathcal{Y}$, which is a $B(b)$-analytic space over $\mathbf{D}$, then $\mathbf{X}_\eta$, $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}}$ and $\mathbf{X}_s$ are the analytifications $\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta$, $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}^h$ and $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ of the corresponding objects of $\mathcal{Y}$, $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ is the analytification $\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}$ of the scheme $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}} = \mathcal{Y}_s \otimes_\mathbb{F} \mathbf{C}$, and $\mathbf{X_C}$ is the analytification $\overline{\mathcal{Y}}^h$ of the scheme $\overline{\mathcal{Y}} = \mathcal{Y} \otimes_\mathbb{F} \mathbf{C}$. The above construction gives rise to nearby and vanishing cycles functors $\Theta$ and $\Psi_\eta$ from the category of étale sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta$ to those of étale sheaves and étale $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ and $\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}$, respectively.

2.4. **Comparison with algebraic vanishing cycles.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$ and a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ as in Example 2.3.1. Consider the commutative diagram of morphisms of schemes with $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{\eta}} = \mathcal{Y}_\eta \otimes_{\mathcal{K}_\mathbb{F}} \mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}$

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{\eta}} & \xrightarrow{\overline{j}} & \overline{\mathcal{Y}} & \xleftarrow{\overline{i}} & \mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}} \\
\downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\
\mathcal{Y}_\eta & \xrightarrow{j} & \mathcal{Y} & \xleftarrow{i} & \mathcal{Y}_s
\end{array}$$

The algebraic geometry *nearby cycles functor* is the functor $\Theta : \mathbf{T}(\mathcal{Y}_\eta) \to \mathbf{T}(\mathcal{Y}_s)$ from the category of étale sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$ to that of étale sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}_s$ defined by $\Theta(\mathcal{F}) = i^* j_*(\mathcal{F})$. If $\mathcal{F}^{\cdot} \in D(\mathcal{Y}_\eta)$, then $R\Theta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot}) = i^*(Rj_*(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot}))$. The *vanishing cycles functor* is the functor $\Psi_\eta : \mathbf{T}(\mathcal{Y}_\eta) \to \mathbf{T}_G(\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}})$ to the category $\mathbf{T}_G(\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}})$ of étale $G$-sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}}$ (i.e., étale sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}}$ provided with a continuous action of the group $G$ compatible with its action on $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{s}}$) defined by $\Psi_\eta(\mathcal{F}) = \overline{i}^* \overline{j}_*(\overline{\mathcal{F}})$, where $\overline{\mathcal{F}}$ is the pullback of $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Y}_{\overline{\eta}}$. If $\mathcal{F}^{\cdot} \in D(\mathcal{Y}_\eta)$, one has $R\Psi_\eta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot}) = \overline{i}^*(R\overline{j}_*(\overline{\mathcal{F}}^{\cdot}))$.

For a scheme $\mathcal{Z}$ and $d \geq 1$, let $D_c(\mathcal{Z}, \mathbf{Z}/d\mathbf{Z})$ denote the derived category of étale $\mathbf{Z}/d\mathbf{Z}$-modules on $\mathcal{Z}$ with constructible cohomology sheaves.

**Theorem 2.4.1.** *In the above situation, for any $\mathcal{F}^{\cdot} \in D^+_c(\mathcal{Y}_\eta, \mathbf{Z}/d\mathbf{Z})$ the complexes $R\Theta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot})$ and $R\Psi_\eta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot})$ have constructible cohomology, and there are canonical isomorphisms in $D^+(\mathcal{Y}^h_s)$ and $D^+(\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}(G))$, respectively,*

$$(R\Theta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot}))^h \widetilde{\to} R\Theta(\mathcal{F}^{h\cdot}) \text{ and } (R\Psi_\eta(\mathcal{F}^{\cdot}))^h \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\mathcal{F}^{h\cdot}) \ .$$

*Proof.* It suffices to establish the isomorphism for the vanishing cycles complexes and in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. We also notice that validity of the theorem for sheaves is equivalent to its validity for bounded below complexes of constructible sheaves of $\mathbf{Z}/d\mathbf{Z}$-modules. Replacing $\mathcal{Y}$ by the scheme theoretic closure of $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$, we may assume that $\mathcal{Y}_\eta$ is dense in $\mathcal{Y}$.

Step 1. Suppose we are given a proper morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{Y}' \to \mathcal{Y}$, and a complex of constructible sheaves $\mathcal{G}^\cdot$ on $\mathcal{Y}'_\eta$. *If the theorem is true for the pair* $(\mathcal{Y}', \mathcal{G}^\cdot)$*, then it is also true for the pair* $(\mathcal{Y}, R\varphi_{\eta*}(\mathcal{G}^\cdot))$. Indeed, since $\varphi$ is proper, the complex $R\varphi_{\eta*}(\mathcal{G}^\cdot)$ has constructible cohomology sheaves, and one has

$$R\Psi_\eta(R\varphi_{\eta*}\mathcal{G}^\cdot)\widetilde{\to}R\varphi_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta\mathcal{G}^\cdot) \ .$$

It follows that the complex on the left hand side also has constructible cohomology sheaves and

$$(R\Psi_\eta(R\varphi_{\eta*}\mathcal{G}^\cdot))^h \stackrel{\alpha}{\to} R\varphi^h_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta\mathcal{G}^\cdot)^h \stackrel{\beta}{\to} R\varphi^h_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta\mathcal{G}^{\cdot h}) \stackrel{\gamma}{\to} R\Psi_\eta(R\varphi^h_{\eta*}\mathcal{G}^{\cdot h}) \ ,$$

where $\alpha$ is an isomorphism, by Proposition 2.1.3, $\beta$ is an isomorphism, by the assumption, and $\gamma$ is an isomorphism because $\varphi^h$ is a proper map.

Step 2. *To prove the theorem, it suffices to find for each constructible sheaf of* $\mathbf{Z}/d\mathbf{Z}$*-modules* $\mathcal{F}$ *an embedding of* $\mathcal{F} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{G}$*, where* $\mathcal{G}$ *is a similar sheaf* $\mathcal{G}$ *for which the theorem holds.* Indeed, if this is true then, we can find for each $m \geq 1$ an exact sequence of constructible sheaves, $0 \to \mathcal{F} \to \mathcal{G}^0 \to \ldots \to \mathcal{G}^m$, such that the theorem is true for all of the sheaves $\mathcal{G}^i$. This easily implies validity of the theorem for $\mathcal{F}$.

Step 3. *We may assume that* $\mathcal{Y}$ *is irreducible and reduced, i.e., integral, and* $\mathcal{F}$ *is constant.* Indeed, by [SGA4, Exp. IX, 2.14(ii)], the sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ can be embedded in a finite direct sum of sheaves of the form $f_*\mathcal{G}$, where $f : \mathcal{Z}' \to \mathcal{X}_\eta$ is a finite morphism and $\mathcal{G}$ is constant. We may assume that all such $\mathcal{Z}'$ are reduced and, therefore, we can replace them by their normalizations and assume that they are irreducible. If $\mathcal{Z}$ is the normalization of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{Z}'$, we may assume that $\mathcal{Z}' = \mathcal{Z}_\eta$, where $\mathcal{Z}$ is irreducible, normal and finite over $\mathcal{Y}$. It remains to use Steps 1 and 2.

Step 4. *We may assume that the scheme* $\mathcal{Y}$ *is regular and the supports of* $\mathcal{Y}_s$ *and* $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$ *are divisors with strict normal crossings.* Indeed, replacing $\mathcal{Y}$ by a blow-up, we may assume that the support of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ is a divisor. Since the scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ is excellent, we can apply the result of Temkin [Tem08, 1.1] for $\mathcal{Y}$ and its subscheme $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$. It follows that there is a blow-up $\mathcal{Y}' \to \mathcal{Y}$ such that $\mathcal{Y}'_s$ and $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$ are divisors with strict normal crossings. Step 1 implies that validity of theorem for the pair $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathcal{F})$ follows from its validity for the pair $(\mathcal{Y}', \mathcal{F}')$, where $\mathcal{F}'$ is the pullback of $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Y}'_{\eta'}$.

Step 5. *The theorem is true.* Indeed, in the situation of Step 4 the required statement follows from the well known description of algebraic (and analytic) nearby and vanishing cycles sheaves which are easy consequences of the characteristic zero purity theorem [SGA4, Exp. XIX, 3.2]. □

**Remark 2.4.2.** Theorem 2.4.1 and the generic comparison theorem stated in Remark 2.1.4 can be used to prove the following fact. Let $(X, \Sigma)$ be a Stein germ such that the dimension of $X$ is at most one and the set of connected components of $\Sigma$ is finite. (By the results mentioned at the beginning of §1.1, the latter is equivalent to the property that the Stein germ $(X,\Sigma)$ is noetherian.) Given a morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ of schemes of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_X(\Sigma)$ and a constructible sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Z}$, the complex $R\varphi_*(\mathcal{F})$ has constructible cohomology and there is a canonical isomorphism

$$(R\varphi_*\mathcal{F})^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi_*^h\mathcal{F}^h \ .$$

2.5. **Vanishing cycles on log smooth analytic spaces.** In the pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces $\mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$, considered in this subsection, all of the transition morphisms $X_{i'} \to X_i$ are assumed to be étale. Notice that any morphism $\mathbf{Y} = "\varprojlim_J" Y_j \to \mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$ between such pro-analytic spaces is defined (in the evident way) by a morphism of analytic spaces $Y_j \to X_i$ for some $i \in I$ and $j \in J$.

Basic notions of log geometry are naturally extended from analytic to such pro-analytic spaces. Namely, a *pre-log structure* on a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$ is a homomorphism of étale sheaves of multiplicative monoids $\beta : M \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{X}}$ which is induced by a pre-log structure $\beta_i : M_i \to \mathcal{O}_{X_i}$ on the $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X_i$ for some $i \in I$. A pre-log structure is said to be a *log structure* if $\beta^{-1}(\mathcal{O}^*_{\mathbf{X}}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathbf{X}}$. A log pro-analytic space $(\mathbf{X}, \beta : M \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{X}})$ as above is said to be *coherent* (resp. *fine*; resp. *fs*) if $\beta$ is induced by a coherent (resp. fine; resp. fs) log structure $\beta_i : M_i \to \mathcal{O}_{X_i}$ for some $i \in I$. A morphism of log pro-analytic spaces $\mathbf{Y} \to \mathbf{X}$ is said to be *log smooth* if it is defined by a log smooth morphism $Y_j \to X_i$ for some $i \in I$ and $j \in J$. (Recall that a morphism of log analytic spaces $Y \to X$ is log smooth if locally in the étale topology of $X$ and $Y$ it admits a chart $(P \to \mathcal{O}(X), Q \to \mathcal{O}(Y), P \to Q)$ with finitely generated and integral monoids $P$ and $Q$ such that the induced morphism $Y \to X \times_{\mathrm{Spec}(P)^h} \mathrm{Spec}(Q)^h$ is a strict open immersion.)

For example, the pro-analytic space $\mathbf{D} = "\varprojlim" D$ is provided with the fs log-structure $M_{\mathbf{D}} = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{D}} \cap \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathbf{D}^*} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{D}}$. (Notice that $\mathbf{D} = \mathcal{D}^h$, where the scheme $\mathcal{D} = \mathrm{Spec}(R)$ with $R = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ is provided with the log structure that corresponds to the homomorphism of multiplicative monoids $R \backslash \{0\} \hookrightarrow R = \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{D})$.) We are interested here with *log analytic spaces over* $\mathbf{D}$, i.e., log pro-analytic spaces $\mathbf{X}$ provided with a morphism of log pro-analytic spaces $\mathbf{X} \to \mathbf{D}$. For such $\mathbf{X}$ the special and closed fibers $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}}$ and $\mathbf{X}_s$ are provided with the log structures $\widetilde{\beta} : \widetilde{M} = \widetilde{i}^{-1}(M) \to \mathcal{O}_{\widetilde{\mathbf{X}}}$ and $\beta_s : M_s = i^{-1}(M) \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{X}_s}$, where $\widetilde{i}$ and $i$ are the closed immersions $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}} \to \mathbf{X}$ and $\mathbf{X}_s \to \mathbf{X}$, respectively. They are also provided with the induced morphisms of log pro-analytic and analytic spaces $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}} \to \mathbf{D}_s$ and $\mathbf{X}_s \to \mathbf{D}_s$. By the way, $\mathbf{D}_s$ is an analytic log point which is provided with a homomorphism $P \to \mathbf{F}$ from the free monoid generated by the coordinate function $z$ on the $\mathbf{F}$-analytic affine line $\mathbb{F}$ which goes to zero in $\mathbf{F}$. This log point is denoted by $\mathbf{pt} = \mathbf{pt}_{\mathbf{F}}$ , and the image of $z$ in $M_{\mathbf{pt}}$ is denoted by the same $z$.

Log smoothness of the morphism $\mathbf{X} \to \mathbf{D}$ means that it is defined by a log smooth morphism $X \to D$, i.e., locally in the étale topology of $X$ there is a fine chart $P \to \mathcal{O}(X)$ and an element $p \in P$ whose image in $\mathcal{O}(X)$ coincides with the image of $z$ and such that the morphism of log analytic spaces $X \to \mathrm{Spec}(R[P]/(p-z))^h$ is a strict open immersion. Such a log structure on $\mathbf{X}$ is said to be *vertical* if it restriction to $\mathbf{X}_\eta$ is trivial. In this case one can find a local chart as above with the additional property that, for every $a \in P$, there exist $b \in P$ and $n \geq 1$ with

$ab = p^n$. If $\mathbf{X}$ is log smooth over $\mathbf{D}$, then $\widetilde{\mathbf{X}}$ is log smooth over $\mathbf{pt}$, but $\mathbf{X}_s$ is not log smooth over $\mathbf{pt}$ in general.

We are going to describe nearby and vanishing cycles complexes of a log smooth morphism $\mathbf{X} \to \mathbf{D}$ in terms of the logarithmic structure on $\mathbf{X}$. First of all this is done for $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and then for $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$.

Recall that in [KN99] Kato and Nakayama constructed in a functorial way for every fs log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space $(X, M_X)$ a topological space $X^{\log}$ and a proper surjective map $\tau : X^{\log} \to X$. The construction works for the class of fine and not necessarily saturated log analytic spaces. Recall the definition. Let $X$ be a fine log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space. As a set, $X^{\log}$ is defined by

$$X^{\log} = \left\{ (x, h_x) \big| x \in X, h_x \in \mathrm{Hom}(M^{gr}_{X,x}, S^1) \text{ with } h_x(f) = \frac{f(x)}{|f(x)|} \text{ for } f \in \mathcal{O}^*_{X,x} \right\} ,$$

where $S^1$ is the unit circle in $\mathbf{C}$, and $\tau$ is the canonical projection $(x, h_x) \mapsto x$. If $\beta : P_U \to \mathcal{O}_U$ is a chart over an open subset $U \subset X$, there is a bijection

$$\tau^{-1}(U) \widetilde{\to} \left\{ (x, h) \in U \times \mathrm{Hom}(P^{gr}, S^1) \big| \beta(p)(x) = h(p) |\beta(p)(x)| \text{ for all } p \in P \right\}$$

that identifies $\tau^{-1}(U)$ with a closed subset of $U \times \mathrm{Hom}(P^{gr}, S^1)$, and the induced topology on $\tau^{-1}(U)$ does not depend on the choice of the chart on $U$. In this way, one gets the required topology on $X^{\log}$. If $X$ is log smooth, $X^{\log}$ is a topological manifold with boundary. For every strict morphism of fine log analytic spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$, there is a canonical homeomorphism $Y^{\log} \widetilde{\to} Y \times_X X^{\log}$. (In particular, if $X_{\mathrm{red}}$ is the underlying reduced analytic space provided with the induced log structure, then $X^{\log}_{\mathrm{red}} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}$.) For every point $x \in X$, there is a (non-canonical) homeomorphism $\tau^{-1}(x) \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Hom}(M^{gr}_{X,x}/\mathcal{O}^*_{X,x}, S^1)$. In particular, $\tau^{-1}(x)$ is homeomorphic to disjoint union of $k$ copies of $(S^1)^l$, where $k$ is the order of the torsion subgroup of $M^{gr}_{X,x}/\mathcal{O}^*_{X,x}$ and $l$ is its rational rank. If $X$ is log smooth, $X^{\log}$ is a topological manifold with boundary.

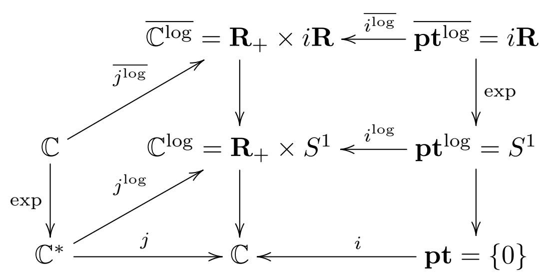
**Examples 2.5.1.** (i) (see [KN99,(1.2.1.1)]). Suppose $X = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[P])^h$ for a fine monoid $P$, and provide $X$ with the log structure that corresponds to the homomorphism $P \to \mathbf{C}[P]$. Then there are homeomorphisms $X \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Hom}(P, \mathbf{C}) : x \mapsto \chi_x$ and $X^{\log} \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Hom}(P, \mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1) : (x, h_x) \mapsto (|\chi_x|, h_x\big|_P)$ that are included in the following commutative diagram in which the right vertical arrow is induced by the map $\mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1 \to \mathbf{C} : (t, a) \mapsto ta$

$$\begin{array}{ccc} X & \xrightarrow{\sim} & \mathrm{Hom}(P, \mathbf{C}) \\ {\scriptstyle \tau} \uparrow & & \uparrow \\ X^{\log} & \xrightarrow{\sim} & \mathrm{Hom}(P, \mathbf{R}_+) \times \mathrm{Hom}(P, S^1) \end{array}$$

(ii) Consider the log complex plane $\mathbb{C}$ with the log structure generated by the coordinate function $z$. Then

$$\mathbb{C}^{\log} = \{ (b, h) \in \mathbb{C} \times \mathrm{Hom}(P^{gr}, S^1) \big| b = h(z)|b| \} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1 ,$$

where $P$ is monoid freely generated by $z$, and the map takes a pair $(b, h)$ to the pair $(|b|, h(z))$. In what follows we identify $\mathbb{C}^{\log}$ with $\mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1$ via the above map. Then the map $\mathbb{C}^{\log} \to \mathbb{C}$ takes $(t, a)$ to $ta$. The exponential maps $\mathbb{C} \to \mathbb{C}^*$ and $i\mathbf{R} \to S^1 : b \mapsto \exp(b) = e^b$ are topological universal coverings, and they gives rise to the topological universal covering $\overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} = \mathbf{R}_+ \times i\mathbf{R} \to \mathbb{C}^{\log} : (t,b) \mapsto (t, e^b)$. We get a commutative diagram of maps




Here $j^{\log}(a) = (|a|, \frac{a}{|a|})$ and $\overline{j^{\log}}(b) = (e^{\mathrm{Re}(b)}, i\mathrm{Im}(b))$.

(iii) For a fine log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space $X$ over the log complex plane $\mathbb{C}$, there is an induced map $X^{\log} \to \mathbb{C}^{\log} : (x, h_x) \mapsto (|\varphi(x)|, h_x(z))$, where $\varphi$ denotes the morphism $X \to \mathbb{C}$, and we set

$$\overline{X^{\log}} = X^{\log} \times_{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} \overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} = \{((x,h_x),(t,b)) \big| |\varphi(x)| = t \text{ and } h_x(z) = e^b\} \ .$$

The canonical map $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X^{\log} : ((x,h_x),(t,b)) \mapsto (x,h_x)$ is a topological covering map with the Galois group $\pi_1(S^1) = \pi(\mathbb{C}^*)$ and the generator $\sigma$ of the latter group acting by $((x,h_x),(t,b)) \mapsto ((x,h_x),(t,b+2\pi i))$. In particular, if $D = D(0;p)$ is the open disc in $\mathbb{C}$ with center at zero of radius $p > 0$ and provided with the induced log structure, then $D^{\log}$ and $\overline{D^{\log}}$ can be identified is with $[0,p) \times S^1$ and $[0,p) \times i\mathbf{R}$, respectively.

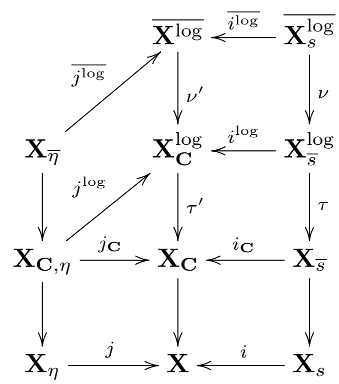
Consider now the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$. Let $X$ be a fine log $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space. Then there is a canonical lifting of the complex conjugation morphism $c : X_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} X_{\mathbf{C}}$ to an involutive homeomorphism $c : X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$. Namely, let $M_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} = \rho^*(M_X)$. Then the morphism $c$ induces an isomorphism of sheaves of monoids $c^*(M_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \widetilde{\to} M_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})$ which is compatible with the $\mathbf{R}$-isomorphism $c^*(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. This means that, for any open subset $V \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, $c$ induces an isomorphism $M_{\mathbf{X_C}}(V) \widetilde{\to} M_{\mathbf{X_C}}(c(V)) : m \mapsto m^c$, which is compatible with the isomorphism $\mathcal{O}(V) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}(c(V)) : f \mapsto f^c$, where $f^c(x) = \overline{f(c(x))}$. We define the required map $c : X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ by $c(x,h_x) = (c(x), h^c_{c(x)})$, where for a homomorphism $h_x : M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},x} \to S^1$ one sets $h^c_{c(x)}(m) = \overline{h_x(m^c)}$. We set

$$\overline{X^{\log}} = X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \times_{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} \overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} \ .$$

The group $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*) = 2\pi i\mathbf{Z} \rtimes \langle c \rangle$ acts on the space $\overline{X^{\log}}$. Namely, it acts on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\mathbb{C}^{\log}$ through its quotient by $\pi_1(\mathbb{C}^*) = 2\pi i\mathbf{Z}$, i.e., through the action of $c$ which is defined above. (For example, $c$ acts on $\mathbb{C}^{\log} = \mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1$ as the complex conjugation on $S^1$.) And $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*)$ acts evidently on $\overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} = \mathbf{R}_+ \times i\mathbf{R}$ with $c$ acting as complex conjugation on $i\mathbf{R}$. Notice also that the canonical map $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ is $\pi_1(\mathbb{R}^*)$-equivariant.

Let again $\mathbf{F}$ be either $\mathbf{C}$, or $\mathbf{R}$. For a fine vertical log pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathbf{X} = "\varprojlim_I" X_i$, we define $\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} = "\varprojlim_I" X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C},i}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}} = "\varprojlim_I" \overline{X^{\log}_i}$ as pro-topological spaces. For example, for $\mathbf{D} = "\varprojlim" D(0;p)$, one has $\mathbf{D}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} = "\varprojlim"([0,p[\times S^1)$ and $\overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}} = "\varprojlim"([0,p[\times i\mathbf{R})$. There is a $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-equivariant open embedding $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*} \hookrightarrow$

$\overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}}$. The complement of $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*}$ in $\overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}}$ is the universal covering $\overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}} = i\mathbf{R}$ of $\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} = S^1$. Furthermore, there is the following commutative diagram with cartesian squares



Since the restriction of the log structure to $\mathbf{X}_\eta$ is trivial, the map $\tau' : \mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \to \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a homeomorphism over the open subset $\mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C},\eta}$ and, therefore, it gives rise to compatible open embeddings $j^{\log} : \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C},\eta} \hookrightarrow \mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{j^{\log}} : \mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}} \to \overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}$ over $j$. We denote by $\overline{\tau}$ and $\overline{\tau}'$ the induced maps $\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s} \to \mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}} \to \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}}$, respectively, and by $\overline{j}$ the canonical map $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}} \to \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}}$.

Any $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-module $\Lambda$ defines a locally constant sheaf on each of the pro-analytic spaces $\mathbf{D}^*$, $\mathbf{D}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the pullback of the latter to $\mathbf{X}_\eta$, $\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\overline{s}}$ is denoted by $\Lambda_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}$, $\Lambda_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\Lambda_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\overline{s}}}$, respectively. Its pullback to $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}}$, $\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}$ is a $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaf which is denoted by $\underline{\Lambda}_{\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}}}$, $\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}}$ and $\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}}$, respectively. We also denote by $\underline{\Lambda}_{\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}}$ the constant $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-sheaf on the $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$-space $\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$ associated to $\Lambda$.

**Theorem 2.5.2.** *Let $\mathbf{X}$ be a vertical log pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space log smooth over $\mathbf{D}$. Then for any $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^b(\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)\text{-Mod})$, the following is true*

(i) *there are canonical isomorphisms in $D^+(\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}(\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)))$*

$$R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}}) \ ;$$

(ii) *if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\tau_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s})$;*

(iii) *if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, then $R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{I}^{\langle c \rangle}(R\tau_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_{\overline{s}}}))$.*

**Lemma 2.5.3.** *Let $(X, M_X)$ be a log smooth $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space, and let $\varphi : X' \to X$ be the normalization of $X$ provided with the log structure $M_{X'}$ which is the saturation of the sheaf of monoids $\varphi^*(M_X)$ in $\mathcal{O}_{X'}$. Then $X'$ is an fs log smooth analytic space, and the canonical map $X'^{\log} \to X^{\log}$ is a homeomorphism.*

We notice that, for a log smooth analytic space $(X, M_X)$, the homomorphism of sheaves of monoids $M_X \to \mathcal{O}_X$ is injective.

*Proof.* The statement is local in $X$ and, therefore, we may assume that $X = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[P])^h$ for a fine monoid $P$. Then $X' = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[P'])^h$, where $P'$ is the saturation of $P$ in $P^{gr}$, and the log structure $M_{X'} \to \mathcal{O}_{X'}$ is defined by the canonical homomorphism $P' \to \mathbf{C}[P']$. Since the monoid $\mathbf{R}_+$ is uniquely divisible, one has $\mathrm{Hom}(P', \mathbf{R}_+) \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Hom}(P, \mathbf{R}_+)$. Furthermore, since $P'^{gr} = P^{gr}$, one also has $\mathrm{Hom}(P', S^1) \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Hom}(P, S^1)$. By Example 2.5.1(i), one has $X'^{\log} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}$. ∎

For a log analytic space $X$, let $X^*$ denote the open subset at which the log structure is trivial. Then $(X^*)^{\log} = X^*$ and, therefore, there is a canonical open immersion $j^{\log} : X^* \hookrightarrow X^{\log}$ over the open immersion $j : X^* \hookrightarrow X$.

**Corollary 2.5.4.** *Let $X$ be a log smooth $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space. Then each point of $X^{\log}$ has a fundamental system of open neighborhoods $V$ such that $(j^{\log})^{-1}(V)$ is nonempty and contractible.*

*Proof.* If the log structure on $X$ is saturated, the statement is a result of Ogus ([Ogus03, 3.1.2]). If $X$ is arbitrary, let $X'$ be its normalization provided with the log structure as in Lemma 2.5.3. Then $X'^* \widetilde{\to} X^*$ and $X'^{\log} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}$, and the general case of the statement follows from the result of Ogus. □

*Proof.* The statement (iii) follows from (ii). It suffices therefore to prove the statements (i) and (ii) in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and this is assumed below.

By Corollary 2.5.4, there is a canonical isomorphism $\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}} \widetilde{\to} Rj^{\log}_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta})$ and, therefore, $Rj_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\tau'_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}})$. Since the map $\tau' : \mathbf{X}^{\log} \to \mathbf{X}$ is proper, we get the statement (ii).

One has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) = i^*(R\overline{j}_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}}}))$. Since $Rj^{\log}_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) = \Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}$, it follows that $R\overline{j^{\log}_*}(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_{\overline{\eta}}}) = \underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}}$ and, therefore, $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) = i^*(R\overline{\tau}'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}}))$. Furthermore, one has $R\overline{\tau}'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}}) \widetilde{\to} R\tau'_*(R\nu'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}}))$. Since the map $\tau'$ is proper, we get $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) = R\tau_*(i^{\log *}(R\nu'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}})))$. The map $\nu'$ is not proper, but it is a base change of the topological covering map $\overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}} \to \mathbf{D}^{\log}$ and, in particular, $\nu'$ and $\nu$ are also topological covering maps. It follows that $i^{\log *}(R\nu'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}}})) \widetilde{\to} R\nu_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}})$ and, therefore,

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\tau_*(R\nu_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}})) \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}}) \ .$$

This gives the second isomorphism for the functor $\Psi_\eta$. It follows also that in order to get the first isomorphism for $\Psi_\eta$, it suffices to show that, given a log smooth morphism $X \to \mathbf{pt}$, for any $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion free $\Pi$-module $\Lambda$ and any $q \geq 0$, the canonical map $R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}_X \to R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$ is an isomorphism. For this we can disregard the action of $\Pi$ on $\Lambda$ and even assume that it is trivial. The stalk of the sheaf on the left hand side at a point $x \in X$ is the inductive limit of the cohomology groups $H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U), \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \Lambda$ taken on the open neighborhoods $U$ of $x$, and that on the right hand side is the inductive limit of the groups $H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U), \Lambda)$. Since for sufficiently small $U$ the space $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U)$ is a connected topological manifold with boundary, it follows that $H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U), \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \Lambda \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U), \Lambda)$, and we get the required isomorphism for $\Psi_\eta$. □

**Corollary 2.5.5.** *In the situation of Theorem 2.5.2, there is a canonical isomorphism*

$$R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\mathcal{I}^{\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)}(R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\overline{\mathbf{X}^{\log}_s}})) \ . \qquad \square$$

## 3. Distinguished formal schemes

3.1. **Uniformization of special formal schemes.** Let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation. All formal schemes considered in this section are special formal schemes over $k^\circ$, all morphisms between them are assumed to be over $k^\circ$, and the étale topology on a special formal scheme is the Grothendieck topology which is generated in the usual way by the étale morphisms introduced in [Ber96b, §2].

Given an element $\gamma \in k^\circ\backslash\{0\}$ and integers $e_1, \ldots, e_m \geq 1$ with $m \geq 1$, we set

$$A^{(\gamma)}_{e_1,\ldots,e_m} = k^\circ[T_1, \ldots, T_m]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \gamma) \ .$$

**Definition 3.1.1.** (i) A scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of locally finite type and flat over $k^\circ$ is said to be *distinguished* (resp. *semistable*) if each point $x \in \mathcal{X}_s$ has an étale neighborhood $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$ that admits an étale morphism $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ with $A = A^{(\gamma)}_{e_1,\ldots,e_m}[T_{m+1}, \ldots, T_n]$ for $\gamma \in k^{\circ\circ}\backslash(k^{\circ\circ})^2$ (resp. $e_1 = \ldots = e_m = 1$).

(ii) A special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$ is said to be *distinguished* (resp. *semistable*) if étale locally it is isomorphic to a formal scheme of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is a distinguished (resp. semistable) scheme over $k^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ is a union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s$.

**Remarks 3.1.2.** (i) Every semistable scheme $\mathcal{X}$ over $k^\circ$ is normal, the generic fiber $\mathcal{X}_\eta$ is smooth over $k$, and the closed fiber $\mathcal{X}_s$ is a divisor with normal crossings. Every distinguished scheme $\mathcal{X}$ over $k^\circ$ is regular and, therefore, $\mathcal{X}_\eta$ is also regular. The support of the closed fiber $\mathcal{X}_s$ of any distinguished scheme $\mathcal{X}$ is a divisor with normal crossings and, if $\mathrm{char}(k) = 0$, $\mathcal{X}_\eta$ is smooth over $k$.

(ii) It follows from (i) that a distinguished (resp. semistable) formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is regular (resp. normal), and the generic fiber $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is regular (resp. rig-smooth). If $\mathrm{char}(k) = 0$, then generic fiber of any distinguished formal scheme is also rig-smooth.

For a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$, we denote by $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ the closed (formal) subscheme of $\mathfrak{X}$ defined by the ideal generated by $k^{\circ\circ}$. It is called the *special fiber of* $\mathfrak{X}$ . A *closed fiber of* $\mathfrak{X}$ is a scheme $\mathfrak{X}_s$ of locally finite type over $\widetilde{k}$ which is defined by an ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{X}$ that contains $k^{\circ\circ}$. It is also a closed fiber of $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ and, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is of locally finite type over $k^\circ$, then the supports of both coincide. (We will be interested only in the étale site of $\mathfrak{X}_s$ and, when $\widetilde{k} = \mathbf{C}$, in the underlying topological space of the complex analytification $\mathfrak{X}_s^h$, which do not depend on the choice of an ideal of definition.)

We say that a morphism $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ of special formal schemes over $k^\circ$ is *proper* if it is of finite type and the induced morphism between their closed fibers $\mathfrak{X}'_s \to \mathfrak{X}_s$ is proper. An example of a proper morphism is the blow-up of $\mathfrak{X}$ with center at a coherent subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{I} \subset \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$. It is a morphism of finite type $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} = \mathrm{Bl}_{\mathcal{I}}(\mathfrak{X}) \to \mathfrak{X}$ such that (1) $\mathcal{I}$ generates an invertible subsheaf of ideals of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}}$, and (2) every morphism of special formal schemes $\mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$, such that $\mathcal{I}$ generates an invertible subsheaf of ideals of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Z}}$, goes through a unique morphism $\mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{Y}$. In this case, the ideal $\mathcal{I}$ as well as the corresponding closed formal subscheme of $\mathfrak{X}$ are called centers of the blow-up. Recall the construction of blow-up (see [Tem08, §2.1]).

For every open affine subscheme $\mathfrak{U} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$ of $\mathfrak{X}$, the restriction of $\mathcal{I}$ to $\mathfrak{U}$ corresponds to an ideal $\mathbf{a} \subset A$. Let $\mathcal{V} = \mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathcal{U}) \to \mathcal{U}$ be the algebraic geometry blow-up of the scheme $\mathcal{U} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ with center $\mathbf{a}$. Then $\mathfrak{V} = \mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathfrak{U})$ is the formal completion of $\mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathcal{U})$ with respect to the ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{U}$. The blow-ups $\mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathfrak{U})$ are compatible on intersections of open affine subschemes of $\mathfrak{X}$, and so one can glue all of them, and in this way one gets the required blow-up $\mathrm{Bl}_{\mathcal{I}}(\mathfrak{X})$. For example, if $f_1, \ldots, f_n$ are fixed generators of the ideal $\mathbf{a}$, then $\mathcal{V} = \mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathcal{U})$ is obtained by gluing the affine schemes $\mathcal{V}^i = \mathrm{Spec}(A_i)$, $1 \le i \le n$, where $A_i$ is the quotient of by the $f_i$-torsion of

$$A'_i = A[T_1, \dots, T_{i-1}, T_{i+1}, \dots, T_n]/(f_iT_j - f_j)_{j \ne i}$$

and, therefore, $\mathrm{Bl}_{\mathbf{a}}(\mathfrak{U})$ is obtained by gluing the affine formal schemes $\mathfrak{V}^i = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{A}_i)$, $1 \le i \le n$, where $\widehat{A}_i$ is the quotient by the $f_i$-torsion of $\widehat{A}'_i$, the $k^{\circ\circ}$-adic completion of $A'_i$. Recall also that the composition of two blow-ups is a blow-up.

**Theorem 3.1.3.** *Suppose that* $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$*, and let* $\mathfrak{X}$ *be a quasicompact reduced special formal scheme flat over* $k^\circ$*. Then*

(i) *there exists a blow-up* $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ *which induces an isomorphism over the regular locus of* $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ *and such that* $\mathfrak{Y}$ *is distinguished over* $k^\circ$*;*

(ii) *if* $\mathfrak{X}$ *is distinguished, there exists an integer* $e \ge 1$ *such that the normalization* $\mathfrak{X}'$ *of* $\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{k^\circ}k'^\circ$*, where* $k' = k(\sqrt[e]{1}, \sqrt[e]{\varpi})$ *for a generator* $\varpi$ *of* $k^{\circ\circ}$*, is a semistable formal scheme over* $k'^\circ$*.*

**Proposition 3.1.4.** *Suppose that* $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$*. Then a special formal scheme* $\mathfrak{X}$ *flat over* $k^\circ$ *is distinguished if and only if it possesses the following properties:*

(1) $\mathfrak{X}$ *is regular;*

(2) *the support of* $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$ *is a divisor with normal crossings;*

(3) *the support of* $\mathfrak{X}_s$ *is a union of some of the irreducible components of* $\widetilde{\mathfrak{X}}$*.*

A closed (formal) subscheme $\mathfrak{Y}$ of a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is said to be a *divisor with normal crossings* if, for every open affine subscheme $\mathrm{Spf}(A)$ of $\mathfrak{X}$, the closed subscheme of $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ that is induced by $\mathfrak{Y}$ is a divisor with normal crossings. (The empty subscheme is considered as a divisor with normal crossings.) The property (3) has the similar meaning. Namely, for every open affine subscheme $\mathfrak{U} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$ of $\mathfrak{X}$, $\mathfrak{U}_s$ is a union of some of the irreducible components of the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(\widetilde{A})$, where $\widetilde{\mathfrak{U}} = \mathrm{Spf}(\widetilde{A})$.

*Proof.* The direct implication easily follows from the definition of a distinguished formal scheme. Suppose therefore that a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ possesses the properties (1)-(3). In order to show that $\mathfrak{X}$ is distinguished, we may assume that $\mathfrak{X} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$ is affine. We set $\mathcal{X} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$, $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}} = \mathrm{Spec}(A/I)$, where $I = \{a \in A \big| a^n \in k^{\circ\circ}A$ for some $n \ge 1\}$, and $\mathcal{X}_s = \mathrm{Spec}(A/J)$, where $J$ is the Jacobson radical of $A$. Since the required property is local in the étale topology, we may assume that $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ and $\mathcal{X}_s$ are divisors with strict normal crossings.

Let $\varpi$ be a generator of $k^{\circ\circ}$, let $\mathbf{x}$ be a closed point of $\mathcal{X}_s$, and let $\mathcal{Z}_1, \dots, \mathcal{Z}_n$ be the irreducible components of $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ that contain the point $\mathbf{x}$. One has $1 \le n \le d$, where $d$ is the dimension of $\mathcal{X}$. We assume that the irreducible components of $\mathcal{X}_s$ are $\mathcal{Z}_1, \dots, \mathcal{Z}_m$ with $1 \le m \le n$. Furthermore, let $t_1, \dots, t_d$ be a regular system of parameters of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X},\mathbf{y}}$ such that each $t_i$ for $1 \le i \le n$ defines $\mathcal{Z}_i$ in an open neighborhood of $\mathbf{x}$ in $\mathcal{X}$. Then $\varpi = t_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot t_n^{e_n} u$ for $e_1, \dots, e_n \ge 1$ and $u \in \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathcal{X},\mathbf{x}}$. Let $\mathcal{X}' = \mathrm{Spec}(A')$ be an open affine neighborhood of the point $\mathbf{x}$ in $\mathcal{X}$ such that $t_1, \dots, t_d \in A'$ and $u \in A'^*$. If $\mathbf{a}'$ is the ideal of $A'$ generated by the elements $\varpi$ and $t_1 \cdot \dots \cdot t_m$, then $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}' = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{A}')$, where $\widehat{A}'$ is the $\mathbf{a}'$-adic completion of $A'$. Since $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$, the special $k^\circ$-algebra $A'' = A'[\sqrt[e_1]{u}]$ is finite étale over $A'$, i.e., $\mathcal{X}'' = \mathrm{Spec}(A'') \to \mathcal{X}'$ is a finite étale morphism. We replace $t_1$ by the element $t_1 \cdot \sqrt[e_1]{u}$ of $B''$, and so we may assume that $\varpi = t_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot t_n^{e_n}$ in $A''$. If $\mathbf{a}''$ is the ideal of $A''$ generated by the elements $\varpi$ and $t_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot t_m$, then $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'' = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{A}'')$, where $\widehat{A}''$ is the $\mathbf{A}''$-adic completion of $A''$. Notice that the induced morphism $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'' \to \widehat{\mathcal{X}}'$ is also finite étale. Let $\mathbf{x}''$ be a preimage of the point $\mathbf{x}$ in $\mathcal{X}''_s$.

Let $B = k^\circ[T_1, \ldots, T_d]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_n^{e_n} - \varpi)$, and let $\widehat{B}$ be the $\mathbf{b}$-adic completion of $B$, where $\mathbf{b}$ is the ideal generated by the elements $\varpi$ and $T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m$. *We claim that one can replace $\mathcal{X}''$ by an open neighborhood of $\mathbf{x}''$ so that the morphism of special formal schemes $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'' \to \mathfrak{Y} = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{B})$, which is induced to the homomorphism $B \to A'' : T_i \mapsto t_i$, is étale.* Indeed, by [Ber15, Lemma 3.2.5], one can shrink $\mathcal{X}''$ so that the induced morphism $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}''_s \to \mathfrak{Y}_s = \mathrm{Spec}(\widetilde{k}[T_1, \ldots, T_d]/(T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m))$ is étale. By [Ber96b, 2.1(i)], there exists an étale morphism $\mathfrak{Z} = \mathrm{Spf}(C) \to \mathfrak{Y}$ with $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}''_s \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Z}_s$ over $\mathfrak{Y}_s$. Since $C$ is formally étale over $\widehat{B}$, the latter isomorphism is induced by a unique homomorphism $C \to \widehat{A}''$ over $\widehat{B}$ ([EGA$4_0$, 19.3.10]). From [Bou, Ch. III, §2, n° 11, Prop. 14] it follows that the homomorphism $C \to \widehat{A}''$ is surjective. Since both rings are regular of the same dimension, we get $C \widetilde{\to} \widehat{A}''$ and the claim follows. ☐

It is a minor consequence of the proof of Proposition 3.1.4 that, given a distinguished $\mathfrak{X}$, for any generator $\varpi$ of $k^{\circ\circ}$ one can always find étale morphisms as in Definition 3.1.1 with $\gamma = \varpi$.

*Proof of Theorem 3.1.3.* (i) First of all, we recall a result of de Jong. Let $\mathfrak{Y} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$ be a special affine formal scheme over $k^\circ$, and set $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$. By [deJ95, Lemma 7.1.9], the map $y \mapsto \mathbf{n}_y$ that takes a point $y \in \mathfrak{Y}_\eta$ with $[\mathcal{H}(y) : k] < \infty$ to the preimage of $\mathbf{m}_y$ under the canonical homomorphism $\mathcal{A} = A \otimes_{k^\circ} k \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, y}$ is a bijection between the set of such points $y$ and the set of maximal ideals of $\mathcal{A}$. Furthermore, this homomorphism induces an isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}_y \widetilde{\to} \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, y}$ between the $\mathbf{n}_y$-adic completion of $\mathcal{A}$ and the $\mathbf{m}_y$-adic completion of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, y}$. These facts imply that the regular locus of $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta$ coincides with the preimage of the regular locus of the affine scheme $\mathcal{Y}_\eta = \mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{A})$.

By Temkin's Theorem 1.1.13 from [Tem18], there exists a blow-up $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ with the following properties:

- (a) for any open affine formal subscheme $\mathrm{Spf}(A) \subset \mathfrak{X}$, the corresponding blow-up of the affine scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ is an isomorphism over its regular locus;
- (b) $\mathfrak{Y}$ possesses the property (1)-(3) of Proposition 3.1.4.

It follows that the special formal scheme $\mathfrak{Y}$ is distinguished and the induced morphism $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is an isomorphism over the regular locus of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$. This gives the statement (i).

(ii) Since $\mathfrak{X}$ is quasicompact, it has a finite étale covering by affine formal schemes that admit an étale morphism to an affine formal scheme of the form as in Definition 3.1.1. Let $e$ be a positive integer divisible by all of the numbers $e_i$'s that appear in the construction of those schemes, and let $k' = k(\sqrt[e]{1}, \sqrt[e]{\varpi})$ and $\mathfrak{X}'$ the normalization of the formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{k^\circ} k'^\circ$. Then the induced morphism of special formal schemes $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ is finite and, since $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is rig-smooth, it follows that $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}_\eta \widehat{\otimes}_k k'$. *We claim that the special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}'$ is semistable.*

Indeed, in order to prove the claim, we may replace $k$ by $k'$ and $\mathfrak{X}$ by $\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{k^\circ} k'^\circ$. Since the normalization commutes with completion and étale morphisms, it suffices to show that the normalization $\mathcal{X}' = \mathrm{Spec}(A')$ of the scheme $\mathcal{X} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ with

$A = k^\circ[T_1, \dots, T_d]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot T_n^{e_n} - \varpi^l)$ such that $k$ contains all $e$-th roots of one and $l$ is divisible by all of $e_i$'s is semistable over $k^\circ$.

We set $v = \text{g.c.d.}(e_1, \dots, e_n)$, $e'_i = \frac{e_i}{v}$, $l' = \frac{l}{v}$, denote by $t_i$ the image of $T_i$ in $A$, and set $t = t_1^{e'_1} \cdot \dots \cdot t_n^{e'_n}$. One has $t^v = (\varpi^{l'})^v$ and, therefore, $\left(\frac{t}{\varpi^{l'}}\right)^v = 1$. Let $A''$ be the subalgebra of $A'$ generated over $A$ by the element $\frac{t}{\varpi^{l'}}$. Then $\mathcal{X}'' = \text{Spec}(A'')$ is a disjoint union of the schemes $\mathcal{X}'_\zeta = \text{Spec}(A'_\zeta)$, where $\zeta$ is a $v$-th root of one and $A'_\zeta = k^\circ[T_1, \dots, T_d]/(T_1^{e'_1} \cdot \dots \cdot T_n^{e'_n} - \zeta\varpi^{l'})$. If $\zeta_1$ is an $l'$-root of $\zeta$, then $\zeta\varpi^{l'} = (\zeta_1\varpi)^{l'}$. Replacing $A$ by any of $A'_\zeta$'s, we reduce the situation to the case $v = 1$.

In the case $v = 1$, the group $M^{gr}$ of the monoid $M$ generated by the elements $t_1, \dots, t_n$ and $\varpi$ has no torsion, and $t_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot t_n^{e_n} = \varpi^l$. The algebra $A$ is the ring of polynomials $k^\circ[M][T_{n+1}, \dots, T_d]$ over the monoid algebra $k^\circ[M]$. Let $\overline{M}$ be the saturation of $M$ in $M^{gr}$, i.e., $\overline{M} = \{p \in M \big| p^k \in M \text{ for some } k \geq 1\}$.

**Lemma 3.1.5.** *There exist elements $s_1, \dots, s_n \in \overline{M}$ which together with the element $\varpi$ generate the monoid $\overline{M}$ and are such that $s_1 \cdot \dots \cdot s_n = \varpi^r$ for $r = \frac{l}{\text{l.c.m.}(e_1, \dots, e_n)}$.*

*Proof.* We set $m = \text{l.c.m.}(e_1, \dots, e_n)$ and $r = \frac{l}{m}$. If $q_i = \frac{m}{e_i}$, then $\text{g.c.d}(q_1, \dots, q_n) = 1$ and, therefore, $\text{g.c.d.}(\widehat{q}_1, \dots, \widehat{q}_n) = 1$, where $\widehat{q}_i = q_1 \cdot \dots \cdot q_{i-1} \cdot q_{i+1} \cdot \dots \cdot q_n$. Let $N$ be the submonoid of $M$ generated by the elements $t_1, \dots, t_n$ and $\varpi^r$, and consider the homomorphism $\alpha : N \to \mathbf{Z}_+^n$ to the additive monoid $\mathbf{Z}_+^n$ that takes $t_i$ to $q_i f_i$ and $\varpi^r$ to $\sum_{i=1}^n f_i$, where $f_1, \dots, f_n$ is the canonical basis of $\mathbf{Z}^n$. *We claim that $\alpha$ induces an isomorphism $N^{gr} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}^n$.*

Indeed, it suffices to show that the subgroup of $\mathbf{Z}^n$ generated by the vectors $\alpha(t_1), \dots, \alpha(t_n), \alpha(\varpi^r)$ coincides with the whole group. This subgroup contains the $n+1$ subgroups generated by $n$ of the above elements. We now notice that the index of the subgroup of $\mathbf{Z}^n$ generated by $n$ linearly independent vectors equals (up to a sign) to the determinant of the matrix formed by the coordinates of those vectors. In our case the determinants that correspond to those $n$ subgroups are $\widehat{q}_1, \dots, \widehat{q}_n, q_1 \cdot \dots \cdot q_n$, and the claim follows.

The claim implies that $\alpha$ induces an isomorphism of monoids $\overline{N} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}_+^n$, where $\overline{N}$ is the saturation of $N$ in $N^{gr}$. If $s_1, \dots, s_n$ are the preimages of the basis vectors $f_1, \dots, f_n$, we get $s_1 \cdot \dots \cdot s_n = \varpi^r$. □

The algebra $A'' = k'^\circ[\overline{M}][T_{n+1}, \dots, T_d]$ is integral over $A = k^\circ[M][T_{n+1}, \dots, T_d]$ and, therefore, it is embedded in $A'$. By Lemma 3.1.5, one has

$$A'' = k^\circ[S_1, \dots, S_n, T_{n+1}, \dots, T_d]/(S_1 \cdot \dots \cdot S_n - \varpi^r) \ .$$

Since $\text{Spec}(A'')$ is a semistable scheme over $k'^\circ$, it is normal. It follows that $A'' = A'$, and the required fact follows. □

Recall (see [Ber15, §3.3) that an augmented simplicial formal scheme $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ is said to be a *compact hypercovering of* $\mathfrak{X}$ if all of the morphisms $\mathfrak{Y}_n \to \mathfrak{X}$ are of finite type and the augmented $k$-analytic space $\mathfrak{Y}_{\bullet,\eta} \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is a compact hypercovering of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$. If in addition all of the morphisms $\mathfrak{Y}_n \to \mathfrak{X}$ are proper, it is called a *proper hypercovering of* $\mathfrak{X}$ . Furthermore, a hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ is said to be *distinguished* if all formal schemes $\mathfrak{Y}_n$ are distinguished.

**Corollary 3.1.6.** *If* $\text{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$*, every quasicompact special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $k^\circ$ admits a distinguished proper hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$.* □

**Remarks 3.1.7.** (i) In the construction of the functor $R\Psi^h_\eta$, we use a weaker fact that every special formal scheme over $k^\circ$ admits a distinguished compact hypercovering. Existence of such a hypercovering is proved in the same way but, instead of functorial desingularization from [Tem18], one can apply Temkin's result on desingularization from [Tem08] to affine schemes of the form $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ with an integral special $k^\circ$-algebra $A$.

(ii) In the situation of §2.2, assume that the scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ is flat over $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ and regular, and that the support of $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$ is a divisor with normal crossings and the support of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ is the union of some of the irreducible components of $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$. Proposition 3.1.4 then implies that the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ of $\mathcal{Y}$ along $\mathcal{Y}_s$ is a distinguished formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$.

(iii) Temkin's Theorem 1.1.8 from [Tem18] implies that, in the situation of Theorem 3.1.3, there exists a blow-up $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$, which induces an isomorphism over the regular locus of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$, and a finite extension $k'$ over $k$ such that the normalization $\mathfrak{Y}'$ of $\mathfrak{Y}\widehat{\otimes}_{k^\circ} k'^\circ$ is semistable and regular (i.e., for $\mathfrak{Y}'$ one always has $\gamma \in k'^{\circ\circ} \backslash (k'^{\circ\circ})^2$ *and* $e_1 = \ldots = e_m = 1$ in Definition 3.1.1).

3.2. **Log special formal schemes.** Basic notions of logarithmic geometry for schemes are naturally extended to special formal schemes. Namely, a *pre-log structure* on a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is a homomorphism of étale sheaves of monoids $\beta : M \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$. A pre-log structure is said to be a *log structure* if $\beta^{-1}(\mathcal{O}^*_{\mathfrak{X}}) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathfrak{X}}$. If $\beta : M \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ is a pre-log structure, there is a homomorphism $M \to M^a$ to a log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ such that any homomorphism $M \to N$ to a log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ goes through a unique homomorphism $M^a \to N$. If $\mathfrak{X}$ is provided with a log structure, it is said to be a *log special formal scheme*. For example, every special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ can be provided with the *trivial* log structure for which $M = \mathcal{O}^*_{\mathfrak{X}}$. If necessary, the underlying formal scheme of a log special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is sometimes denoted by $\mathring{\mathfrak{X}}$. Given a log special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$, any morphism of special formal schemes $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathring{\mathfrak{X}}$, gives rise to a homomorphism $\varphi^{-1}(M_{\mathfrak{X}}) \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}}$ from the inverse image of $M_{\mathfrak{X}}$. The sheaf of monoids for the corresponding log structure on $\mathfrak{Y}$ is denoted by $\varphi^*(M_{\mathfrak{X}})$.

A morphism of log special formal schemes $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ is a pair consisting of a morphism $\varphi : \mathring{\mathfrak{Y}} \to \mathring{\mathfrak{X}}$ and a homomorphisms of sheaves of monoids $\varphi^{-1}(M_{\mathfrak{X}}) \to M_{\mathfrak{Y}}$ which is compatible with the homomorphism $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}) \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}}$. It gives rise to a homomorphism of sheaves $\varphi^*(M_{\mathfrak{X}}) \to M_{\mathfrak{Y}}$. A morphism is called *strict* if the latter is an isomorphism, i.e., $\varphi^*(M_{\mathfrak{X}}) \widetilde{\to} M_{\mathfrak{Y}}$. The category of log special formal schemes admits finite inverse limits which are constructed in the same way as for schemes (see [Kato89, (1.6)]).

**Example 3.2.1.** Every special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ flat over $k^\circ$ (e.g., $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ)$) is provided with the following log structure, called *canonical*: for an étale morphism $\mathfrak{U} \to \mathfrak{X}$, $M(\mathfrak{U})$ consists of all elements of $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U})$ whose image in $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U}_\eta)$ is invertible. Notice that any morphism of special formal schemes is the underlying morphism of log special formal schemes provided with the canonical log structures.

A $k^\circ$*-log special formal scheme* is a log special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ which is flat over $k^\circ$ and provided with a morphism of log formal schemes $\mathfrak{X} \to \mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ)$ in which the log structure on $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ)$ is canonical. A $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is said to be *vertical* if the localization of $M_{\mathfrak{X}}$ with respect to $k^\circ \backslash \{0\}$ is a sheaf of groups.

For example, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is provided with the canonical log structure, it is a vertical $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme.

A $k^\circ$*-log scheme* is a log scheme $\mathcal{X}$ with $\mathring{\mathcal{X}}$ of locally finite type over $k^\circ$ provided with a morphism of log schemes $\mathcal{X} \to \mathrm{Spec}(k^\circ)$ in which the log structure on $\mathrm{Spec}(k^\circ)$ is canonical, i.e., defined by $k^\circ\backslash\{0\} \hookrightarrow k^\circ$. (A scheme of locally finite type over $k^\circ$ is a locally finite union of open affine subschemes $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ with finitely generated $k^\circ$-algebras $A$.)

If $\mathfrak{X}$ is a $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme, its closed fiber $\mathfrak{X}_s$ is provided with the log structure $i^*(M_{\mathfrak{X}})$, where $i$ is the closed immersion $\mathfrak{X}_s \to \mathfrak{X}$ (notice that $\mathfrak{X}_s$ can be considered as a special formal scheme over $k^\circ$). It is easy to see that this log structure on $\mathfrak{X}_s$ is the homomorphism $M_{\mathfrak{X}}/\mathcal{O}^1_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}_s}$, where $\mathcal{O}^1_{\mathfrak{X}}$ is the subsheaf of $\mathcal{O}^*_{\mathfrak{X}}$ consisting of the local sections which are congruent to 1 modulo the ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{X}$ that defines $\mathfrak{X}_s$. In particular, this defines a log structure on the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(\widetilde{k})$, which is the closed fiber of the formal scheme $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ)$. It is an algebraic log point associated to the field $k$, and it is denoted by $\mathrm{pt}_{k_1^\circ}$. Every generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $k^{\circ\circ}$ of $k^\circ$ gives rise to a chart $P \to M_{k_1^\circ} = M_{\mathrm{pt}_{k_1^\circ}} = k^\circ\backslash\{0\}/k^1$, where $P$ is a free monoid generated by $\varpi$ and $k^1 = \{a \in k \big| |a-1| < 1\}$. A $k_1^\circ$*-log scheme* is a scheme of locally finite type over $\widetilde{k}$ provided with a morphism to the log scheme $\mathrm{pt}_{k_1^\circ}$.

**Examples 3.2.2.** (i) Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a scheme of locally finite type over $k^\circ$. Then any log structure $\beta : M_{\mathcal{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}$ on $\mathcal{X}$ gives rise to a log structure $\widehat{\beta} : M_{\widehat{\mathcal{X}}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\widehat{\mathcal{X}}}$ on the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}$ of $\mathcal{X}$ along its closed fiber $\mathcal{X}_s = \mathcal{X} \otimes_{k^\circ} \widetilde{k}$, which is the inverse image of the log structure $\beta$ with respect to the canonical morphism of locally ringed spaces $\widehat{\mathcal{X}} \to \mathcal{X}$. Of course, of $\beta$ is $k^\circ$-log, then so is $\widehat{\beta}$. In this case, the canonical morphism of $k_1^\circ$-log schemes $(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})_s \to \mathcal{X}_s$ (which is the identity on the underlying schemes) is an isomorphism. If in addition, the restriction of $\beta$ to $\mathcal{X}_\eta$ is the trivial log structure, then $\widehat{\beta}$ is vertical over $k^\circ$.

(ii) Given a log (resp. $k^\circ$-log) special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$, the log structure $\beta : M_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ on $\mathfrak{X}$ gives rise to a log (resp. $k^\circ$-log) structure $\widehat{\beta}_{/\mathcal{Y}} : M_{\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}}}$ on the formal completion $\mathfrak{X}$ along a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathfrak{X}_s$, which is the inverse image of $\beta$ with respect to the morphism $\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathfrak{X}$. In particular, in the situation of (i), given a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$, the log (resp., $k^\circ$-log) structure $\beta$ gives rise to a log (resp. $k^\circ$-log) structure $\widehat{\beta}_{/\mathcal{Y}} : M_{\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}}$. If $\beta$ is $k^\circ$-log, then the $k_1^\circ$-log structure on $\mathfrak{X}_s = \mathcal{Y}$ is canonically isomorphic to the restriction of the $k_1^\circ$-log structure of $\mathcal{X}_s$ to $\mathcal{Y}$.

(iii) Let $(B,b) \to (\mathbb{F},0)$ be a morphism of $\mathbf{F}$-analytic germs, and let $\mathcal{Y}$ be a scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$. As in (i), any log structure $\beta : M_{\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y}}$ on $\mathcal{Y}$ gives rise to a log structure $\widehat{\beta} : M_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}}$ on the special formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ over $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ (see §2.2).

As for schemes, a log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ is said to be *coherent* if locally in the étale topology it is associated to a pre-log structure defined by a homomorphism $P_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ (called a *chart* of the log structure), where $P_{\mathfrak{X}}$ is the constant sheaf for a finitely generated monoid $P$. If such $P$ is integral, the log structure is said to be *fine* and if, in addition, $P$ is saturated, it is said to be *fine saturated* or, for brevity, *fs*. For example, the canonical log structure on $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ)$ is fs, and it is associated by the pre-log structure defined by a homomorphism $P \to k^\circ$, where $P$ is a free monoid generated by one element which maps to a generator of $k^{\circ\circ}$. If a log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ is associated to a chart $P_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$, then its inverse image on the closed fiber $\mathfrak{X}_s$ is associated to the induced chart $P_{\mathfrak{X}_s} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}_s}$.

The category of fine log special formal schemes admits finite inverse limits which are constructed in the same way as for schemes (see [Kato89, (2.8)]). For example, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is a fine $k^\circ$-log formal scheme and $k'$ is a finite extension of $k$, the formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{k^\circ}k'^\circ$, considered as the fiber product in the category of fine log special formal schemes, is a fine $k'^\circ$-log formal scheme.

In [Kato89, §3], Kato introduced the notion of a log smooth (resp. log étale) morphism between fine log schemes. He also proves that a morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{X}$ is log smooth if and only if locally in the étale topology there exist a chart $(P_{\mathcal{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}, Q_{\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{Y}}, P \to Q)$ of $\varphi$ such that the kernel and the torsion of the cokernel (resp. the kernel and the cokernel) of the homomorphism of groups $P^{gr} \to Q^{gr}$ are finite of orders invertible in $\mathcal{X}$ and the induced morphism of schemes $\mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{X} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}[P]} \mathbf{Z}[Q]$ is étale.

**Definition 3.2.3.** A $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is said to be *$k^\circ$-log smooth* (resp. *formally $k^\circ$-log smooth*) if locally in the étale topology $\mathfrak{X}$ it is isomorphic to the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}$ (resp. $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$) for a vertical log smooth morphism $\mathcal{X} \to \mathrm{Spec}(k^\circ)$ (resp. and a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$).

3.3. **Formal log smoothness of distinguished formal schemes.** Every scheme $\mathcal{X}$ flat over $k^\circ$ is provided with the following log structure called *canonical*: for an étale morphism $\mathcal{U} \to \mathcal{X}$, $M(\mathcal{U})$ consists of all elements of $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{U})$ whose image in $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{U}_\eta)$ is invertible. In the examples we really need, $\mathcal{X}$ is a noetherian excellent regular scheme in which the closed fiber $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ is a divisor with normal crossings. In this case the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{X}$ is fs. It is trivial outside $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ and, locally in the étale topology, it is associated with a chart $P_{\mathcal{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}$ for the monoid generated by the regular parameters at a point $x \in \widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ which define the irreducible components of $\widetilde{\mathcal{X}}$ passing through $x$.

In the situation of Example 3.2.2(ii), the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{X}$ defines a log structure on the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ along a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$ which maps in a natural way to the canonical log structure on the special formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ over $k^\circ$. Similarly, in the situation of Example 3.2.2(iii), the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{Y}$ defines a log structure on the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ which maps in a natural way to the canonical log structure on the special formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ over $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$.

For example, any semistable (resp. distinguished) scheme $\mathcal{X}$ over $k^\circ$ (resp. with $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$) provided with the canonical log structure is smooth (resp. log smooth) over $k^\circ$ and, therefore, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}$ (resp. $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$) provided with the log structure induced from $\mathcal{X}$ are $k^\circ$-log smooth (resp. formally $k^\circ$-log smooth).

**Theorem 3.3.1.** *Suppose that a scheme $\mathcal{X}$ admits an étale morphism $\mathcal{X} \to \mathcal{T}$, and either*

(1) $\mathcal{T} = \mathrm{Spec}(k^\circ[T_1, \dots, T_n]/(T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m - \varpi^l))$, $l \geq 1$, *or*
(2) $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$ *and* $\mathcal{T} = \mathrm{Spec}(k^\circ[T_1, \dots, T_n]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \varpi))$, $e_i \geq 1$,

*where $1 \leq m \leq n$ and $\varpi$ is a generator of $k^{\circ\circ}$. We set $\mathfrak{X} = \widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ for a closed subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$, and denote by $P$ the multiplicative submonoid of $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$ generated by the images of the coordinate functions $T_i$ for $1 \leq i \leq m$ and the element $\varpi$. Then* *the log structure associated to the chart $P_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ coincides with the canonical log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$.*

*Proof.* In the case (1), the above facts easily follow from results from [Ber99, §5], especially Theorem 5.3. Namely, we can shrink $\mathcal{X}$ so that the étale morphism $\mathcal{X} \to \mathcal{T}$ induces a homeomorphism of skeletons $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}) \widetilde{\to} S(\widehat{\mathcal{T}})$. The skeleton $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$ is a polytope, its intersection with $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is the complement of a union of proper faces of $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$ and, in particular, $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}) \cap \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ contains the interior of $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$. There is a retraction map $\tau : \widehat{\mathcal{X}}_\eta \to S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$ and, for $x \in S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$, the fiber $\tau^{-1}(x)$ is an affinoid domain with the maximal point $x$. If $x \in S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}) \cap \mathfrak{X}_\eta$, then $\tau^{-1}(x) \subset \mathfrak{X}_\eta$. It follows that, for every function $h \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)$ and every point $y \in \mathfrak{X}_\eta$, one has $|h(y)| \le |h(\tau(y))|$. If now $f$ is as above, then the restriction of the real valued function $x \mapsto |f(x)|$ to the interior of $S(\widehat{\mathcal{X}})$ is equal to the function $x \mapsto |g(x)|$ for some $g \in P$. This implies that $f = gu$ for $u \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)^*$ with the property $|u(y)| = 1$ for all $y \in \mathfrak{X}_\eta$. Since the ring $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$ is normal, a theorem of de Jong [deJ95, 7.4.1] implies that $u \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$. For the same reason, one has $u^{-1} \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$ and, therefore, $u \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})^*$.

In the case (2), let $v$ be the greatest common divisor of $e_1, \dots, e_m$. If $e_i = vq_i$, then the $k^\circ$-subalgebra of $\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{T})$ generated by the element $t_1^{q_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot t_m^{q_m}$ is the ring of integers $k'^\circ$ of the field $k' = k(\sqrt[v]{\varpi})$, i.e., $\mathcal{T}$ and $\mathcal{Y}$ can be considered as distinguished schemes over $k'^\circ$. This reduces the situation to the case $v = 1$.

Let $e$ be a positive integer divisible by all of the numbers $e_i$'s, $\mathcal{X}'$ the normalization of $\mathcal{Y} \otimes_{k^\circ} k'^\circ$, where $k' = k(\sqrt[e]{1}, \sqrt[e]{\varpi})$, $\mathcal{Y}'$ the preimage of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'_s$, $\mathfrak{X}' = \widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}$, $P'$ the submonoid of $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}')$ generated by the functions from $P$ and the element $\pi = \sqrt[e]{\varpi}$, and $\overline{P}'$ the saturation of $P'$ in $P'^{gr}$. By Theorem 3.1.3(ii) and the previous case, the formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}'$ is semistable over $k'^\circ$ and the lift of the function $f$ to $\mathfrak{X}'$ is of the form $gv$ with $g \in \overline{P}'$ and $v \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}')^*$. Notice that each element of $P'^{gr}$ has the form $h\pi^r$, where $h \in P$ and $r \in \mathbf{Z}$ and, therefore, $f = hu$, where $h \in P$ and $u = \pi^r v$. Since $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta$ is a finite Galois covering of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$, it follows that $u \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)^*$ and the function $x \mapsto |u(x)|$ on $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is a constant equal to $|\pi|^r$. *It suffices to show that the latter number belongs to* $|k^*|$, *i.e., $r$ is divisible by $e$.* Indeed, suppose this is true. Then replacing $h$ by $h\varpi^{\frac{r}{e}}$ and $u$ by $u\varpi^{-\frac{r}{e}}$, we may assume that $h \in P^{gr}$ and $u \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})^*$. Since the element $h$ belongs to $\overline{P}'$ and the monoid $P$ is saturated in $P^{gr}$, it follows that $h \in P$.

In order to verify the required fact, we may replace $\mathcal{Y}$ by any closed point $\mathbf{y}$ whose image in $\mathcal{T}_s$ is the point $\mathbf{t}$ at which all of the coordinate functions are zero. Replacing $k$ by a finite unramified extension, we may assume that the point $\mathbf{y}$ is $\widetilde{k}$-rational. Then $\mathfrak{X} = \widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\{\mathbf{y}\}} \widetilde{\to} \widehat{\mathcal{T}}_{/\{\mathbf{t}\}}$. We may therefore assume that $\mathcal{X} = \mathcal{T}$, and the generic fiber $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ has the following description. Let $Y$ be the closed analytic subspace of $\mathbf{A}^m$ defined by the equation $T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} = \varpi$, $\mathcal{V}$ the open subset $\{y \in Y \big| |T_i(y)| < 1 \text{ for all } 1 \le i \le m\}$, and $D$ the open unit polydisc with center at zero in $\mathbf{A}^{n-m}$. Then $\mathfrak{X}_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{V} \times D$. Notice that the zero of $D$ defines a closed immersion $\mathcal{V} \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta : x \mapsto (x, 0)$, and so it suffices to verify the necessary fact for the restriction of the function $u$ to $\mathcal{V}$ instead of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$.

The space $\mathcal{V}$ can be described as follows. Since the greatest common divisor of $e_1, \dots, e_m$ is one, we can find integers $l_1, \dots, l_m$ with $\sum_{i=1}^m e_i l_i = 1$. If $\mathcal{T}'$ is the torus in the $n$-dimensional affine space defined by the equation $T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} = 1$, then $\mathcal{T}'^{\mathrm{an}} \widetilde{\to} Y : x = (x_1, \dots, x_m) \mapsto (x_1 \varpi^{l_1}, \dots, x_m \varpi_m^{l_m})$. The preimage of $\mathcal{V}$ in $\mathcal{T}'^{\mathrm{an}}$ is the open subset $\mathcal{U} = \{x \in \mathcal{T}'^{\rm an} \big| |T_i(x)| < |\varpi|^{-l_i} \text{ for all } 1 \le i \le m\}$. The latter is the preimage of the open subset $U$ of the skeleton $S(\mathcal{T}')$, defined by the same inequalities in $S(\mathcal{T}')$, with respect to the retraction map $\tau : \mathcal{T}'^{\rm an} \to S(\mathcal{T}')$. The explicit description of analytic functions on $\tau^{-1}(U)$ in terms of convergent Laurent power series in $T_i$'s easily implies that, for every invertible analytic function $u$ on $\tau^{-1}(U)$ with constant absolute value $|u(x)|$, $|u(x)|$ is an element of $|k^*|$. $\square$

**Corollary 3.3.2.** *Any semistable (resp. distinguished) formal scheme over $k^\circ$ (resp. with $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$) provided with the canonical log structure is fs formally $k^\circ$-log smooth (resp. $k^\circ$-log smooth).* $\square$

**Corollary 3.3.3.** *In the situation of Remark 3.1.7(ii), the inverse image of the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{Y}$ coincides with the canonical log structure on the distinguished formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$ over $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$.* $\square$

## 4. The field $K$ and associated groupoids

4.1. **Groupoids $\pi(K)$, $\Pi(K)$, and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$.** In this section and till the end of the paper, the capital letter $K$ is used for a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation and such that $\mathbf{F} \subset K^\circ$ and $\mathbf{F} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{K}$. The calligraphic letter $\mathcal{K}$ is used for the fraction field of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$. We set $K_{\mathbf{C}} = K \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$ and $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathcal{K} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$. These are just the same fields $K$ and $\mathcal{K}$, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and are quadratic extensions of $K$ and $\mathcal{K}$, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, and constructions related to them depend on the original fields $K$ and $\mathcal{K}$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, we denote by $c$ the automorphisms of $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $K$ and $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $\mathcal{K}$. Each generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$ induces a homomorphism $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0} \to K^\circ$ that takes the coordinate function $z$ on $\mathbb{F}$ to $\varpi$. It gives rise to an isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0} \widetilde{\to} K^\circ$ and an embedding $\mathcal{K} \hookrightarrow K$ whose image is dense in $K$. The valuation on $K$ induces a valuation on $\mathcal{K}$, which does not depend on the element $\varpi$. For an element $\beta \in K^\circ$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ$), we denote by $\beta(0)$ the element of $\mathbf{F}$ with $\beta - \beta(0) \in K^{\circ\circ}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$).

For $r \ge 1$, we set $K^\circ_r = K^\circ/(K^{\circ\circ})^r$ . It is a finitely dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector space and, therefore, for any entire analytic function $f = \sum_{n=0}^\infty a_n z^n$ on $\mathbb{F}$, there is a well defined function $f : K^\circ_r \to K^\circ_r$. Since $K^\circ \widetilde{\to} \varprojlim K^\circ_r$, we can provide the $\mathbf{F}$-algebra $K^\circ$ with the topology of a projective limit of finitely dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces, and the same analytic function is well defined on $K^\circ$. Applying this to the exponential function $\exp(z) = \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{z^n}{n!}$, we get a well defined exponential function exp on $K^\circ$, which gives rise to an isomorphism $K^\circ \widetilde{\to} (K^\circ)^*$, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, and to an exact sequence $0 \to 2\pi i \mathbf{Z} \to K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \to (K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})^* \to 0$. In any case, it induces isomorphisms $\mathbf{R} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{R}^*_+$ and $K^{\circ\circ} \widetilde{\to} K^1 = \{u \in (K^\circ)^* \big| |u-1| < 1\}$. The inverse isomorphisms to the latter give rise to an isomorphism $\mathbf{R}^*_+ \cdot K^1 \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{R} + K^{\circ\circ} : v = au \mapsto \log(v) = \log|a| + \log(u)$.

We are now going to introduce groupoids $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\Pi(K)$ and $\pi(K)$ Objects of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ are generators of $K^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$. For $\varpi, \varpi' \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})}(\varpi, \varpi')$ is the set of transformations of $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ which are either of the form $\alpha \mapsto \alpha + \beta$ for $\beta \in K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ with $\exp(\beta) = \frac{\varpi}{\varpi'}$ (*$\beta$-morphisms of first type*), or of the form $\alpha \mapsto \overline{\alpha} + \beta$ for $\beta \in K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ with $\exp(\beta) = \frac{\overline{\varpi}}{\varpi'}$ (*$\beta$-morphisms of first type*). Composition of morphisms corresponds to composition of transformations. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, there are only morphisms of first type. Let $\Pi(K)$ be the full subcategory of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$, and let $\pi(K)$ be the non-full subcategory of $\Pi(K)$ with the same set of objects and the sets $\mathrm{Hom}_{\pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi')$ consisting of the $\beta$-morphisms of first type with $\beta\in K^\circ$. Notice that, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, the latter are one element sets and, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$, then $\pi(K)=\Pi(K)=\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$.

For example, the $2\pi i$-morphism of first type, denoted by $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$, generates the group $\mathbf{Z}(1)=2\pi i\mathbf{Z}$, which coincides with $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi)$, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$, and is a subgroup of index two in $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})}(\varpi,\varpi)$, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$. If in the latter case $\varpi\in\Pi(K)$ (i.e., $\varpi$ is a generator of $K^{\circ\circ}$), $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi)$ coincides with the semi-direct product $\mathbf{Z}(1)\rtimes\langle c^{(\varpi)}\rangle$, where $c^{(\varpi)}$ is the 0-morphism of second type. It is an involution acting as inversion on $\mathbf{Z}(1)$. Moreover, for any pair $\varpi,\varpi'\in\Pi(K)$, one has $\varphi\circ\sigma^{(\varpi)}=\sigma^{(\varpi')}\circ\varphi$ and $\varphi\circ c^{(\varpi)}=c^{(\varpi')}\circ\varphi$, where $\varphi$ is a morphism $\varpi\to\varpi'$ in $\pi(K)$. In this way, the groups $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi,\varpi)$ are identified for all $\varpi\in\Pi(K)$.

Applying the above construction to the field $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$, we get groupoids $\pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$, $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$ and $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$. Since the preimage of $(\mathcal{K}^\circ)^*$ under the exponential map on $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ$ lies in $\mathcal{K}^\circ$, one can define full subcategories $\pi(\mathcal{K})\subset\pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$, $\Pi(\mathcal{K})\subset\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$ and $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})\subset\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose objects are generators of the maximal ideal $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$ of $\mathcal{K}^\circ$ and $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$ of $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$, respectively, and there are natural functors $\pi(\mathcal{K})\to\Pi(\mathcal{K})\to\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$.

There is a faithful functor $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\to G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the following étale fundamental groupoid $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ of the field $K$. Given a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and an integer $n\ge1$, we set $K^{(\varpi),n}=K_{\mathbf{C}}[T]/(T^n-\varpi)$. It is a Galois extension of $K$ generated over $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ by the image of $T$, which is denoted by $\varpi_n$. For every integer $m\ge1$, there is a canonical embedding $K^{(\varpi),n}\hookrightarrow K^{(\varpi),mn}$ that takes $\varpi_n$ to $\varpi^m_{mn}$. The inductive limit $K^{(\varpi)}$ of the fields $K^{(\varpi),n}$ taken over those embeddings is an algebraic closure of $K.K^{(\varpi)}$ The objects of $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ are the fields $K^{(\varpi)}$ for generators $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the set of morphisms $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K_{\mathbf{C}})}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi')})$ is the profinite set of isomorphisms of fields $K^{(\varpi)}\widetilde{\to}K^{(\varpi')}$ over $K$. We also denote by $G(K)$ the full subcategory of $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose family of objects are the fields $K^{(\varpi)}$ for generators $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$. For example, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$, $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K)}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi)})$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(K^{(\varpi)}/K)$, which is canonically isomorphic to $\widehat{\mathbf{Z}}(1)=\varprojlim_n\mu_n$ and, if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(K)}(K^{(\varpi)},K^{(\varpi)})$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(K^{(\varpi)}/K)$, which is canonically isomorphic to the semi-direct product $\widehat{\mathbf{Z}}(1)\rtimes\langle c\rangle$. The functor $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\to G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ takes $\varpi\in\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the field $K^{(\varpi)}$, and it takes a $\beta$-morphism of first (resp. second) type $\varphi:\varpi\to\varpi'$ to the isomorphism $\varphi_{\overline{K}}:K^{(\varpi)}\widetilde{\to}K^{(\varpi')}$ over $K$ with $\varphi_{\overline{K}}(\varpi_n)=\exp(\frac{\beta}{n})\varpi'_n$ and which acts trivially (resp. as the complex conjugation) on $K_{\mathbf{C}}$. It gives rise to a functor $\Pi(K)\to G(K)$.

In the same way one defines étale fundamental groupoids $G(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $G(\mathcal{K})$ of $\mathcal{K}$ whose objects are algebraic closures $\mathcal{K}^{(\varpi)}$ of $\mathcal{K}$ for generators $\varpi$ of $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$, respectively. For example, if $z$ is the coordinate function on $\mathbb{F}$, there is a canonical isomorphism $\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}\widetilde{\to}\mathcal{K}^{(z)}$ that takes the function $b\mapsto e^{\frac{b}{n}}$ on $\mathbb{F}$ to the element $z_n\in\mathcal{K}^{(z)}$, where $\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}}$ is the algebraic closure of $\mathcal{K}$ introduced in §2.3. There are faithful functors $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})\to G(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(\mathcal{K})\to G(\mathcal{K})$.

In what follows, we will also use the following groupoid equivalent to the above ones. Let $\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ}$ (resp. $\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}$) be the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(K^\circ)$ (resp. $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$) provided with the canonical log structure. Generators of the maximal ideal of $K^\circ$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ$) can be viewed as elements of the monoid $M_{K^\circ}=M_{\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ}}=K^\circ\backslash\{0\}$ (resp. $M_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}=M_{\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}}=\mathcal{K}^\circ\backslash\{0\}$) whose image in the quotient $M_{K^\circ}/(K^\circ)^*$ (resp. $M_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}/(\mathcal{K}^\circ)^*$), which is a free monoid of rank one, is the generator of the latter. For $r\ge1$, we denote by $\mathrm{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$ (resp. $\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}_r^\circ}$) the scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(K_r^\circ)$ (resp. $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{K}_r^\circ)$) provided with the log structure which is induced from that on $\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ}$ (resp. $\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}$). Notice that $\mathcal{K}_r^\circ = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}_r^\circ$. The groupoids we are going to introduce are associated to the log scheme $\mathrm{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$ and denoted by $\pi(\mathcal{K}_r^\circ)$, $\Pi(K_r^\circ)$ and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$.

Objects of $\pi(\mathcal{K}_r^\circ)$ and $\Pi(K_r^\circ)$ are elements of the monoid $M_{K_r^\circ} = M_{\mathrm{pt}_{K_r^\circ}} = (K^\circ \backslash \{0\})/K^r$, where $K^r = \{\alpha \in K^\circ \big| \alpha - 1 \in (K^{\circ\circ})^r\}$, whose image in the quotient $M_{K_r^\circ}/(K_r^\circ)^*$ is the generator of the latter, and objects of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$ are similar elements of the monoid $M_{K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ}$. Morphisms in all three categories are defined in the same way as in the corresponding categories for $K$ but with elements $\beta$ from $K_r^\circ$ and $K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ$, respectively, and one can easily see that the canonical functors $\pi(K) \to \pi(K_r^\circ)$, $\Pi(K) \to \Pi(K_r^\circ)$ and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}}) \to \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$ are equivalences of categories. By the way, the image of an object $\varpi$ of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ in $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$ will be denoted in the same way by $\varpi$, but the image of the latter in $K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ$ will be denoted by $\widetilde{\varpi}$.

A groupoid $\mathcal{P}$ is called connected, if the set of morphisms between any two of its objects is nonempty. For example, all of the above groupoids are connected. All groupoids considered here are assumed to be connected (and small). A groupoid $\mathcal{P}$ is said to be *abelian* if the groups $G^{(P)} = \mathrm{Aut}(P)$ for $P \in \mathcal{P}$ are abelian. If $\mathcal{P}$ is abelian, then all of the groups $G^{(P)}$ are canonically isomorphic. For example, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, all of the considered groupoids are abelian. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the groupoids $\Pi(K)$ and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ are not abelian but, as was mentioned above, all of the groups $\mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi)$ for $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$ are canonically isomorphic.

A subgroupoid $\mathcal{P}'$ of $\mathcal{P}$ is said to be *invariant* if it has the same family of objects and, for some $P_0 \in \mathcal{P}$, $G'^{(P_0)}$ is an invariant subgroup of $G^{(P_0)}$. In this case, $G'^{(P)}$ is an invariant subgroup of $G^{(P)}$ for all $P \in \mathcal{P}$, and one can define a quotient groupoid $\mathcal{P}/\mathcal{P}'$ with the same family of objects and with the quotient set $\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathcal{P}}(P,Q)/G'^{(P)}$ as the set of morphisms from $P$ to $Q$. For example, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $K' = K_{\mathbf{C}}$, $\Pi(K')$ and $\Pi(K_r'^\circ)$ are invariant subgroupoids of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$, respectively, and there are equivalences of groupoids $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})/\Pi(K') \widetilde{\to} \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)/\Pi(K_r'^\circ) \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Gal}(K_{\mathbf{C}}/K)$.

4.2. **$\mathcal{P}$-spaces.** Let $\mathcal{P}$ be a groupoid. The category of *$\mathcal{P}$-spaces* is, by definition, the category of contravariant functors $\mathcal{P} \mapsto \mathcal{T}op : P \mapsto X^{(P)}$ to the category of topological spaces $\mathcal{T}op$. In the same way one defines $\mathcal{P}$-spaces in other geometric categories such as complex and non-Archimedean analytic spaces, schemes, formal schemes and so on. For a morphism $\varphi : P \to P'$, we denote by ${}^t\varphi$ the induced morphism $X^{(P')} \to X^{(P)}$. We say that a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is *single* if the corresponding functor takes each $P \in \mathcal{P}$ to the same space. We say that a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is *univocal* if, for any pair $P, P' \in \mathcal{P}$, it takes each morphism $P \to P'$ to the same map $X^{(P')} \to X^{(P)}$. If $X$ is single and univocal, it is called *strict*. We say that a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is *trivial* if it is strict and takes each morphism in $\mathcal{P}$ to the identity map.

Every $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is isomorphic to a single $\mathcal{P}$-space. Indeed, fix an object $P_0$ of $\mathcal{P}$ and, for every object $P \in \mathcal{P}$, fix a morphism $\alpha_P : P_0 \to P$ in $\mathcal{P}$. We define a single $\mathcal{P}$-space $Y$ as follows: it takes each $P$ to $X^{(P_0)}$ and each morphism $\varphi : P \to P'$ to ${}^t(\alpha_{P'}^{-1} \circ \varphi \circ \alpha_P) : X^{(P_0)} \to X^{(P_0)}$. The correspondence $P \mapsto {}^t(\alpha_P)$ defines an isomorphism $X \widetilde{\to} Y$. Notice that if the $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is univocal, the $\mathcal{P}$-space $Y$ is trivial, and it does not depend on $P_0$ up to a canonical isomorphism. Conversely, any $\mathcal{P}$-space, which is isomorphic to a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space, is univocal. Notice that, for any $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$, the $\mathcal{P}$-space $\mathcal{P}\backslash X$ formed by the quotient spaces $G^{(P)}\backslash X^{(P)}$ is univocal.

The following series of examples of $\mathcal{P}$-spaces for $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\Pi(K^{\circ}_{\mathbf{C},r})$, and $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, respectively, play an important role in the paper.

**Examples 4.2.1.** (i) Let $\mathbf{D}^*$ be the log pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space "$\varprojlim$"$D^*(0;p)$ from §2.5, where $D(0;p)$ is the open disc of radius $p > 0$ with center at zero. For $\varpi \in \Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$, take $D$ of sufficiently small radius so that $\varpi$ is convergent at $D$ and invertible at $D^*$, and define an étale universal covering $D^{(\varpi)}$ of $D^*$ by the cartesian diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbb{C} & \xrightarrow{b\mapsto e^b} & \mathbb{C}^* \\ \uparrow & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle\varpi} \\ D^{*(\varpi)} & \longrightarrow & D^*_{\mathbf{C}} \end{array}$$

A point of $D^{*(\varpi)}$ is a pair $(x,b) \in D^*_{\mathbf{C}} \times \mathbb{C}$ with $e^b = \varpi(x)$, and the $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $D^{*(\varpi)}$ defines a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)}$. Each morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ gives rise to a morphism ${}^t\varphi : \mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi')} \to \mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)}$ as follows. If $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of first type, then ${}^t\varphi$ is defined by the morphism $D^{*(\varpi')} \to D^{*(\varpi)} : (x,b) \mapsto (x, b + \beta(x))$ (for $D$ of sufficiently small radius). If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of second type, then ${}^t\varphi$ is defined by the morphism $D^{*(\varpi')} \to D^{*(\varpi)} : (x,b) \mapsto (\overline{x}, \overline{b} + \overline{\beta(x)})$. In this way we get a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*} : \varpi \mapsto \mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)}$. Suppose now that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$. Notice that the exponential function $\exp : \mathbb{C} \to \mathbb{C}^*$ commutes with the complex conjugation and, therefore, it induces an étale $\mathbf{R}$-analytic map $\exp : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}^*$ and is in fact a base change of the latter with respect to the canonical map $\rho : \mathbb{C}^* \to \mathbb{R}^*$. Thus, if $\varpi \in \pi(\mathcal{K})$, the above cartesian diagram is a similar base change of the cartesian diagram of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbb{R} & \xrightarrow{b\mapsto e^b} & \mathbb{R}^* \\ \uparrow & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle\varpi} \\ \underline{D}^{*(\varpi)} & \longrightarrow & D^* \end{array}$$

so that the complex analytic space $D^{*(\varpi)}$ is obtained by the extension of scalars from the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $\underline{D}^{*(\varpi)}$, i.e., $D^{*(\varpi)} = \underline{D}^{*(\varpi)}\widehat{\otimes}_{\mathbf{R}}\mathbf{C}$ and $\underline{D}^{*(\varpi)} = D^{*(\varpi)}/\langle c\rangle$. Any morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\pi(\mathcal{K})$ gives rise to a well defined morphism of $\mathbf{R}$-analytic spaces ${}^t\varphi : \underline{D}^{*(\varpi')} \to \underline{D}^{*(\varpi)}$ (for $D$ of sufficiently small radius).

(ii) Let $\mathbf{D}$ be the log pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space "$\varprojlim$"$D(0;p)$. As in (i), one can construct for each $\varpi \in \Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ an "étale universal coverings" $\mathbf{D}^{(\varpi)}$ of $\mathbf{D}^{\log}$. Namely, let $D = D(0,p)$ be of sufficiently small radius $p$ such that $\varpi$ is convergent at $D_{\mathbf{C}}$ and invertible at $D^*_{\mathbf{C}}$. Then $\varpi$ induces a map

$$D^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} = [0,p) \times S^1 \to \mathbb{C}^{\log} = \mathbf{R}_+ \times S^1 : (t,a) \mapsto \left( t|\gamma(ta)|, a\frac{\gamma(ta)}{|\gamma(ta)|} \right) ,$$

where $\gamma = \frac{\varpi}{z}$, and we define a topological space $D^{(\varpi)}$ by the cartesian diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}} & \longrightarrow & \mathbb{C}^{\log} \\ \uparrow & & \uparrow \\ D^{(\varpi)} & \longrightarrow & D^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \end{array}$$

A point of $D^{(\varpi)}$ is a pair $((t,a),(s,b)) \in D^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \times \overline{\mathbb{C}^{\log}}$ with $t|\gamma(ta)| = s$ and $a\frac{\gamma(ta)}{|\gamma(ta)|} = e^b$ (recall that $\mathbb{C}^{\log} = \mathbf{R}_+ \times i\mathbf{R}$), and $D^{(\varpi)}$ defines a pro-topological space $\mathbf{D}^{(\varpi)}$. A morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ gives rise to a morphism ${}^t\varphi : \mathbf{D}^{(\varpi')} \to \mathbf{D}^{(\varpi)}$ as follows. If $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of first type, then ${}^t\varphi$ is defined by the map

$$D^{(\varpi')} \to D^{(\varpi)} : ((t,a),(s,b)) \mapsto ((t,a),(se^{\mathrm{Re}(\beta(ta))}, b + \mathrm{Im}(\beta(ta))i)) \ .$$

If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of second type, then ${}^t\varphi$ is defined by the map

$$D^{(\varpi')} \to D^{(\varpi)} : ((t,a),(s,b)) \mapsto ((t,\overline{a}),(se^{\mathrm{Re}(\beta(ta))}, -b - \mathrm{Im}(\beta(ta))i)) \ .$$

In this way we get a pro-topological $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{\mathbf{D}} : \varpi \mapsto \mathbf{D}^{(\varpi)}$. Notice that the maps $D^{*(\varpi)} \to D^{(\varpi)} : (x,b) \mapsto ((|x|, \frac{x}{|x|}),(e^{\mathrm{Re}(b)}, \mathrm{Im}(b)i))$ define an open immersion of pro-topological $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $\overline{\mathbf{D}^*} \hookrightarrow \overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}}$.

(iii) Each fine vertical log germ of an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $(Y,X)$ over $(\mathbb{F},0)$ defines a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{Y(X)_{\overline{\eta}}} : \varpi \mapsto Y(X)^{(\varpi)}_{\eta} = Y(X)_\eta \times_{\mathbf{D}^*} \mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)}$ and a pro-topological $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{Y(X)^{\log}} : \varpi \mapsto Y(X)^{(\varpi)} = Y(X)^{\log} \times_{\mathbf{D}^{\log}} \mathbf{D}^{(\varpi)}$ .

**Examples 4.2.2.** (i) Given an integer $r \geq 1$, we set $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r} = (\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ_r})^h$ and $\mathbf{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ_r} = (\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ_r})^h$. Notice that the monoids of both $\mathrm{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$ and $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$ (resp. $\mathrm{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ_r}$ and $\mathbf{pt}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ_r}$) coincide. Each object $\varpi \in \Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ defines a homeomorphism $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}} \widetilde{\to} S^1$ which takes a point of $\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}}$, that corresponds to a homomorphism $h : M^{gr}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}} \to S^1$, to $h(\varpi)$. (That it is a homeomorphism follows from the fact that $h(a) = \frac{a}{|a|}$ for all $a \in \mathbf{C}^*$ and $h(u) = 1$ for all $u \in K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ with $u(0) = 1$.) We define a space $\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K^\circ_r}$ by the cartesian diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} i\mathbf{R} & \xrightarrow{b \mapsto e^b} & S^1 \\ \uparrow & & \uparrow \\ \mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K^\circ_r} & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}} \end{array}$$

A point of $\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K^\circ_r}$ is a pair $(h,b) \in \mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}} \times i\mathbf{R}$ with $h(\varpi) = e^b$. Each morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ gives rise to a morphism ${}^t\varphi : \mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi')}_{K^\circ_r} \to \mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K^\circ_r}$ as follows. If $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of first type, then ${}^t\varphi(h,b) = (h, b + \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i)$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varphi$ is a $\beta$-morphism of second type, then ${}^t\varphi(h,b) = (h^c, -b - \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i)$. Thus, the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K^\circ_r}$ is a $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-space over $\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_r}$, denoted by $\overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_r}}$, and there is a canonical isomorphism $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}) \backslash \overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_r}} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_r}$. Of course, there are canonical isomorphisms of topological $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r+1})$-spaces $\overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_{r+1}}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_r}}$. (In §10, these spaces will be endowed with non-isomorphic ringed structures.) Notice also that there is a canonical closed immersion of $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $\overline{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{\mathcal{K}^\circ_r}} \to \overline{\mathbf{D}^{\log}}$.

(ii) Let $X$ be a fine log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$. Then the correspondence

$$\overline{X^{\log}} : \varpi \mapsto X^{(\varpi)} = X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log} \times_{\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}}} \mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_{K_r^\circ} = X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log} \times_{S^1} i\mathbf{R}$$

is a $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-space. A point of $X^{(\varpi)}$ is a pair $((x,h_x),b) \in X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log} \times i\mathbf{R}$ with $h_x(\varpi) = e^b$. Each $\beta$-morphism of first type $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ gives rise to a map

$$X^{(\varpi')} \to X^{(\varpi)} : ((x,h_x),b) \mapsto ((x,h_x), b + \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i) \ .$$

If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ is a $\beta$-morphism of second type, ${}^t\varphi$ gives rise to a map

$$X^{(\varpi')} \to X^{(\varpi)} : ((x,h_x),b) \mapsto ((c(x), h^c_{c(x)}), -b - \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i) \ .$$

As at the end of (i), there is a canonical homeomorphism $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})\backslash\overline{X^{\log}} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}$. In what follows we consider $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$ as single $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-spaces on which morphisms of first type act trivially, and those of second type act as the complex conjugation.

(iii) Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a distinguished formal scheme over $K^\circ$. Recall that $\mathfrak{X}$ is a regular formal scheme. For an integer $r \geq 1$, let $\mathcal{J}_r$ be the ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{X}$ such that, for an open subset $\mathfrak{U} \subset \mathfrak{X}$, $\mathcal{J}_r(\mathfrak{U})$ consists of the element $f \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{U})$ with $\mathrm{ord}_Y(f) \geq r \cdot \mathrm{ord}_Y(\varpi)$ for every irreducible component $Y$ of the closed fiber of $\mathfrak{U}$, where $\mathrm{ord}_Y(f)$ is the order of $f$ at the generic point of $Y$. We denote by $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ the closed subscheme of $\mathfrak{X}$ defined by the ideal $\mathcal{J}_r$ and provided with the induced log structure. It is an fs log scheme of finite type over the log scheme $\mathrm{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$ and called the *r-th closed fiber* of $\mathfrak{X}$. The analytification $X = \mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$ of $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ is an fs log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$. As in (iii), one gets a $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-space $\overline{X^{\log}} : \varpi \mapsto X^{(\varpi)}$. Of course, all these $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-spaces (for different $r$'s) are canonically homeomorphic but in §10 they will be provided with an extra structure that depends on $r$.

**Example 4.2.3.** Given a $K$-analytic space $X$, the correspondence

$$\overline{X} : \varpi \mapsto X^{(\varpi)} = X \widehat{\otimes}_K \widehat{K^{(\varpi)}}$$

is $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space and, in particular, a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space.

4.3. **$\mathcal{P}$-sheaves, $\mathcal{P}$-modules and $\mathcal{P}$-cosheaves.** Let $\mathcal{P}$ be a groupoid, and let $X$ be a $\mathcal{P}$-space. A *$\mathcal{P}$-sheaf of sets on* $X$ is a family of sheaves $F^{(P)}$ on $X^{(P)}$ for $P \in \mathcal{P}$ provided with a system of isomorphisms $\varphi_F : ({}^t\varphi)^{-1}(F^{(P)}) \widetilde{\to} F^{(P')}$ such that $(\psi\varphi)_F = \psi_F \circ ({}^t\psi)^{-1}(\varphi_F)$ for all morphisms $\varphi : P \to P'$ and $\psi : P' \to P''$. (The same definition works of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves of rings, fields and so on.) The family of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves of sets on $X$ forms a category, which is denoted by $\mathbf{T}_{\mathcal{P}}(X)$. Given a morphism of $\mathcal{P}$-spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$ and $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves $E$ on $X$ and $F$ on $Y$, the correspondences $P \mapsto (\varphi^{(P)})^{-1}(E^{(P)})$ and $P \mapsto (\varphi^{(P)})_*(F^{(P)})$ are $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $Y$ and $X$, respectively. In the following subsection we show that $\mathbf{T}_{\mathcal{P}}(X)$ is equivalent to the category of sheaves on a site and, in particular, that it is a topos.

If $X$ is a one point space, then the corresponding category of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves is just the category of covariant functors from $\mathcal{P}$ to that of sets (resp. rings, fields and so on). Such an object is called a *$\mathcal{P}$-set* (a *$\mathcal{P}$-ring*, a *$\mathcal{P}$-field* and so on). If $W$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-ring, a *$W$-module* is a covariant functor that takes an object $P \in \mathcal{P}$ to an $W^{(P)}$-module $\Lambda^{(P)}$ and a morphism $\varphi : P \to P'$ to a homomorphism $\varphi_\Lambda : \Lambda^{(P)} \to \Lambda^{(P')}$ which is compatible with the homomorphism $\varphi_W : W^{(P)} \to W^{(P')}$. If $W = \mathbf{Z}$ considered as a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-ring, such an object is called a $\mathcal{P}$-*module*. The abelian category of $W$-modules is denoted by $W$-Mod, and its derived category is denoted by $D(W\text{-Mod})$. If $W = \mathbf{Z}$, they are denoted by $\mathcal{P}$-Mod and $D(\mathcal{P}\text{-Mod})$, respectively.

For example, for an étale locally constant sheaf $F$ on $\mathbf{D}^*$, the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto F(\mathbf{D}^{*(\varpi)})$ is a $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-set and, by Remark 1.5.1, this gives rise to an equivalence between the category of étale (resp. étale abelian) locally constant sheaves on $\mathbf{D}^*$ and the category of $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-sets (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-modules $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-Mod). For this reason the category of $\Pi(K)$-sets can be considered as a substitute of the category of étale locally constant sheaves on a non-existent geometric object for $K$ (like $\mathbf{D}$ for $\mathcal{K}$).

A $\mathcal{P}$-set is called *single*, *univocal*, *strict* or *trivial* if it possesses the properties from the corresponding definitions for $\mathcal{P}$-spaces. One shows in the same way that any $\mathcal{P}$-set (resp. univocal $\mathcal{P}$-set) is isomorphic to a single (resp. trivial) $\mathcal{P}$-set.

**Remarks 4.3.1.** (i) Every $\mathcal{P}$-set $\Lambda$ defines a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $\underline{\Lambda}_X$ on each $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$. Namely, for $P \in \mathcal{P}$, $\Lambda_X^{(P)}$ is the constant sheaf on $X^{(P)}$ associated to the set $\Lambda^{(P)}$ with the isomorphisms $\varphi_\Lambda$ (for morphisms $\varphi : P \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$) defined in the evident way.

(ii) Let $X$ be a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space. Then for every open subset $U \subset X$ (resp. a point $x \in X$), the set of sections $F(U)$ (resp. the stalk $F_x$) is a $\mathcal{P}$-set. Namely, it takes each object $P \in \mathcal{P}$ to the set $F^{(P)}(U)$ (resp. the stalk $F_x^{(P)}$) and each morphism $g : P \to P'$ to the map $g_F : F^{(P)}(U) \to F^{(P')}(U)$ (resp. $F_x^{(P)} \to F_x^{(P')}$). We denote by $F^{\mathcal{P}}$ the sheaf on $X$ whose set of sections over an open subset $U \subset X$ consists of families $(f^{(P)})_P$ of elements $f^{(P)} \in F^{(P)}(U)$ with $g_F(f^{(P)}) = f^{(P')}$ for all morphisms $g : P \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$. Notice that, for every $P \in \mathcal{P}$, the projection $(f^{(P)})_P \mapsto f^{(P)}$ gives rise to an isomorphism $F^{\mathcal{P}} \widetilde{\to} (F^{(P)})^{G^{(P)}}$. We will denote by $\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}} = \mathcal{I}_X^{\mathcal{P}}$ the left exact functor that takes a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $F$ to the sheaf $F^{\mathcal{P}}$.

(iii) Suppose that the action of an invariant subgroupoid $\mathcal{P}'$ of $\mathcal{P}$ on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is free (i.e., the action of $G'^{(P)}$ on each $X^{(P)}$ is free) and we are given an isomorphism of $\mathcal{P}/\mathcal{P}'$-spaces $\mathcal{P}'\backslash X \widetilde{\to} Y$. Let $\pi$ denote the map $X \to Y$. Then for any $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $A$ on $X$, $\pi_*(A)$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf on $Y$, and so there is a well defined $\mathcal{P}/\mathcal{P}'$-sheaf $\pi_*^{\mathcal{P}'}(A) = (\pi_*(A))^{\mathcal{P}'}$. Conversely, for a $\mathcal{P}/\mathcal{P}'$-sheaf $B$ on $Y$, $f^{-1}(B)$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf on $X$. It follows from [Gro57, §5.1] that $B \widetilde{\to} \pi_*^{\mathcal{P}'}(\pi^{-1}(B))$ and $\pi^{-1}(\pi_*^{\mathcal{P}'}(A)) \widetilde{\to} A$. This means that the correspondences $B \mapsto \pi^{-1}(B)$ and $A \mapsto \pi_*^{\mathcal{P}'}(A)$ are inverse to each other and establish an equivalence between the category of $\mathcal{P}/\mathcal{P}'$-sheaves on $Y$ and that of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $X$.

**Examples 4.3.2.** (i) In the situation of Example 4.2.1(iii), every $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-set $\Lambda$ defines an étale locally constant sheaf $\Lambda_{Y(X)_\eta}$, which is the pullback of the corresponding étale locally constant sheaf on $\mathbf{D}^*$. Its pullback to $Y(X)_{\overline{\eta}}$ is a locally constant $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $\underline{\Lambda}_{Y(X)_{\overline{\eta}}}$, and its pushforward with respect to the open immersion $Y(X)_{\overline{\eta}} \hookrightarrow \overline{Y(X)^{\log}}$ is a locally constant $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{Y(X)^{\log}}}$ on the $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{Y(X)^{\log}}$. By Remark 4.3.1(iii), the latter defines a locally constant sheaf $\Lambda_{Y(X)_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}}$ on $Y(X)_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$. (If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the latter is a $\langle c\rangle$-sheaf on a $\langle c\rangle$-space.)

(ii) In the situation of Example 4.2.2(ii), every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)$-set $\Lambda$ defines a $\Pi(K_r^\circ)$-sheaf $\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ on the $\Pi(K_r^\circ)$-space $\overline{X^{\log}}$. If $\nu$ denotes the map $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$, the latter sheaf gives rise to the locally constant sheaf $\Lambda_{X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}} = \nu_*^{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C},r}^\circ)}(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$. (If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the latter is a $\langle c\rangle$-sheaf on a $\langle c\rangle$-space.) Notice that, if $\Lambda$ is trivial as a

$\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-set, the sheaf $\Lambda_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ coincides with $\underline{\Lambda}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$. In general, they are different objects.

(iii) We consider the field $\mathbf{C}$ as a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-field on which morphisms of first type act trivially and those of second type act as the complex conjugation. This induces the structure of a single $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $\mathbf{C}$ itself and the subgroups $\mathbf{Z}(q) = (2\pi i)^q\mathbf{Z}$ (with $q \in \mathbf{Z}$), $i\mathbf{R}$ of $\mathbf{C}$, and $S^1 = \{a \in \mathbf{C}^* \big| |a| = 1\}$ of $\mathbf{C}^*$. As in Remark 4.3.1(i), the corresponding $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X$ are denoted by $\underline{\mathbf{C}}_X$, $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}(q)_X$, and $\underline{S}^1_X$. Of course, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, these are just constant sheaves associated to $\mathbf{C}$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the $\langle c \rangle$-sheaf $\underline{\mathbf{C}}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ on the $\langle c \rangle$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ defines the étale sheaf of constant analytic functions $\mathfrak{c}_X$ on $X$, introduced in §1.2. All this is also applied to the groupoids $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$.

If $W$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-ring, its inverse image $W_X$ on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-ring on $X$, and sheaves of left modules over the latter are said to be *sheaves of $W$-modules on $X$*, or just *$W$-modules on $X$*. An object of the derived category of abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves on $X$ will be said to be a $W$-module, if it is provided with a homomorphism from $W$ to the $\mathcal{P}$-ring of endomorphism ring of the object. For example, any complex of sheaves of $W$-modules $E^\cdot$ on $X$ is a $W$-module in the derived category of $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves. Furthermore, any quasi-isomorphism of complexes of abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves $E^\cdot \to F^\cdot$ (from the above $E^\cdot$) provides $F^\cdot$ with the structure of a $W$-module in the derived category of abelian $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves.

**Examples 4.3.3.** (i) The field $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$) can be considered as a strict $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-field (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-field). Namely, for every $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$) each element of $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$) has a unique representation in the form $f(\varpi)$ for $f = \sum_n a_n T^n \in \mathbf{C}((T))$ (resp. $f = \sum_n a_n z^n \in \mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$). One associates to a morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ of first type the automorphism $f(\varpi) \mapsto f(\varpi')$. Furthermore, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, one sets for $f$ as above $\overline{f} = \sum_n \overline{a}_n T^n$ (resp. $\overline{f} = \sum_n \overline{a}_n z^n$), and one associates to a morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ of second type the automorphism $f(\varpi) \mapsto \overline{f}(\varpi')$. In the same way one provides the ring of integers $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$) and its quotients $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$), $r \geq 1$, with the structure of a strict $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$- and $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-ring (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$- and $\Pi(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-ring). Since $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r} = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$, $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ is also a $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring. Notice that $\mathbf{C}$ and $\mathbf{Z}(q)$ are $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-submodules of $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ as well as $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-submodules of $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ (see Example 4.3.2(iii)).

(ii) Let $W(K)$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K})$) be the algebra of $\mathbf{F}$-linear endomorphisms of $K$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}$) generated by multiplications by elements of $K$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}$) and derivations $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ for generators $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$). If $\varpi$ is a fixed generator, each element of $W(K)$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K})$) has a unique representation in the form $g_n\frac{\partial^n}{\partial\varpi^n} + g_{n-1}\frac{\partial^{n-1}}{\partial\varpi^{n-1}} + \ldots + g_1\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi} + g_0$ with $n \geq 0$ and $g_i \in K$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}$). Then $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$) can be considered as a strict $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring). Namely, one associates to a morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ the automorphism of $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$) that acts on $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ as in (i) and takes $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ to $\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi'}$. Notice that $K_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}$) is a $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-module).

(iii) For a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ}$), let $\delta_\varpi$ denote the derivation $\varpi\frac{\partial}{\partial\varpi}$ on $K$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}$). Then $\delta_\varpi(\varpi^j) = j\varpi^j$ for all $j \geq 0$ and $\delta_\varpi = (1 + \frac{\delta_\varpi(\alpha)}{\alpha})\delta_{\varpi'}$ for $\alpha = \frac{\varpi'}{\varpi}$. In particular, $\delta_\varpi$ preserves the subring $K^\circ$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ$) and all of its ideals. We denote by $W(K^\circ)$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$) the $K^\circ$-subalgebra of $W(K)$ (resp. the $\mathcal{K}^\circ$-subalgebra of $W(\mathcal{K})$) generated by all of the operators $\delta_\varpi$. This algebra is isomorphic to the algebra of noncommutative polynomials over $K^\circ$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ$) in one variable $\delta_\varpi$ and the relations $\delta_\varpi \cdot g - g \cdot \delta_\varpi = \delta_\varpi(g)$ for $g \in K^\circ$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ$). The subalgebra $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ of $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ of $W(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$) is preserved by the automorphisms induced by morphisms in $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$), and so it can be considered as a strict $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring). Notice that $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$) is a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module).

(iv) For $r \geq 1$, let $W(K^\circ_r)$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_r)$) be the quotient of $W(K^\circ)$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$) by the ideal generated by $(K^{\circ\circ})^r$ (resp. $(\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ})^r$). This algebra is isomorphic to the algebra of noncommutative polynomials over $K^\circ_r$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ_r$) in one variable $\delta_\varpi$ and the relation $\delta_\varpi \cdot \widetilde{\varpi} - \widetilde{\varpi} \cdot \delta_\varpi = \widetilde{\varpi}$. If $r = 1$, the algebra $W_{K^\circ_1}$ is in fact commutative, and all of the elements $\delta_\varpi$ are equal. As in (iii), one provides $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$) with the structure of a strict $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-ring (resp. $\Pi(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-ring). Since $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r} = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$, one has $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}) = W(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$. Notice that $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ (resp. $\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$) is a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module). Notice also that any $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module) can be also considered as a $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module (resp. $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$-module).

Recall that a precosheaf of sets on a topological space $X$ is a covariant functor $U \mapsto \Upsilon(U)$ from the category of open subsets of $X$ to that of sets. A precosheaf is called a cosheaf if $\Upsilon(\emptyset) = \emptyset$ and, for any open covering $\mathcal{U} = \{U_i\}_{i \in I}$ of an open subset $U \subset X$, one has $\Upsilon(\mathcal{U}) \widetilde{\to} \Upsilon(U)$, where $\Upsilon(\mathcal{U})$ is the set of equivalence classes on $\coprod_{i \in I} \Upsilon(U_i)$ with respect to the equivalence relation induced by the two canonical maps to it from the set $\coprod_{i,j \in I} \Upsilon(U_i \cap U_j)$. For example, given a continuous map of locally connected topological spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$, the correspondence $U \mapsto \pi_0(\varphi^{-1}(U))$ is a cosheaf of sets.

A $\mathcal{P}$-*cosheaf* of sets on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$ is a family of cosheaves $\Upsilon^{(P)}$ on $X^{(P)}$ for $P \in \mathcal{P}$ provided with a compatible system of bijections $\Upsilon^{(P')}(({}^t\varphi)^{-1}(U)) \widetilde{\to} \Upsilon^{(P)}(U)$ for all morphisms $\varphi : P \to P'$ and all open subsets $U \subset X^{(P)}$. Given a $\mathcal{P}$-cosheaf $\Upsilon$ on $X$, for any $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $F$ on $X$ the correspondence $U \mapsto F^\Upsilon(U)$ that takes an open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$ to the set of maps $\Upsilon^{(P)}(U) \to F^{(P)}(U)$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf on $X$, denoted by $F^\Upsilon$.

**Example 4.3.4.** For a fine log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$ over $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$, let $\tau$ and $\overline{\tau}$ denote the maps $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$, respectively. The correspondence $U \mapsto \pi_0(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U))$ is a $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-cosheaf on the strict $\Pi(K^\circ_r)$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, denoted by $\overline{\pi}_{0,X}$. If $\Lambda$ is a $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module, there is a canonical isomorphism of $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules $\underline{\Lambda}^{\overline{\pi}_{0,X}}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$. More generally, for any locally constant abelian $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-sheaf $F$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, there is a canonical isomorphism of $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules $F^{\overline{\pi}_{0,X}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(F))$. In §5, the cosheaf $\overline{\pi}_{0,X}$ will be described for a class of log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces in terms of their logarithmic structure.

**Remark 4.3.5.** Suppose $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$. Let $X$ be an $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space, and let $L$ be an $\Pi(K)$-sheaf on the $\mathbf{C}$-analytic $\Pi(K)$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. Then for each $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$ the sheaf $L^{(\varpi)}$ together with the automorphism $c^{(\varpi)}$, which is compatible with the complex conjugation on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, gives rise to an étale sheaf $\widetilde{L}^{(\varpi)}$ on $X$ with $\widetilde{L}^{(\varpi)}\big|_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} = L^{(\varpi)}$, and the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \widetilde{L}^{(\varpi)}$ defines an étale $\pi(K)$-sheaf on $X$. For example, if $X = \mathbb{F}^0$, this implies that every $\Pi(K)$-set $\Lambda$ defines a $\pi(K)$-set $\widetilde{\Lambda}$ with $\widetilde{\Lambda}^{(\varpi)} = (\Lambda^{(\varpi)})^{\langle c^{(\varpi)} \rangle}$ for $\varpi \in \pi(K)$.

4.4. **The category $\mathbf{T}_{\mathcal{P}}(X)$ as a topos.** Let $X(\mathcal{P})$ denote a pair consisting of a groupoid $\mathcal{P}$ and a $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$. If $\mathcal{P}$ is the trivial groupoid, then a $\mathcal{P}$-space is just a topological space. The pairs $X(\mathcal{P})$ form a category in which a morphism $\overline{\varphi} : X'(\mathcal{P}') \to X(\mathcal{P})$ consists of a functor $\nu_\varphi : \mathcal{P}' \to \mathcal{P}$ and a functor morphism $\varphi : X' \to X \circ \nu_\varphi$. The latter is a compatible family of continuous maps $\varphi_{P'} : X'^{(P')} \to X^{(\nu_\varphi P')}$ for all $P' \in \mathcal{P}'$. If $\mathcal{P}'$ is a subcategory of $\mathcal{P}$ and $\nu_\varphi$ is the canonical embedding, such a morphism is said to be a $\mathcal{P}'$-morphism.

Let $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ denote the category of $\mathcal{P}$-morphisms $U(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})$ such that all of the underlying maps $U^{(P)} \to X^{(P)}$ are local homeomorphisms. We denote by $X(\mathcal{P})_{\acute{e}t}$ the Grothendieck topology on $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ generated by the pretopology for which the set of coverings of $(U(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})) \in \acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ consists of the families $\{U_i(\mathcal{P}) \stackrel{\overline{f}_i}{\to} U(\mathcal{P})\}_{i\in I}$ with $\bigcup_{i\in I} f_{i,P}(U_i^{(P)}) = U^{(P)}$ for all $P \in \mathcal{P}$, and we denote by $X(\mathcal{P})_{\widetilde{\acute{e}t}}$ the category of sheaves on $X(\mathcal{P})_{\acute{e}t}$ (the étale topos of $X(\mathcal{P})$). For example, $X_{\widetilde{\acute{e}t}}$ is the category of sheaves on the topological space $X$.

For a $\mathcal{P}$ space, we denote by $X^{(\mathcal{P})}$ the topological space $\coprod_{P\in\mathcal{P}} X^{(P)}$. Every $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $F$ can be considered as a sheaf on $X^{(\mathcal{P})}$. On the other hand, if $(U(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})) \in \acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$, then $(U^{(\mathcal{P})} \to X^{(\mathcal{P})}) \in \acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X^{(\mathcal{P})})$ and a covering in $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ gives rise to a covering in $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X^{(\mathcal{P})})$. This means that there is a morphism of sites $b : X^{(\mathcal{P})}_{\acute{e}t} \to X(\mathcal{P})_{\acute{e}t}$.

**Proposition 4.4.1.** *The inverse image functor for the morphism of sites* $b : X^{(\mathcal{P})}_{\acute{e}t} \to X(\mathcal{P})_{\acute{e}t}$ *gives rise to an equivalence of categories* $X(\mathcal{P})_{\widetilde{\acute{e}t}} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{T}_{\mathcal{P}}(X)$.

*Proof.* Step 1. For $P \in \mathcal{P}$ and an open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$, we introduce as follows a $\mathcal{P}$-space $\widetilde{U}$. It takes $P' \in \mathcal{P}$ to $\widetilde{U}^{(P')} = \coprod {}^t g(U)$, where the disjoint union is taken over all morphisms $g : P' \to P$. For a morphism $h : P'' \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$. For a morphism $h : P'' \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$, the induced map ${}^t h : X^{(P')} \to X^{(P'')}$ takes ${}^t g(U)$ to ${}^t h({}^t g(U)) = {}^t(gh)(U)$ and, therefore, it induces a map $\widetilde{U}^{(P')} \to \widetilde{U}^{(P'')}$, i.e., $\widetilde{U}$ is a $\mathcal{P}$-space. The identity morphism $P \to P$ defines a map $U \to \widetilde{U}^{(P)}$ which possesses the following universal property: any continuous map $U \to V$ to a $\mathcal{P}$-space $V$ extends in a unique way to a morphism $\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P}) \to V(\mathcal{P})$. Notice that, by the construction, the induced morphism $\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})$ is a morphism in the category $\acute{\mathrm{E}}\mathrm{t}(X(\mathcal{P}))$.

Step 2. For a sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ on $X(\mathcal{P})$ and an open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$ for $P \in \mathcal{P}$, we set $F^{(P)}(U) = \mathcal{F}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P}))$. By universality of $\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})$, the sheaf $(b^*\mathcal{F})\big|_{X^{(P)}}$ is associated to the presheaf $U \mapsto F^{(P)}(U)$. *We claim that* $F^{(P)} \widetilde{\to} (b^*\mathcal{F})\big|_{X^{(P)}}$. Indeed, for this it suffices to verify that, given an open covering $\{U_i\}_{i\in I}$ of $U$, one has

$$F^{(P)}(U) \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Ker}(\prod_i F^{(P)}(U_i) \stackrel{\to}{\to} \prod_{i,j} F^{(P)}(U_i \cap U_j)) \ .$$

But this follows from the easy facts that $\{\widetilde{U}_i(\mathcal{P})\}_{i\in I}$ is a covering of $\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})$ in $X(\mathcal{P})_{\acute{e}t}$ and that $(\widetilde{U_i \cap U_j})^{(P)} = \widetilde{U}_i^{(P)} \cap \widetilde{U}_j^{(P)}$ in $\widetilde{U}^{(P)}$ for all $i, j \in I$ and $P \in \mathcal{P}$.

Step 3. *We claim that the correspondence* $P \mapsto F^{(P)}$ *is a* $\mathcal{P}$*-sheaf on* $X$. (It will be denoted by $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}$.) Indeed, for a morphism $g : P' \to P$ and an open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$, the composition of the map $({}^t g)^{-1} : {}^t g(U) \widetilde{\to} U$ with the map $U \to \widetilde{U}$ is induced by a morphism $(\widetilde{{}^t g U})(\mathcal{P}) \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})$. We get a map

$$F^{(P')}({}^t g U) = \mathcal{F}((\widetilde{{}^t g U})(\mathcal{P})) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{F}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})) = F^{(P)}(U) \ .$$

This defines an isomorphism of sheaves $g_F : ({}^t g)^{-1}(F^{(P')})\widetilde{\to}F^{(P)}$, and the isomorphisms defined in this way possess the required properties.

Step 4. Let $F$ be a $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf on $X$. For $(V(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})) \in \text{Ét}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ one has $b_* F(V(\mathcal{P})) = F(V^{(\mathcal{P})})$. An element of the latter is a collection of sections $f_P \in F^{(P)}(V^{(P)})$ for $P \in \mathcal{P}$. We define a sheaf $\overline{F}$ on $X(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}}$ by

$$\overline{F}(V(\mathcal{P})) = \{(f_P)_{P\in\mathcal{P}} \in F(V^{(\mathcal{P})}) \big| g_F(f_{P'}) = f_P \text{ for all } g : P' \to P \ \text{ in } \mathcal{P}\} \ .$$

*We claim that* $\widetilde{\overline{F}}\widetilde{\to}F$. Indeed, if $U$ is an open subset of $X^{(P)}$ for some $P \in \mathcal{P}$, we have $\widetilde{\overline{F}}^{(P)}(U) = \overline{F}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P}))$. An element of the latter is a collection of sections $f_{P'} \in F^{(P')}(\widetilde{U}^{(P')})$ for $P' \in \mathcal{P}$ with the property that $h_F(f_{P''}) = f_{P'}$ for all morphisms $h : P'' \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$. Since $\widetilde{U}^{(P')} = \coprod {}^t g(U)$, where the disjoint union is taken over all morphisms $g : P' \to P$, the section $f_{P'}$ is a collection of elements $f_{P',g} \in F^{(P')}({}^t gU)$ for $g \in \text{Hom}(P', P)$. The above condition implies that $h_F(f_{P'',gh}) = f_{P',g}$ for all morphisms $h : P'' \to P'$ in $\mathcal{P}$. This implies that the sections $f_{P'}$ are completely determined by the element $f_{P,\text{Id}_P} \in F(U)$ and, therefore, $\overline{F}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})) = F(U)$.

Step 5. *For* $\mathcal{F} \in X(\mathcal{P})^{\sim}_{\text{ét}}$, *one has* $\mathcal{F}\widetilde{\to}\overline{\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}}$. Indeed, each object of $\text{Ét}(X(\mathcal{P}))$ can be covered by objects of the form $\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})$ for an open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$ with $P \in \mathcal{P}$, and we have

$$\mathcal{F}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})) = \widetilde{\mathcal{F}}^{(P)}(U) = \overline{\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}}(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})) \ . \qquad \square$$

In what folows, Proposition 4.4.1 is used in order to apply usual sheaf constructions to $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves.

Suppose we are given a $\mathcal{P}$-morphism $X'(\mathcal{P}) \to X(\mathcal{P})$. It gives rise to a commutative diagram of morphisms of sites

$$\begin{array}{ccc} X'(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}} & \xrightarrow{\overline{\varphi}} & X(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}} \\ \uparrow{\scriptstyle b'} & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle b} \\ X'^{(\mathcal{P})}_{\text{ét}} & \xrightarrow{\varphi} & X^{(\mathcal{P})}_{\text{ét}} \end{array}$$

Furthermore, let $W$ be a $\mathcal{P}$-ring. For an $W$-modules $F$ on $X'$, let $R\overline{\varphi}_*(F)$ be the higher direct image of $F$ in the derived category of $W$-modules on $X$.

**Corollary 4.4.2.** *In the above situation, for any $W$-module $F$ on $X'$ there is a canonical isomorphism in the derived category of abelian sheaves on* $X^{(\mathcal{P})}$

$$b^*(R\overline{\varphi}_* F)\widetilde{\to}R\varphi_*(b'^* F) \ .$$

*Proof.* It suffices to verify that $b^*(R^q\overline{\varphi}_* F)\widetilde{\to}R^q\varphi_*(b'^* F)$ for all $q \geq 0$. If $q = 0$, for every open subset $U \subset X^{(P)}$, $P \in \mathcal{P}$, one has

$$(b^*\overline{\varphi}_* F)(U) = \overline{\varphi}_* F(\widetilde{U}(\mathcal{P})) = F((X' \times_X \widetilde{U})(\mathcal{P}))$$

Since $X' \times_X \widetilde{U} = \widetilde{U}'$, where $U' = X'^{(P)} \times_{X^{(P)}} U$, the latter coincides with

$$F(\widetilde{U}'(\mathcal{P})) = (b'^* F)(U') = (\varphi_* b'^* F)(U) \ .$$

Thus, it remains to show that every $W$-module $F$ on $X'$ can be embedded in a $W$-module $F'$ on $X'$ with $R^q\overline{\varphi}_*(F') = 0$ and $R^q\varphi_*(b'^* F') = 0$ for all $q \geq 1$. For this we notice that the family of morphisms $x^{\sim}_{\text{ét}} \to X'(\mathcal{P})^{\sim}_{\text{ét}}$ for points $x \in X'^{(\mathcal{P})}$ is a conservative family of points of the topos $X'(\mathcal{P})^{\sim}_{\text{ét}}$. This means that, if $X'^d$

is the space $X'^{(\mathcal{P})}$ provided with the discrete topology and $k$ is the morphism $X'^{d}_{\text{ét}} \to X'(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}}$, then for any sheaf $F$ on $X'(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}}$ the canonical morphism of sheaves $F \to k_*k^*(F)$ is injective. By [SGA4, Exp. XVII, 6.4.2], for abelian $F$ the sheaf $k_*k^*(F)$ on $X'(\mathcal{P})_{\text{ét}}$ is flabby. One has $k = b \circ l$, where $l$ is the canonical map $X'^{d} \to X'$, and it is easy to see that there is a canonical isomorphism of sheaves $b'^*(k_*k^*(F)) \widetilde{\to} l_*l^*(b'^*F)$. This implies that the sheaf $b'^*(k_*k^*(F))$ is flabby, and the required fact follows. □

**Example 4.4.3.** In the situation of Example 4.2.2(ii), the constant sheaf $(\underline{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ is a sheaf of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules on $\overline{X^{\log}}$. Corollary 4.4.2 implies that

$$R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})_{\overline{X^{\log}}} = R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$$

is a complex of sheaves of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules on the $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, where $\overline{\tau}$ denotes the map $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$. In particular, $R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ are sheaves of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

If $X$ is a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space, the left exact functor $\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}} : \mathbf{T}_{\mathcal{P}}(X) \to \mathbf{T}(X)$ gives rise to an exact functor

$$R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}} : D^+(X(\mathcal{P})) \to D^+(X) \ .$$

Since for every $P \in \mathcal{P}$ the projection $(f^{(P)})_P \mapsto f^{(P)}$ gives rise to an isomorphism $F^{\mathcal{P}} \widetilde{\to} (F^{(P)})^{G^{(P)}}$, it also induces an isomorphism of functors $R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}} \widetilde{\to} R\mathcal{I}^{G^{(P)}}$.

The following statement will be applied in the situation of Example 4.2.2(ii) to the maps $\overline{\tau} : \overline{X^{\log}} \stackrel{\nu}{\longrightarrow} X^{\log} \stackrel{\tau}{\longrightarrow} X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

**Proposition 4.4.4.** *Suppose that the action of a groupoid $\mathcal{P}$ on a $\mathcal{P}$-space $\overline{Y}$ is free, and we are given an isomorphism $\mathcal{P}\backslash\overline{Y} \widetilde{\to} Y$ and a continuous map $\tau : Y \to X$ with a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space $X$. Let $\overline{\tau}$ denote the induced map $\overline{Y} \to X$. Then for every $F^\cdot \in D^+(Y)$, there is a canonical isomorphism*

$$R\tau_*(F^\cdot) \widetilde{\to} R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}(R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{F}^\cdot)) \ ,$$

*where $\overline{F}^\cdot$ is the pullback of $F^\cdot$ on $\overline{Y}$.*

Recall that the quotient $\mathcal{P}$-space $\mathcal{P}\backslash\overline{Y}$ is univocal and, therefore, it is isomorphic to a trivial $\mathcal{P}$-space.

*Proof.* One has $\overline{\tau} = \tau \circ \nu$, where $\nu$ is the induced map $\overline{Y} \to Y$. Since for every injective $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $A$ on $\overline{Y}$ the $\mathcal{P}$-sheaf $\nu_*(A)$ is also injective, it follows that $F^\cdot \widetilde{\to} R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_Y(R\nu_*(\overline{F}^\cdot))$ and, therefore, $R\tau_*(F^\cdot) \widetilde{\to} R\tau_*(R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_Y(R\nu_*(\overline{F}^\cdot)))$. We now notice that there is an isomorphism of functors $\tau_* \circ \mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_Y \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_X \circ \tau_*$. Since the functor $\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_Y$ takes injective $\mathcal{P}$-sheaves to flabby sheaves (see [Gro57, Proposition 5.1.3]), it follows that there is an isomorphism of functors $R\tau_* \circ R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_Y \widetilde{\to} R\mathcal{I}^{\mathcal{P}}_X \circ R\tau_*$, and we get the required isomorphism. □

4.5. **Distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules.** Let $R$ be either $K^\circ_r$ for $1 \le r < \infty$, or $K^\circ$, or $\mathcal{K}^\circ$. In the latter two cases we set $r = \infty$. We denote by $R^{\circ\circ}$ the maximal ideal of $R$ (it coincides with $K^{\circ\circ} \cdot R$, if $r < \infty$ or $R = K^\circ$, and with $\mathcal{K}^{\circ\circ} \cdot R$ if $R = \mathcal{K}^\circ$), and we set $R_{\mathbf{C}} = R \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$. As above, the objects related to $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ depend also from the original ring $R$. Let $\pi(R)$, $\Pi(R)$ and $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ denote the corresponding groupoids (where $\pi(K^\circ) = \pi(K)$, $\Pi(K^\circ) = \Pi(K)$ and so on). We consider $R$ and $W(R)$ as strict $\pi(R)$-rings, and $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ as strict $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-rings. (Recall that, for every $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, each element of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is represented in the form $f(\varpi)$ for $f \in \mathbf{C}[[T]]$.)

Notice that every $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-ring, $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module and so on gives rise to a $\Pi(R)$-ring, $\Pi(R)$-module and so on. We mention $\Pi(R)$ explicitly only when it is necessary. Notice also that $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a left $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module, and the field $\mathbf{C}$ is a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-subfield of the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-rings $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. We use the notations $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$, $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, and $c^{(\varpi)}$, $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$, for the morphisms in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(R)$, defined in the same way as for the categories $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(K)$, respectively.

Let $X$ be an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space. We consider $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ as a single $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space on which morphisms from $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ of first type act trivially and of second type act as the complex conjugation, and denote by $\rho$ the canonical map $X_{\mathbf{C}} \to X$. For a field $k$, a *$k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module* on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a covariant functor $\varpi \mapsto \mathcal{V}^{(\varpi)}$ from $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the category of sheaves of $k$-vector spaces. The notion of a $k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module is naturally extended to the derived category of sheaves of $k$-vector spaces.

If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\mathcal{D}$ is an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, an *$R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism* of $\mathcal{D}$ is a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-automorphism of $\mathcal{D}$ with the property that $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(\alpha x) = \overline{\alpha}\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x)$ for all $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\alpha \in R_{\mathbf{C}}$ and local sections $x$ of $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$. For example, given an $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{V}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, the $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module $\mathcal{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is provided with the $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism defined by $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x \otimes f(\varpi)) = x \otimes \overline{f}(\varpi)$. The notion of an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism is naturally extended to $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules in the derived category of sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the latter construction is extended to $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules in the same derived category.

For a left $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{D}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, a number $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$, an element $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, and an open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, we set

$$\mathcal{D}_\lambda^{(\varpi)}(U) = \{x \in D^{(\varpi)}(U) \big| (\delta_\varpi - \lambda)^n(x) = 0 \text{ for some } n \geq 1\} .$$

If $\lambda$ and $\varpi$ are fixed, the correspondence $U \mapsto \mathcal{D}_\lambda^{(\varpi)}(U)$ is a sheaf of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, denoted by $\mathcal{D}_\lambda^{(\varpi)}$. If $\lambda$ is fixed the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \mathcal{D}_\lambda^{(\varpi)}$ is a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, denoted by $\mathcal{D}_\lambda$. For a subset $I \subset \mathbf{R}$, we set $\mathcal{D}_I = \oplus_{\lambda \in I}\mathcal{D}_\lambda$. We also denote by $\widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$ the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{D}/(R^{\circ\circ} \cdot \mathcal{D})$.

**Definition 4.5.1.** A *distinguished* $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$*-module on* $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a left $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{D}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ which, in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, is a provided with an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism of order two $\vartheta$, and which possesses the following properties:

1. for every $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$ is locally free of finite rank over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$;
2. the canonical homomorphism $\mathcal{D} \to \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$ induces an isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\mathcal{D}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$;
3. the actions of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ and $\delta_\varpi$ on $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$ are related by the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi)$.

If $X = \mathbb{F}^0$, we call the above object just a *distinguished* $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$*-module*. For example, $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module with the endomorphisms $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ : $f(\varpi) \mapsto \overline{f}(\varpi)$ (for $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$). If $X$ is arbitrary, then for any distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{D}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and any connected open subset $U \subset X$, the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}(\rho^{-1}(U))$ is a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. The category of distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is denoted by $X_{\mathbf{C}}(W(R_{\mathbf{C}}))$-Dist, or just $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-Dist, if $X = \mathbb{F}^0$.

**Remarks 4.5.2.** Let $D$ be a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

(i) It follows from (2) that, for any open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, each element $x \in \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}(U)$ has a unique presentation in the form $\sum_{n \geq 0} x_n \varpi^n$ with $x_n \in \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}(U)$.

If $r < \infty$, the sum is finite (and one should write $\widetilde{\varpi}$ instead of $\varpi$). (If $R = \mathcal{K}^\circ$, the sum is convergent, i.e., there exists $\varepsilon > 0$ with $\sum_{n\ge 0} ||x_n||\varepsilon^n < \infty$, where $||\ ||$ is a fixed norm on the finitely dimensional $\mathbf{C}$-vector space $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}(U)$.) It follows also that if $x \in \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda\backslash\{0\}$ for some $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$, then $x \in \varpi^n\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}_\mu(U)$ for some $\mu \in I$ and $n \ge 0$ (in particular, $\lambda = \mu + n$).

(ii) For any entire analytic function $f = \sum_{n\ge 0} a_n z^n$ on $\mathbb{C}$, there are well defined operators $f(\delta_\varpi) : \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)} \to \mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$. The operator $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ in (3) is of this form. It takes the element $x$ from (i) to the sum $\sum_{n\ge 0} \exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)(x_n)\varpi^n$.

(iii) For any $1 \le r' < r$, $D' = D/(R^{\circ\circ})^{r'}D$ is an distinguished $W(R'_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, where $R' = K^\circ_{r'}$.

For a field $k$, a $k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$*-quasi-unipotent module on* $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a $k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{V}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ such that, for every $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and every connected open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, $\mathcal{V}^{(\varpi)}(U)$ is of finite dimension over $k$ and the action of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ on it is quasi-unipotent. The category of $k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-quasi-unipotent modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ will be denoted by $X_{\mathbf{C}}(k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}}))$-Qun. If $X = \mathbf{F}^0$, it is denoted by $k\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-Qun. It follows from Definition 4.5.1 that there is a well defined functor

$$X_{\mathbf{C}}(W(R_{\mathbf{C}}))\text{-Dist} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{F}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}}))\text{-Qun} : \mathcal{D} \mapsto \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}^{\vartheta=1}\ ,$$

where $\widetilde{\mathcal{D}}^{\vartheta=1}$ is the $\Pi(R)$-submodule $\varpi \mapsto \{x \in \widetilde{\mathcal{D}} \big| \vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x) = x\}$, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, and $\widetilde{\mathcal{D}}^{\vartheta=1} = \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$.

**Proposition 4.5.3.** *(i) The above functor is an equivalence of categories;*

*(ii) there is a functor* $X_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{F}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}}))\text{-Qun} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}(W(R_{\mathbf{C}}))\text{-Dist} : \mathcal{V} \mapsto \mathcal{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ *which is left adjoint and inverse to that from (i).*

Recall that the exponential map $N \mapsto \exp(N)$ on the set of nilpotent operators on a finitely dimensional vector space over a field of characteristic zero gives rise to a bijection with the set of unipotent operators, and the inverse map is given by the logarithmic map $U \mapsto \log(U)$. We extend the latter to the set of quasi-unipotent operators by $\log(E) = \frac{1}{n}\log(E^n)$, where $n$ is a positive integer for which the operator $E^n$ is unipotent. Suppose now that the ground field is $\mathbf{C}$. Given a quasi-unipotent operator $E$ on a $\mathbf{C}$-vector space $V$, let $E = E_s \cdot E_u$ be its multiplicative Jordan decomposition, i.e., a unique decomposition of $E$ as a product of commuting semisimple and unipotent operators $E_s$ and $E_u$, respectively. In some basis $x_1, \dots, x_n$ of $V$, one has $E_s(x_j) = e^{-2\pi i\lambda_j}x_j$ for $\lambda_j \in \mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)$, and we define an operator $\mathrm{Log}(E_s)$ by $\mathrm{Log}(E_s)(x_j) = -2\pi i\lambda_j x_j$ for all $1 \le j \le n$. This operator does not depend on the choice of the basis, and we set $\mathrm{Log}(E) = \mathrm{Log}(E_s) + \log(E)$. Notice that the latter is the additive Jordan decomposition of the operator $\mathrm{Log}(E)$, and one has $E = \exp(\mathrm{Log}(E))$. If $E$ is an operator whose eigenvalues are imaginary numbers $-2\pi i\lambda$ with $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)$ and $E = E_s + E_n$ is its additive Jordan decomposition, then $E_s = \mathrm{Log}(\exp(E_s))$ and, therefore, $E = \mathrm{Log}(\exp(E))$.

*Proof of Proposition 4.5.3.* For simplicity, we assume that $X = \mathbb{F}^0$. For $V \in \mathbf{F}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-Qun, the tensor product $V \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} : \varpi \mapsto V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is provided with the structure of a $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module as follows. First of all, if $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ is a morphism in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, then the corresponding isomorphism $V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} V^{(\varpi')} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is induced by the isomorphisms $\varphi_V : V^{(\varpi)} \to V^{(\varpi')}$ and $\varphi_R : R_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} R_{\mathbf{C}}$. Furthermore, each nonzero element $x \in V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is represented in a unique way in the form

$\sum_{n\geq 0} x_n\varpi^n$ for $x_n \in V_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)} = V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C}$ (as in Remark 4.5.2(ii); if $r < \infty$, one should write $\widetilde{\varpi}$ instead of $\varpi$). Then

$$\delta_\varpi\left(\sum_{n\geq 0} x_n\varpi^n\right) = \sum_{n\geq 0}\left(-\frac{1}{2\pi i}\mathrm{Log}(\sigma^{(\varpi)})(x_n) + nx_n\right)\varpi^n \ .$$

If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module automorphism $\vartheta$ of $V \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is defined by $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x \otimes f(\varpi)) = x \otimes \overline{f}(\varpi)$. This provides the tensor product $D = V \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ with the structure of a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module with $V \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathbf{C} \widetilde{\to} D_{I(D)} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{D}$ and $V \widetilde{\to} D_{I(D)}^{\vartheta=1} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{D}^{\vartheta=1}$. By the way, $I(D) = \{\lambda_j\}_{1\leq j\leq n} \subset [0,1)$ for pairwise distinct eigenvalues $\{\exp(-2\pi i\lambda_j)\}_{1\leq j\leq n}$ of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$. That the functor $V \mapsto V \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is fully faithful follows from Remark 4.5.2(i). In order to verify that this functor is left adjoint to the functor $D \mapsto \widetilde{D}^{\vartheta=1}$, it suffices to verify that, in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the subspace $D_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}^{(\varpi)}$ is invariant under the $\mathbf{C}$-semilinear operator $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ for any distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $D$ and any $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. For this we notice that, by the property (2), there is an isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $D_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{D}$, which have finite dimension over $\mathbf{C}$ and, therefore, the property (3) implies that $D_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)}^{(\varpi)}$ is the kernel of a sufficient large power of the operator $\prod_{\lambda\in I}(\sigma^{(\varpi)} - \exp(-2\pi i\lambda))$, where $I = \{\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0,1) \big| D_\lambda \neq 0\}$. This gives the required fact. ☐

Suppose now that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, and consider $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ as a $\Pi(R)$-module and $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ as a $\Pi(R)$-ring. Restricting the above objects to the full subcategory $\Pi(R)$ of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, we get the notions of a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module (with the category $\Pi(R)$ instead of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$) and of a $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R)$-quasi-unipotent module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the similar equivalence of the corresponding categories $X_{\mathbf{C}}(W(R_{\mathbf{C}}))$-Dist$\widetilde{\to} X_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{R}\Pi(R))$-Qun. We are going to describe the former category in terms of objects on the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $X$.

Recall that we consider $R$ and $W(R)$ as single $\pi(R)$-modules. Recall also that in §1.2 we introduced the sheaf of constant analytic functions $\mathfrak{c}_X$ provided with an automorphism of order two $\vartheta$ with $\mathfrak{c}_X^{\vartheta=1} = \mathbf{R}_X$. We consider $\mathfrak{c}_X$ as a trivial $\pi(R)$-field and the tensor products $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$ and $W(R) \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$ as single $\pi(R)$-rings in the category of abelian sheaves on the underlying topological space $|X|$ of $X$. An $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$*-semilinear endomorphism* of an $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$-module $\mathcal{D}$ on $X$ is an $\pi(R)$-endomorphism $\vartheta$ of $\mathcal{D}$ such that, for every $\varpi \in \pi(R)$, one has $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}((a \otimes \alpha) \cdot x) = (a \otimes \vartheta(\alpha)) \cdot \vartheta^{(\varpi)}(x)$ for $a \in R$ and local sections $\alpha$ of $\mathfrak{c}_X$ and $x$ of $\mathcal{D}$.

**Definition 4.5.4.** A *distinguished* $W(R)$*-module on* $X$ is a left $W(R)\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}\mathfrak{c}_X$-module $\mathcal{D}$ which is a provided with an $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$-semilinear automorphism of order two $\vartheta$, and which possesses the following properties:

(1) for $\varpi \in \pi(R)$, $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$ is locally free of finite rank over $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$;
(2) the canonical homomorphism $\mathcal{D} \to \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$ induces an isomorphism of $\Pi(R)$-modules $\mathcal{D}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)} \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{\mathcal{D}}$;
(3) $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with the operator $\cos(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$ and anti-commutes with the operator $\sin(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$ on $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$.

For example, if $X = \mathbb{R}^0$, then $\mathfrak{c}_X = \mathbf{R}$ and, therefore, $\vartheta$ is just an $R$-module automorphism of order two.

Let $\mathcal{D}$ a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ (for the category $\Pi(R)$). For every $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$, the action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ on the sheaf $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$ is compatible with its action on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. It follows that $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$ defines an étale abelian sheaf $\overline{\mathcal{D}}^{(\varpi)}$ on $X$, whose restriction to $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is $\mathcal{D}^{(\varpi)}$. It is easy to see that the restriction of $\overline{\mathcal{D}}^{(\varpi)}$ to $|X|$ is a distinguished $W(R)$-module on $X$. In this way we get a functor

$$X_{\mathbf{C}}(W(R_{\mathbf{C}}))\text{-Dist} \to X(W(R))\text{-Dist} ,$$

where the right hand side is the category of distinguished $W(R)$-modules on $X$. If $X = \mathbb{R}^0$, it will be denoted by $W(R)$-Dist.

**Proposition 4.5.5.** *The above functor is an equivalence of categories.*

*Proof.* For a distinguished $W(R)$-module $\mathcal{E}$ on $X$ and $\varpi \in \pi(R)$, we set

$$\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)} = \rho^{-1}(\mathcal{E}^{(\varpi)}) \otimes_{\rho^{-1}(\mathfrak{c}_X)} \mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} .$$

The correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)}$ is a $\pi(R)$-module $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}$, which is locally free of finite rank over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$. *We claim that $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}$ admits a natural structure of a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module.* Indeed, the ring $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ clearly acts on each $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)}$. In order to provide $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}$ with an action of the groupoid $\Pi(R)$, it suffices to define an action of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ on each $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)}$ and an action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ on $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}^{(\varpi)}$ compatible with an action of the complex conjugation on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The former is defined by the formula $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi)$, and the latter is induced by the corresponding action of the complex conjugation on the sheaf $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Thus, $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}$ is a $\Pi(R)$-module and, in fact, a $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. Finally, the $R \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathfrak{c}_X$-semilinear automorphism $\vartheta$ on $\mathcal{E}$ and the complex conjugation on the field $\mathbf{C}$ induce an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism $\vartheta$ of $\mathcal{E}_{\mathbf{C}}$. For $\varpi \in \pi(R)$, $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ since the latter is equal to $\exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi) = \cos(2\pi\delta_\varpi) - i \sin(2\pi\delta_\varpi)$, and it commutes with $c^{(\varpi)}$ because the actions of $\vartheta$ and $c$ commute on $\mathbf{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. □

**Corollary 4.5.6.** *In the above situation, there is a equivalence of categories*

$$X_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{R}\Pi(R))\text{-Qun} \widetilde{\to} X(W(R))\text{-Dist} . \qquad \square$$

**Example 4.5.7.** Applying Corollary 4.5.6 to $X = \mathbb{R}^0$, we get an equivalence of categories

$$\mathbf{R}\Pi(R))\text{-Qun} \widetilde{\to} W(R)\text{-Dist} .$$

An explicit construction of this functor and of its inverse is as follows. Given an $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R)$-quasi-unipotent module $V$, the corresponding $W(R)$-distinguished module is

$$(V \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}})^{c=1} : \varpi \mapsto (V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}})^{c^{(\varpi)}=1}$$

with $c^{(\varpi)}$ acting naturally on $V^{(\varpi)}$ and as the complex congugation on $R_{\mathbf{C}}$. The actions of $\delta_\varpi$ on $V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ is defined in the proof of Proposition 4.5.3 and that of $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ is induced by the complex conjugation on $R_{\mathbf{C}}$. Since $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with $c^{(\varpi)}$ and $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi)$, it follows that $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with $\cos(2\pi\delta_\varphi)$ and anti-commutes with $\sin(2\pi\delta_\varphi)$, and its action on $V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ induces an action on its $c^{(\varpi)}$-invariant subspace. Conversely, given a distinguished $W(R)$-module $D$, the corresponding $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R)$-quasi-unipotent module is

$$(\widetilde{D} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C})^{\vartheta=1} : \varpi \mapsto (\widetilde{D}^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C})^{\vartheta^{(\varpi)}=1} = (\widetilde{D}^{(\varpi)})^{\vartheta^{(\varpi)}=1} \oplus i(\widetilde{D}^{(\varpi)})^{\vartheta^{(\varpi)}=-1}$$

with $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ acting naturally on $D^{(\varpi)}$ and as the complex conjugation on $\mathbf{C}$. The actions of $c^{(\varpi)}$ and $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ on $D^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C}$ are defined as the complex conjugation on $\mathbf{C}$ and as $\exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi)$, respectively. The automorphism $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ evidently commutes with $c^{(\varpi)}$ and, by the condition (3) on $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$, it commutes with $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$. It follows that the action of $\Pi(R)$ on $D^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C}$ induces an action on the $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$-invariant subspace of $\widetilde{D}^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C}$. Notice that the above $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R)$-quasi-unipotent module is canonically isomorphic to $\varpi \mapsto (D^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)})^{\vartheta^{(\varpi)}=1} \oplus i(D^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{Q}\cap[0,1)})^{\vartheta^{(\varpi)}=-1}$, and the action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ is the identity (resp. minus identity) on the first (resp. second) summand.

**Remark 4.5.8.** Let $F$ be a subfield of $\mathbf{R}$ (e.g., $F = \mathbf{R}$ or $\mathbf{Q}$), and let $V$ be an $F\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-quasi-unipotent module. Then for every $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\log(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$ is a nilpotent $F$-linear operator on $V^{(\varpi)}$. By the above, the tensor product $D = V \otimes_F R_{\mathbf{C}}$ has the structure of a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. In particular, the operator $\delta_\varpi$ acts on the $\mathbf{C}$-vector space $V^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{C}} = V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_F \mathbf{C}$, and one has $\delta_\varpi = -\frac{1}{2\pi i}\mathrm{Log}(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$. It follows that $N^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{C}} = -\frac{1}{2\pi i}\log(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$, where $N^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{C}}$ denotes the nilpotent part from the additive Jordan decomposition of the operator $\delta_\varpi$. Since $\log(\sigma^{(\varpi)})$ is defined on $V^{(\varpi)}$, $N^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{C}}$ is induced by a nilpotent $F$-linear operator $N^{(\varpi)} : V^{(\varpi)} \to V^{(\varpi)}(-1) = V^{(\varpi)} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathbf{Z}(-1)$, where $\mathbf{Z}(-1) = \frac{1}{2\pi i}\mathbf{Z} \subset \mathbf{C}$. We consider $\mathbf{Z}(-1)$ as a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-submodule of $\mathbf{C}$, and this provides $V(-1) : \varpi \mapsto V^{(\varpi)}(-1)$ with the structure of a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. *We claim that, for any morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, one has $\varphi_{V(-1)} \circ N^{(\varpi)} = N^{(\varpi')} \circ \varphi_V$.* Indeed, it suffices to show that $\varphi_{V_{\mathbf{C}}} \circ N^{(\varpi)}_{\mathbf{C}} = N^{(\varpi')}_{\mathbf{C}} \circ \varphi_{V_{\mathbf{C}}}$, and the latter follows from the equality $\varphi_D \circ \delta_\varpi = \delta_{\varpi'} \circ \varphi_D$. Thus, the operators $N^{(\varpi)}$ define a nilpotent morphism of $F\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-quasi-unipotent modules $N : V \to V(-1)$.

## 5. Distinguished log complex analytic spaces

5.1. **Definition and properties.** In this section, $R$ is either $K^\circ_r$ for $1 \le r < \infty$, or $\mathcal{K}^\circ = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ (in the latter case we set $r = \infty$). The ring $R$ gives rise to a log space $\mathbf{pt}_R$, which is the log point $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_r}$, if $r < \infty$, and the log germ $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$, if $r = \infty$. We also consider both log spaces as one point spaces provided with the log structure defined by the homomorphism of monoids $M_R = R\backslash\{0\} \to R$.

Given integers $m, e_1, \dots, e_m \ge 1$ and an element $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, equal to $z$ for $r = \infty$, we set

$$A_{e_1,\dots,e_m} = R_{\mathbf{C}}[T_1, \dots, T_m]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \widetilde{\varpi}) \ .$$

The monoid freely generated by the coordinate functions $T_1, \dots, T_m$ defines an fs log structure on the scheme $\mathcal{Y} = \mathrm{Spec}(A_{e_1,\dots,e_m})$ and a log smooth morphism of log spaces $\mathcal{Y}^h \to \mathbf{pt}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.

**Definition 5.1.1.** (i) $r < \infty$: A log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $X$ over $\mathbf{pt}_R$ is said to be *distinguished* if every point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$ has an open neighborhood $U$ which admits a strict open immersion over $\mathbf{pt}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ in the log space $Z = \mathrm{Spec}(B)^h$, where

$$B = A_{e_1,\dots,e_m}[T_{m+1}, \dots, T_n]/(T_1^{re_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_\mu^{re_\mu}),\ 1 \le \mu \le m \le n,$$

and the log structure on $Z$ is generated by that of $\mathcal{Y}$ as above.

(ii) $r = \infty$: A log germ $(Y, X)$ of an $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$ is said to be *distinguished* if each point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$ has an open neighborhood $V$ in $Y_{\mathbf{C}}$ that admits a strict open immersion over $(\mathbb{C}, 0)$ in the log space $Z = \mathrm{Spec}(B)^h$, where

$$B = A_{e_1,\dots,e_m}[T_{m+1}, \dots, T_n]$$

such that $X_{\mathbf{C}} \cap V$ is the preimage of the closed analytic subspace defined by the equation $T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_\mu = 0$ with $1 \le \mu \le m \le n$.

Notice that, for any point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$ one can find a strict open immersion as in Definition 5.1.1 such that all of the coordinate functions $T_i$ are equal to zero at $x$.

**Examples 5.1.2.** (i) Let $(Y, X)$ be a distinguished log germ over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$. Given $1 \le r < \infty$, let $X_r$ be the closed analytic subspace of $Y$ whose intersection with the chart $V$ as in Definition 5.1.1(ii) is defined by the ideal generated by $z^r$ and $T_1^{re_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_\mu^{re_\mu}$. The subspace $X_r$ provided with the induced log structure is a distinguished log analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{\mathcal{K}_r^\circ}$. The support of the closed analytic subspace $X_r$ in $Y$ coincides with $X$. Given a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$, one can consider $X_r$ as a distinguished log analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$ with respect to the isomorphism $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ \widetilde{\to} K^\circ : z \mapsto \varpi$. Notice that any distinguished log analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$ is étale locally of the form $X_r$ for any generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$ and a distinguished log germ $(Y, X)$ over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$.

(ii) Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a distinguished formal scheme over $K^\circ$. *Then for every* $1 \le r < \infty$, $\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$ *is a distinguished log* $\mathbf{F}$*-analytic space over* $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$. Indeed, we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. Let $\mathbf{x}$ be a closed point of $\mathfrak{X}_s$, and let $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathfrak{X}$ be an étale neighborhood of $\mathbf{x}$ such that $\mathcal{X}$ is a distinguished scheme over $K^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Y}$ the union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{X}_s$. Let $\mathcal{J}_r$ be the coherent sheaf of ideals on $\mathcal{X}$ such that, for every open subset $\mathcal{U} \subset \mathcal{X}$, $\mathcal{J}_r(\mathcal{U})$ is generated by the elements $f \in \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{U})$ with $\mathrm{ord}_{\mathcal{Z}}(f) \ge r \cdot \mathrm{ord}_{\mathcal{Z}}(z)$ for each irreducible component $\mathcal{Z}$ of $\mathcal{U} \cap \mathcal{Y}$, where $\mathrm{ord}_{\mathcal{Z}}(f)$ is the order of $f$ at the generic point of $\mathcal{Z}$. If $\mathcal{Y}_r$ the closed subscheme of $\mathcal{X}$ defined by the ideal $\mathcal{J}_r$ and provided with the induced log structure, then $\mathcal{Y}_r^h$ is a distinguished log analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_r^\circ}$. The above morphism gives rise to an étale morphism $\mathcal{Y}_r^h \to \mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$, which induces an isomorphism from an open neighborhood of a point $\mathbf{x}' \in \mathcal{Y}$ over $\mathbf{x}$ in $\mathcal{Y}_r^h$ and an open neighborhood of $\mathbf{x}$ in $\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$.

(iii) Let $X$ be a distinguished log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $R$. Given $1 \le r' < r$, let $X_{r'}$ denote the closed analytic subspace which is étale locally defined by the ideal generated by $\tilde{\varpi}^l$ and $T_1^{r'e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_\mu^{r'e_\mu}$ on each chart $V$ as in Definition 5.1.1. Then $X_{r'}$ is a distinguished log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_{K_{r'}^\circ}$, and canonical morphism $X_{r'} \to X$ is an exact closed immersion of log analytic spaces.

In this section we study distinguished log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces over $\mathbf{pt}_R$ from Definition 5.1.1(i) and log germs over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$ from Definition 5.1.1(ii). The results obtained have similar formulation but slighly different interpretation. In order to consider them simulteneously, in the case $r = \infty$ we refer to the latter germ by $X$ essentially viewing it as a topological space provided with the sheaf of local rings $\mathcal{O}_X = i^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{Y(X)})$ and the log structure $M_X = i^{-1}(M_{Y(X)}) \to \mathcal{O}_X$, where $i$ is the map $X \to Y(X)$. Other sheaves on $X$ considered here are always induced from $Y(X)$ (as the sheaves $\mathcal{O}_X$ and $M_X$). We also denote by $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$ the preimage of $X$ in $Y(X)^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{Y(X)^{\log}}$, respectively. Notice that, for every $1 \le r < \infty$, there is a canonical exact closed immersion of log spaces $X_r \to X$, which induces a homeomorphism between the underlying topological spaces as well as homeomorphisms $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C},r} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}_r} \widetilde{\to} \overline{X^{\log}}$.

Thus, we are back to the general situation when $1 \le r \le \infty$. We study the maps of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $\nu : \overline{X^{\log}} = X^{\log} \times_{\mathbf{pt}_R} \overline{\mathbf{pt}_R^{\log}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$, $\tau : X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{\tau} = \tau \circ \nu : \overline{X^{\log}} \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$. We also denote by $\tau^{(\varpi)}$, $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, the restriction of $\overline{\tau}$ to $X^{(\varpi)}$.

**Lemma 5.1.3.** *Each point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$ has a fundamental system of open neighborhoods $U$ such that there are compatible strong deformation retractions of $U$ to $x$, of $\tau^{-1}(U)$ to $\tau^{-1}(x)$, and of $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U)$ to $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(x)$.*

*Proof.* By the remark in Example 5.1.2(i), we may assume that we are given a distinguished log germ $(Y, X)$ over $(\mathbb{C}, 0)$, and it suffices to show that each point $x \in X$ has a fundamental system of open neighborhoods $U$ of $x$ in $Y$ which preserves the intersection $U \cap X$ and lifts to strong deformation retractions of $\tau^{-1}(U)$ to $\tau^{-1}(x)$ and of $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U)$ to $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(x)$, where $\tau$ and $\overline{\tau}$ are the maps $Y^{\log} \to Y$ and $\overline{Y^{\log}} \to Y$, respectively. Thus, we may assume that $Y$ is the affine space $\mathbb{C}^n$ provided with the log structure generated by the coordinate functions $T_1, \dots, T_m$, $1 \le m \le n$, as in Definition 5.1.1(ii), $X$ is the union of $\mu$ hyperplanes defined by the equations $T_i = 0$ for $1 \le i \le \mu \le m$, and $x$ is the zero point in $\mathbb{C}^n$.

There is a homeomorphism $(\mathbf{R}_+^m \times (S^1)^m) \times \mathbb{C}^{n-m} \widetilde{\to} (\mathbb{C}^n)^{\log}$, and the projection from the latter to $\mathbb{C}^n$ is as follows

$$(\mathbb{C}^n)^{\log} \to \mathbb{C}^n : ((r, a), c) \mapsto (ra, c) \ ,$$

where $r = (r_1, \dots, r_m)$, $a = (a_1, \dots, a_m)$, and $c = (c_{m+1}, \dots, c_n)$. One also has

$$\overline{(\mathbb{C}^n)^{\log}} = \{(((r, a), c), b) \in (\mathbb{C}^n)^{\log} \times i\mathbf{R} \big| \prod_{j=1}^{m} a_j^{e_j} = e^b\} \ .$$

If $U$ is an open neighborhood of zero in $\mathbb{C}^n$ with the property that, for each point $y \in U$, the interval $\{ty \big| t \in [0,1]\}$ lies in $U$, then the map $\Phi_U : U \times [0,1] \to U$ that takes a pair $(y, t)$ to the point $(1-t)y$ is a strong deformation retraction of $U$ to the zero point 0, and this map $\Phi_U$ lifts to deformation retractions of $\tau^{-1}(U)$ to $\tau^{-1}(0) : (((r, a), c), t) \mapsto (((1-t)r, a), (1-t)c)$ and of $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U)$ to $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(0)$. Notice also that $\Phi_U$ preserves the intersection of $U$ with each of the hyperplanes in $X$. $\square$

**Corollary 5.1.4.** *Let $(Y, X)$ be a distinguished log germ over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$. Then for any $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}}^\circ)$-module $\Lambda$ and every point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R^q\Theta(\Lambda_{Y(X)_\eta})_x \widetilde{\to} H^q(\tau^{-1}(x), \Lambda) \text{ and } R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{Y(X)_\eta})_x \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(x), \Lambda) \ .$$

*Proof.* By Theorem 2.5.2, the left hand sides are the inductive limits of the groups $H^q(\tau^{-1}(U), \Lambda)$ and $H^q(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U), \Lambda)$, and they coincide with the right hand sides since $\tau^{-1}(x)$ and $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(x)$ are strong deformation retractions of $\tau^{-1}(U)$ and $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(U)$, respectively, for sufficiently small $U$'s. $\square$

**Corollary 5.1.5.** *Let $Z$ be a closed analytic subspace of $X$ provided with the induced log structure with respect to which it is also distinguished over $\mathbf{pt}_R$. Then for any $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$, there is a canonical isomorphism*

$$R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\big|_Z \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_{Z*}(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{Z^{\log}}}) \ . \qquad \square$$

Recall (see Example 4.3.4) that $\overline{\pi}_{0,X}$ denotes the $\Pi(R)$-cosheaf $U \mapsto \pi_0(\overline{\tau^{-1}(U)}) = \pi_0(\overline{U^{\log}})$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. The purpose of the following two subsection is to describe it in terms of the logarithmic structure on $X$.

5.2. **Description of the cosheaf $\overline{\pi}_{0,X}$.** Let $M_X^{gr}$ be the étale sheaf of abelian groups associated to the étale sheaf of monoids $M_X$. It contains the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_X^*$, and we set $\overline{M}_X^{gr} = M_X^{gr}/\mathcal{O}_X^*$. For example, $\overline{M}_R^{gr}$ is canonically isomorphic to the constant sheaf associated to $\mathbf{Z}$. Let $\overline{M}_X^{(tors)}$ denote the torsion subsheaf of $\overline{M}_X^{gr}$. Finally, we set

$$\overline{M}_{X/R} = \mathrm{Coker}(\overline{M}_R^{gr} \to \overline{M}_X^{gr})$$

and denote by $\overline{M}_{X/R}^{(tors)}$ the torsion subsheaf of $\overline{M}_{X/R}$.

**Proposition 5.2.1.** *For every étale morphism $U \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ with nonempty connected $U$, the following is true:*

- (i) *the group $\overline{M}_{X/R}^{(tors)}(U)$ is finite cyclic (of order $e_U$);*
- (ii) *given a covering of $U$ by nonempty connected open subsets $\{U_i\}_{i\in I}$, one has $e_U = \mathrm{g.c.d.}(e_{U_i})_{i\in I}$;*
- (iii) *for every étale morphism $V \to U$ with nonempty connected $V$, the canonical homomorphism $\overline{M}_{X/R}^{(tors)}(U) \to \overline{M}_{X/R}^{(tors)}(V)$ is injective;*
- (iv) *there is a unique generator $\overline{m}_U$ of $\overline{M}_{X/R}^{(tors)}(U)$ with the property that its restriction to a sufficiently small connected open neighborhood $V$ of every point of $U$ lifts to an element $m \in M_X(V)$ such that $m^{e_U}$ is an element of $M_R$ whose image in $\overline{M}_R^{gr} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}$ is one.*

*Proof.* We may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$.

Step 1. By Definition 5.1.1, every point $x \in X$ has a connected open neighborhood $U$ that admits a strict open immersion in a log space of the form from that definition (with a fixed $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$) and such that $x$ is its zero point. (We call such $U$ a special open neighborhood of $x$.) If $P$ is the free monoid generated by elements $v_1, \dots, v_m$, the log structure on $U$ is defined by the chart $P \to \mathcal{O}(U) : v_i \mapsto T_i$. Let $P_{/u}$ denote the quotient of $P^{gr}$ by the subgroup generated by the element $u = v_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot v_m^{e_m}$. Since $P^* = \{1\}$, one has $P \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}_{X,x}$ and $P_{/u} \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}_{X/R,x}$, and these isomorphisms go through a homomorphism $P \to M_X(U)$. In particular, $P_{/u}^{(tors)} \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}_{X/R,x}^{(tors)}$, where $P_{/u}^{(tors)}$ is the torsion subgroup of $P_{/u}$. The group $P_{/u}^{(tors)}$ is cyclic of order $e_U = \mathrm{g.c.d.}(e_1, \dots, e_m)$ generated by the image of the element $v = v_1^{e'_1} \cdot \dots \cdot v_m^{e'_m}$, where $e'_i = \frac{e_i}{e_U}$.

Step 2. *For any point $x' \in U$, the induced homomorphism $P_{/u}^{(tors)} \to \overline{M}_{X/R,x'}^{(tors)}$ is injective.* Indeed, suppose that for $1 \le i \le m$ the coordinate function $T_i$ is zero at $x'$ for only $1 \le i \le \nu$ or $\gamma + 1 \le i \le m$, where $1 \le \nu \le \mu \le \gamma \le m$. If $P''$ is the localization of $P$ with respect to the elements $v_{\nu+1}, \dots, v_\gamma$, then $P''/P''^* \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}_{X,x'}$. The quotient $P' = P''/P''^*$ is isomorphic to the free monoid generated by the elements $v_1, \dots, v_\nu, v_{\gamma+1}, \dots, v_m$, and the image of $u$ in $P'$ is the element $u' = v_1^{e_1} \cdot \dots \cdot v_\nu^{e_\nu} \cdot v_{\gamma+1}^{e_{\gamma+1}} \cdot \dots \cdot v_m^{e_m}$. This implies the claim. This also implies the following facts:

(1) the group $\overline{M}_{X/R,x'}^{(tors)}$ is of order $\mathrm{g.c.d.}(e_1, \dots, e_\nu, e_{\gamma+1}, \dots, e_m)$, and one has $P'^{(tors)}_{/u'} \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}_{X/R,x'}^{(tors)}$;

(2) for any special open neighborhood $V$ of $x'$ in $U$ at which the element $v_{\nu+1}, \dots, v_\gamma$ are invertible, one has $P'^{(tors)}_{/u'} \widetilde{\to} \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(V)$ and the homomorphism $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U) \to \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(V)$ is injective.

Step 3. *The canonical homomorphism* $P^{(tors)}_{/u} \to \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ *is a bijection.* Indeed, for a special open subset $U' \subset U$, as at the end of Step 2, we set $G(U') = P'^{(tors)}$. It suffices to show that the value of the sheaf, associated with the presheaf $G$, at $U$ coincides with $G(U)$. Suppose we are given a covering $\{U_i\}_{i\in I}$ of $U$ by nonempty special open subsets. By Step 2, all of the homomorphisms $G(U) \to G(U_i)$ are injective and, if $x \in U_{i_0}$, then $G(U) \widetilde{\to} G(U_{i_0})$. Let $\{g_i\}_{i\in I}$ be a system of elements $g_i \in G(U_i)$ with $g_i\big|_{U_i\cap U_j} = g_j\big|_{U_i\cap U_j}$ for all $i, j \in I$. We claim that for the element $g \in G(U)$ with $g\big|_{U_{i_0}} = g_{i_0}$, one has $g\big|_{U_i} = g_i$ for all $i \in I$. Indeed, if $U_{i_0} \cap U_i \neq$, take a nonempty special open subset $V$ from the intersection. Then $g\big|_V = g_{i_0}\big|_V = g_i\big|_V$ and, therefore, $(g\big|_{U_i} - g_i)\big|_V = 0$. This implies that $g\big|_{U_i} = g_i$. If $i \in I$ is arbitrary, we can find a finite sequence $i_1, \dots, i_p = i$ with $U_{i_q} \cap U_{i_{q+1}} \neq \emptyset$ for all $0 \le q \le p-1$ and, by induction on $q$, we get $g_{U_i} = g_i$. It follows that the group $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ is cyclic of order $e_U$ and it has a unique generator $\overline{m}_U$ which lifts to an element $m \in M_X(U)$ such that $m^{e_U}$ is an element of $M_R$ whose image in $\overline{M}^{gr}_R \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}$ is one.

Step 4. Let now $U$ be a nonempty connected $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space étale over $X$. We call an open subset of $U$ special if it maps isomorphically onto a special open subset of $X$. *We claim that the group* $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ *is finite cyclic, and the support of any of its nontrivial elements coincides with* $U$. Indeed, assume that the support $\mathrm{Supp}(g)$ of a nontrivial element $g \in \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ is smaller than $U$. Let $x$ be a from the topological boundary of $\mathrm{Supp}(g)$ in $U$, and let $U'$ be a special open neighborhood of $x$ in $U$. Since $g\big|_{U'} \neq 1$, Steps 2 and 3 imply that the image of $g$ in $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{U/R,x'}$ is nontrivial for every point $x' \in U'$, i.e., $U' \subset \mathrm{Supp}(g)$, which contradicts the assumption. Thus, $\mathrm{Supp}(g) = U$, the homomorphism $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U) \to \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U')$ is injective, and the claim follows. This easily implies the statements (i) and (iii).

Step 5. *The statements (ii) and (iv) are true.* Indeed, take a covering $\{U_i\}_{i\in I}$ of $U$ by nonempty special open subsets. It suffices to show that

(1) the group $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ is of order $e_U = \text{g.c.d.}(e_{U_i})_{i\in I}$;

(2) there is a unique generator $\overline{m}_U$ of $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ whose restriction to each $U_i$ coincides with $\overline{m}^{k_i}_{U_i}$ for $k_i = \frac{e_{U_i}}{e_U}$.

First of all, since all of the homomorphisms $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U) \to \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U_i)$ are injective, it follows that the order of $\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ divides $e_U$. Furthermore, if $V$ is a nonempty special open subset of $U_i \cap U_j$, the restrictions of the elements $\overline{m}^{k_i}_{U_i}$ and $\overline{m}^{k_j}_{U_j}$ to $V$ coincide since the $e_U$-th powers of them are elements whose images in $\overline{M}^{gr}_R \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}$ are one. This means that the elements $\overline{m}^{k_i}_{U_i}$ are compatible on intersections $U_i \cap U_j$ and, therefore, there exists a unique element $\overline{m}_U \in \overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R}(U)$ of order $e_U$ with $\overline{m}_U\big|_{U_i} = \overline{m}^{k_i}_{U_i}$ for all $i \in I$. This implies the required statements (1) and (2). $\square$

For a nonempty connected open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, let $k_U$ be the maximal positive integer with the property that there exists $m \in M_X(U)$ such that $m^{k_U}$ lies in $M_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and its image in $\overline{M}^{gr}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}$ is one. It is clear that $k_U$ is a divisor of $e_U$, and if $U$ is sufficiently small, then $k_U = e_U$. Furthermore, for $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ we set

$$\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U) = \{m \in M_X(U) \big| m^{k_U} = \varpi\} \ .$$

The set $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ is a principal homogeneous space for the group $\mu_{k_U}$ of $k_U$-th roots of one (acting by multiplication). Each $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ of first (resp. second) type gives rise to a bijective map

$$\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U) : m' \mapsto \exp\left(\frac{\beta}{k_U}\right) m'$$

$$(\text{resp. } \Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(c(U)) : m' \mapsto \exp\left(\frac{\overline{\beta}}{k_U}\right) m'^c) \ .$$

For example, the morphism $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ takes each $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ to the element $e^{\frac{2\pi i}{k_U}} m$.

This makes the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ a finite $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space, which is denoted by $\overline{\Upsilon}(U)$. Finally, for an element $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, we set (see Example 4.2.2(ii))

$$U^{(\varpi)}(m) = \{((x, h_x), b) \in U^{(\varpi)} \big| h_x(m) = e^{\frac{b}{k_U}}\} \ .$$

**Proposition 5.2.2.** *The correspondence $m \mapsto U^{(\varpi)}(m)$ gives rise to an isomorphism of finite $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $\overline{\Upsilon}(U) \widetilde{\to} \pi_0(\overline{U^{\log}})$.*

*Proof.* Step 1. *For every element $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, the open and closed set $U^{(\varpi)}(m)$ is nonempty.* Indeed, let $((x, h_x), b) \in U^{(\varpi)}$. Since $h_x(\varpi) = e^b$, it follows that for every $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ one has $h_x(m) = \zeta e^{\frac{b}{k_U}}$ for a $k_U$-root of one $\zeta$. Moreover, multiplication by $k_U$-roots of one acts transitively on the set $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$. This implies the claim. It follows that $k_U$ divides the number $n = |\pi_0(U^{(\varpi)})|$.

Step 2. *The number $n$ divides $k_U$.* Indeed, the element $\varpi$ gives rise to homeomorphisms $\mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} S^1 : h \mapsto h(\varpi)$ and $\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R \widetilde{\to} i\mathbf{R} : (h, b) \mapsto b$. The exponential map $\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R = i\mathbf{R} \to \mathbf{pt}^{\log}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}} = S^1 : b \mapsto e^b$ is the composition of the map $i\mathbf{R} \to S^1 : b \mapsto e^{\frac{b}{n}}$ and the map $S^1 \to S^1 : a \mapsto a^n$. Since $|\pi_0(U^{(\varpi)})| = n$, the induced map

$$U^{(\varpi)} \to Y = U^{\log} \times_{S^1} S^1$$

gives rise to a bijection $\pi_0(U^{(\varpi)}) \widetilde{\to} \pi_0(Y)$. It follows that $|\pi_0(Y)| = n$ and, therefore, the projection $Y \to U^{\log}$ induces a homeomorphism of each connected component of $Y$ onto $U^{\log}$. This implies that this projection has a section $U^{\log} \to Y : (x, h_x) \mapsto ((x, h_x), f(x, h_x))$ for a continuous map $f : U^{\log} \to S^1$ with $h_x(\varpi) = f(x, h_x)^n$.

Furthermore, we can find a covering $\{U_i\}_{i \in I}$ of $U$ by connected open subsets such that all $k_{U_i} = e_{U_i} = |\pi_0(\overline{U_i^{\log}})|$. The latter implies that the number $n$ divides all of the numbers $e_{U_i}$ and, in particular, $n$ divides $e_U$. Take elements $m_i \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U_i)$. Then for every point $x \in U_i$, one has $h_x(m_i)^{\frac{e_{U_i}}{n}} = \xi_i f(x, h_x)$ for a $n$-th root of one $\xi_i$. Since $U_i^{\log}$ is connected, it does not depend on the point $x$. We set $m_i' = \xi_i^{-1} m_i^{\frac{e_{U_i}}{n}}$. Then for every pair $i, j \in I$ with $U_i \cap U_j \neq \emptyset$, one has $h_x(m_i') = h_x(m_j')$ for all points $(x, h_x) \in (U_i \cap U_j)^{\log}$. On the other hand $\frac{m_i'}{m_j'}$ is an element of $M^{gr}(U_i \cap U_j)$ whose $n$-th power is one. This implies that its restriction to each connected component $W$ of $U_i \cap U_j$ is a $n$-root of one $\zeta$, i.e., $m'_i\big|_W = \zeta m'_j\big|_W$ and, therefore, $h_x(m'_i) = \zeta h_x(m'_j)$ for all points $(x, h_x) \in W^{\log}$. This implies that $\zeta = 1$, i.e., $m'_i\big|_{U_i\cap U_j} = m'_j\big|_{U_i\cap U_j}$. Thus, there exists an element $m \in M_X(U)$ with $m\big|_{U_i} = m'_i$ for all $i \in I$, and one has $m^n = \varpi$. The claim follows, and it implies that the correspondence $m \mapsto U^{(\varpi)}(m)$ gives rise to a bijection $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)\widetilde{\to}\pi_0(U^{(\varpi)})$.

Step 3. *The statement of the proposition is true.* Indeed, let $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ be a $\beta$-morphism of first (resp. second) type. Then the induced map $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ (resp. $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(c(U))$) takes an element $m'$ to the element $m = \exp(\frac{\beta}{k_U})m'$ (resp. $\exp(\frac{\overline{\beta}}{k_U})m'^c$), and a point $((x, h_x), b) \in U^{(\varpi')}$ to the point $((x, h_x), b + \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i) \in U^{(\varpi)}$ (resp. $((c(x), h^c_{c(x)}), -b - \mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i) \in c(U)^{(\varpi)}$). If the former point lies in $U^{(\varpi')}(m')$, then $h_x(m') = e^{\frac{b}{k_U}}$. It follows that

$$h_x(m) = h_x(\exp(\frac{\beta}{k_U})m') = e^{\frac{\mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i}{k_U}} h_x(m') = e^{\frac{b+\mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i}{k_U}}$$

$$(\text{resp. } h^c_{c(x)}(m) = h^c_{c(x)}(\exp(\frac{\overline{\beta}}{k_U})m'^c) = e^{\frac{-\mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i}{k_U}} \overline{h_x(m')} = e^{\frac{-b-\mathrm{Im}(\beta(0))i}{k_U}})$$

and, therefore, the latter point lies in $U^{(\varpi)}(m)$ (resp. $c(U)^{(\varpi)}(m)$). This implies the claim. □

Proposition 5.2.2 implies that, for any pair of nonempty connected open subsets $U \subset V$, $k_V$ divides $k_U$. We can therefore define a map

$$\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(V) : m \mapsto m^{\frac{k_U}{k_V}} .$$

(There exists a unique element of $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(V)$ whose restriction to $U$ is $m^{\frac{k_U}{k_V}}$, and it is denoted here in the same way.) This map is compatible with the canonical map $\pi_0(U^{(\varpi)}) \to \pi_0(V^{(\varpi)})$. Thus, if we extend the definition of to arbitrary open subsets $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$ by $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U) = \coprod_{i\in\pi_0(U)} \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U_i)$, where $\{U_i\}_{i\in\pi_0(U)}$ is the set of connected components of $U$, then the correspondence $U \mapsto \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ is a cosheaf of sets, denoted by $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}_X$, and the family of them is a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-cosheaf of sets on the $\mathbf{C}$-analytic $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, denoted by $\overline{\Upsilon}_X$.

**Corollary 5.2.3.** *The above construction gives rise to an isomorphism of* $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-*cosheaves of sets on the* $\mathbf{C}$-*analytic* $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-*space* $X_{\mathbf{C}}$

$$\overline{\Upsilon}_X\widetilde{\to}\overline{\pi}_{0,X} .$$ □

**Remarks 5.2.4.** (i) Here is an example of a connected distinguished log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space $X$ over the log point $\mathbf{pt}$ whose space $\overline{X^{\log}}$ is also connected (i.e., $k_X = 1$) but $e_X = 3$. Consider the affine algebraic curves $\mathcal{X}_i = \mathrm{Spec}(A_i)$, $0 \le i \le 2$, where $A_i$ is the quotient of the ring of polynomials in two variables $\mathbf{C}\left[\frac{T_0}{T_i}, \frac{T_1}{T_i}, \frac{T_2}{T_i}\right]$ by the ideal generated by the element $\left(\frac{T_0}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_1}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_2}{T_i}\right)^3$, and provide $\mathcal{X}_i$ with the log structure generated by the variables. Furthermore, let $\zeta$ be a nontrivial cubic root of one and, for $0 \le i \ne j \le 2$, let $\mathcal{X}_{ij} = \mathrm{Spec}(A_{ij})$ denote the open subset of $\mathcal{X}_i$ where the function $\frac{T_j}{T_i}$ is invertible. We construct a connected log algebraic curve $\mathcal{X}$ by gluing the log curves $\mathcal{X}_i$'s along the following isomorphisms $A_{10}\widetilde{\to}A_{01}$ : $(\frac{T_0}{T_1}, \frac{T_2}{T_1}) \mapsto (\zeta\frac{T_1}{T_0}, \frac{T_2}{T_0})$, $A_{20}\widetilde{\to}A_{02} : (\frac{T_0}{T_2}, \frac{T_1}{T_2}) \mapsto (\zeta\frac{T_2}{T_0}, \frac{T_1}{T_0})$, and $A_{21}\widetilde{\to}A_{12} : (\frac{T_0}{T_2}, \frac{T_1}{T_2}) \mapsto$

$(\frac{T_0}{T_1}, \zeta\frac{T_2}{T_1})$. There is a morphism of log analytic spaces $X = \mathcal{X}^h \to \mathbf{pt}$ that takes a fixed generating element $\alpha$ for $\mathbf{pt}$ to the element $\left(\frac{T_0}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_1}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_2}{T_i}\right)^3$ in $M(\mathcal{X}_i)$. Then $\overline{M}^{(tors)}(X)$ is a cyclic group of order three generated by the image of the element $\frac{T_0}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_1}{T_i} \cdot \frac{T_2}{T_i}$, and the corresponding cocycle $\{\zeta_{ij}\}_{0\le i,j\le 2}$ on the open covering $\{\mathcal{X}_i^h\}_{0\le i\le 2}$ of $X$ is defined by the following values for $i < j$: $\zeta_{01} = \zeta_{02} = \zeta_{12} = \zeta^2$. This cocycle is not a coboundary because the equality $\zeta_{01} \cdot \zeta_{12} = \zeta_{02}$ does not hold.

(ii) It follows from the proof of Proposition 5.2.1 and the definition of the sets $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ that, if for any étale morphism $U \to X_{\mathbf{C}}$ with connected $U$ that admits a strict étale morphism in a log space of the form from Definition 5.1.1, then $k_U = e_U$ and, for any étale morphism $V \to U$ with connected $V$, one has $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(V) \widetilde{\to} \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$.

5.3. **Description of the sheaves $R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$.** Recall that, by [KN99, Lemma (1.5)], for any abelian sheaf $F$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and any $q \ge 0$, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$R^q\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(F)) \widetilde{\to} F(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \ ,$$

where $F(q) = F \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathbf{Z}(q)_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. This is automatically extended to abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $F$ on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space and gives an isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves. (For such $F$, one should define $F(q) = F \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\mathbf{Z}}(q)_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$.) The following theorem is an analog of the above for the map of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $\overline{\tau} : \overline{X^{\log}} \to X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$.

For a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $F$ on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, let $F^{\Upsilon}$ denote the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf whose set of sections over an open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$ is the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-set of maps $\overline{\Upsilon}(U) \to F(U)$. Of course, if $F$ is an abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf, then so is $F^{\Upsilon}$. By Corollary 5.2.3, for any $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ there is a canonical isomorphism of abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $\underline{\Lambda}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$ on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. We now set

$$\overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X/R} = \overline{M}_{X/R}/\overline{M}^{(tors)}_{X/R} \ .$$

**Theorem 5.3.1.** *For every locally constant $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $F$ on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and every $q \ge 0$, there is an isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves*

$$R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(F)) \widetilde{\to} F^{\Upsilon}(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \ .$$

We use a construction from the proof of [KN99], Lemma (1.5)]. For a topological $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $T$, let $\mathcal{R}_T$ and $\mathcal{S}_T$ denote the abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves of continuous functions on $T$ with values in the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-groups $i\mathbf{R}$ and $S^1$, respectively (see Example 4.3.2(iii)). Notice that the exponential map $b \mapsto \exp(b)$ represents $\mathcal{R}_T$ as an extension of $\mathcal{S}_T$ by the sheaf $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_T$. We now apply this to the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\overline{X^{\log}}$. The homomorphism of sheaves $\tau^{-1}(M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \to \mathcal{S}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ that takes $m \in M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ to the function $(x, h_x) \mapsto h_x(m)$ induces a homomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \to \mathcal{S}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ which gives rise to an extension $\mathcal{L}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ of $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(M^{gr}_X)$ by $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$. The restriction of the above homomorphism to the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-subsheaf $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{O}^*_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})$ is the homomorphism $f \mapsto \frac{f}{|f|}$ from the latter to $\mathcal{S}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$, and it lifts to the homomorphism $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \to \mathcal{R}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} : f \mapsto \mathrm{Im}(f)i$. Thus, we get a commutative diagram of homomorphisms of abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves with exact rows

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \longrightarrow & \underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{R}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \xrightarrow{\exp} & \mathcal{S}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \| & & \uparrow & & \uparrow & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{L}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \xrightarrow{\exp} & \overline{\tau}^{-1}(M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \| & & \uparrow & & \uparrow & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & \longrightarrow & \overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) & \xrightarrow{\exp} & \overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{O}^*_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) & \longrightarrow & 0 \end{array}$$

The above construction is a natural extension of that from [KN99, (1.4)] for the space $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and, in fact, there is a canonical isomorphism $\nu^{-1}(\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}})\widetilde{\to}\mathcal{L}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$, where $\nu$ is the topological covering map $\overline{X^{\log}} \to X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is the abelian sheaf on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ from [KN99] and denoted there just by $\mathcal{L}$.

**Examples 5.3.2.** (i) Consider the log space $\mathbf{pt}_R$. For every $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, the homomorphism of groups of global sections $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)}_R = \mathcal{L}(\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R) \to M^{gr}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is surjective. Indeed, the pair consisting of the function $\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R \to i\mathbf{R} : (h, b) \mapsto b$ in $\mathcal{R}(\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R)$ and the element $\varpi$ in $\tau^{(\varpi)-1}(M^{gr}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}})(\mathbf{pt}^{(\varpi)}_R)$ defines an element $\log(\varpi) \in \mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)}_R$ with $\exp(\log(\varpi)) = \varpi$, and the surjectivity claim follows from that of the exponential map $\exp : R_{\mathbf{C}} \to R^*_{\mathbf{C}}$. Furthermore, for a $\beta$-morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ (of any type), the corresponding map $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)}_R \to \mathcal{L}^{(\varpi')}_R$ takes $\log(\varpi)$ to $\log(\varpi') + \beta$. The lift of $\log(\varpi)$ to $\mathcal{L}(X^{(\varpi)})$ will be denoted in the same way by $\log(\varpi)$ .

(ii) For a connected open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and elements $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, the pair consisting of the function $U^{(\varpi)}(m) \to i\mathbf{R} : ((x, h_x), b) \mapsto \frac{b}{k_U}$ in $\mathcal{R}(U^{(\varpi)}(m))$ and the element $m$ in $\tau^{(\varpi)-1}(M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})(U^{(\varpi)}(m))$ defines an element of $\mathcal{L}(U^{(\varpi)}(m))$, denoted by $\log(m)$, with $\exp(\log(m)) = m$. Notice that the restriction of $\log(\varpi)$ from (i) to $U^{(\varpi)}(m)$ coincides with $k_U \cdot \log(m)$. For a $\beta$-morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ (of any type), the corresponding map $\mathcal{L}(U^{(\varpi)}) \to \mathcal{L}(U^{(\varpi')})$ (resp. $\mathcal{L}(U^{(\varpi)}) \to \mathcal{L}(c(U)^{(\varpi')})$) takes $\log(m)$ to $\log(m') + \frac{\beta}{k_U}$, where $m'$ is the preimage of $m$ with respect to the corresponding map $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ (resp. $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(c(U)) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$).

*Proof of Theorem 5.3.1.* First of all, if $q = 0$, there is a canonical isomorphism $\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(F))\widetilde{\to}F^{\Upsilon}$ (it was already mentioned in Example 4.3.4).

Applying the left exact functor $\overline{\tau}_*$ to the second row of the above diagram, we get a homomorphism $\psi : \underline{\mathbf{Z}}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} M^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \to R^1\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\mathbf{Z}}(1)_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$. Since the exponential map $\exp : \mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \to \mathcal{O}^*_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is surjective, $\psi$ goes through a homomorphism from $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \overline{M}^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Furthermore, since $\exp(\log(\varpi)) = \varpi$ for all $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, $\psi$ is trivial on the image of the homomorphism $\overline{M}^{gr}_{R_{\mathbf{C}}} \to \overline{M}^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, i.e., it goes through a homomorphism from $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \overline{M}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Finally, if $U$ is a sufficiently small nonempty connected open subset of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, then $k_U = e_U$ and, therefore, the image of an element $m \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ in $\overline{M}^{gr}(U)$ generates the subgroup $\overline{M}^{(tors)}(U)$. Since $\exp(\log(m)) = m$, it follows that $\psi$ goes through a homomorphism from $\underline{\mathbf{Z}}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.

Thus, $\psi$ gives rise to a homomorphism

$$\underline{\mathbf{Z}}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}(-1) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \to R^1\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\mathbf{Z}}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \ .$$

Using the cup product, we get a homomorphism

$$F^{\Upsilon}(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \to R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(F)) \ .$$

Since $F$ is locally constant, Lemma 5.1.3 implies that, in order to show that this is an isomorphism, it suffices to check it on stalks of both sheaves. This is trivial. □

The following statement is an analog of [SGA7, Exp. 1, 3.3] (see also [Nak98, 3.5]).

**Corollary 5.3.3.** *Given a morphism of germs $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, let $\mathcal{Y}$ be a scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ such that $\mathcal{Y}$ is regular, flat over $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, the support of the special fiber $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$ is the divisor with normal crossings, and that of the closed fiber $\mathcal{Y}_s$ is a union of some of the irreducible components of $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}$. We provide $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ with the log structure $M_{\mathcal{Y}^h_s}$ induced by the canonical log structure on $\mathcal{Y}$. Then there are canonical isomorphisms of sheaves of $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}$*

$$R^q\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} \mathbf{Z}(-q)^{\Upsilon}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_{\overline{s}}/\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1}} \ .$$

*Proof.* By Corollary 3.3.3, the log structure $M_{\mathcal{Y}^h_s}$ coincides with that induced by the canonical log structure on the distinguished formal scheme $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}$. It follows that the log space $\mathcal{Y}^h_s$ is distinguished and, therefore, the required fact follows from Theorems 2.5.2 and 5.3.1. □

5.4. **A distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.** Let $U$ be a nonempty connected open subset of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. For $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, let $t^{(\varpi)}_U$ be the image in $\mathcal{O}(U)$ of an element $m^{(\varpi)}_U \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ (the latter is defined up to a multiplication by $k_U$-th root of one). Then $(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^{k_U} = \widetilde{\varpi}$. For $\lambda = \frac{j}{k_U}$ with $0 \le j < rk_U$, let $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$ denote the $\mathbf{C}$-vector subspace of $\mathcal{O}(U)$ generated by the element $(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j$. If a rational number $0 \le \lambda < r$ is not of the form $\frac{j}{k_U}$ with $0 \le j < rk_U$, we set $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) = 0$. By Proposition 5.2.1, for any bigger connected open subset $V$ the restriction homomorphism $\mathcal{O}(V) \to \mathcal{O}(U)$ induces an isomorphism $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(V) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$. It follows that the spaces $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$ define a sheaf of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces of dimension at most one $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$. Given a $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and a nonempty connected open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, if $\varphi$ is of first type, we define an isomorphism $\varphi_{\mathcal{C}} : \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi')}_\lambda(U)$ by $\varphi_{\mathcal{C}}(a(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j) = a\exp(-\lambda\beta)(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j$ for $a \in \mathbf{C}$, and if $\varphi$ is of second type, we define an isomorphism $\varphi_{\mathcal{C}} : \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi')}_\lambda(c(U))$ by $\varphi_{\mathcal{C}}(a(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j) = \overline{a}\exp(-\lambda\beta)((t^{(\varpi)}_U)^c)^j$ for $a \in \mathbf{C}$. This provides each $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ with the structure of a $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varphi = c^{(\varpi)}$ for $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$, then $\beta = 0$ and, therefore, the action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ coincides with the complex conjugation $f \mapsto f^c$. Notice that the set $V = \{x \in X_{\mathbf{C}} \big| \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda,x} \neq 0\}$ is $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-invariant Zariski open subset of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the restriction of $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ to $U$ is a locally constant abelian $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf (to which Theorem 5.3.1 can be applied).

The direct sum $\mathcal{C}(U) = \oplus_\lambda \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$ is a local $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-algebra, whose maximal ideal is generated by the element $t^{(\varpi)}_U$. It does not depend on the choice of the element $\varpi$, and it can be defined as the $R$-algebra generated by the images in $\mathcal{O}(U)$ of the elements $m \in M(U)$ with the property that $m^k \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. Furthermore, it is a free module of rank $k_U$ over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$, and the $\mathcal{C}(U)$'s define a sheaf of modules $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

**Theorem 5.4.1.** *(i) The $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ has the structure of a single distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$;*

*(ii) there is a canonical isomorphism of distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$*

$$\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} \ .$$

Notice that $\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) = \mathbf{F}^{\Upsilon}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is an $\mathbf{F}\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-quasi-unipotent module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and, therefore, Proposition 4.5.3 implies that the right hand side in (ii) is a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

*Proof.* (i) For $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and a connected open subset $U \subset X_{\mathbf{C}}$, the $\mathbf{C}$-linear operators $\delta_\varpi : \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) \to \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$, defined by $\delta_\varpi((t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j) = \lambda(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j$, where $j = k_U\lambda$, provide $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$ and $\mathcal{C}(U)$ with the structure of a $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. Moreover, there is a canonical isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\mathcal{C}(U)_I \widetilde{\to} \widetilde{\mathcal{C}(U)}$ for $I = \{0, \frac{1}{k_U}, \dots, \frac{k_U-1}{k_U}\}$. One also has $\sigma^{(\varpi)}((t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j) = \exp(-2\pi i\lambda)(t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j$, and this coincides with $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)((t^{(\varpi)}_U)^j)$. Thus, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is a single distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

Suppose now that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$. For $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, we define an automorphism $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$ of $\mathcal{C}(U)$ as follows. Each element of $\mathcal{C}(U)$ has the form $\alpha = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} f_j(\varpi)t^j$ with $f_j(\varpi) \in R_{\mathbf{C}}$, where $k = k_U$ and $t = t^{(\varpi)}_U$, and we set

$$\vartheta^{(\varpi)}(\alpha) = \overline{f}_0(\varpi) + \sum_{j=1}^{k-1} \overline{f}_{k-j}(\varpi)t^j \ .$$

It is easy to verify that, for any morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ as above, one has $\varphi_{\mathcal{C}} \circ \vartheta^{(\varpi)} = \vartheta^{(\varpi')} \circ \varphi_{\mathcal{C}}$. This means that $\vartheta$ is an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism of $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. It follows that $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is a distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ as well.

(ii) Let $U$ be a connected open subset of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, and let $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. Given an element $m = m^{(\varpi)}_U \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, a basis of the free $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module $\mathcal{C}(U)$ is formed by the elements $t^j_m$ for $0 \le j \le k_U - 1$, where $t_m$ is the image of $m$ in $\mathcal{C}(U)$. We define a homomorphism of free $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules of the same rank

$$\mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m} : \mathcal{C}(U) \to \mathrm{Hom}(\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U), \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathrm{Hom}(\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U), R_{\mathbf{C}})$$

by $\mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m}(t^j_m)(m') = \left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j$, where for elements $m, m' \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, $\frac{m}{m'}$ denotes the $k_U$-th root of one $\zeta$ such that $m = \zeta m'$. If $m'' \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$, then $t_{m''} = \left(\frac{m''}{m}\right) t_m$ and, therefore, one has

$$\mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m}(t^j_{m''})(m') = \left(\frac{m''}{m}\right)^j \mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m}(t^j_m)(m') = \left(\frac{m''}{m'}\right)^j = \mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m''}(t^j_{m''})(m') \ .$$

This means that the homomorphism $\mu^{(\varpi)}_{U,m}$ does not depend on the choice of $m$. We can therefore denote it by $\mu^{(\varpi)}_U$. Here is the formula for the image of an arbitrary element $\alpha \in \mathcal{C}(U)$, represented in the form $\alpha = f_0(\varpi) + \sum_{j=1}^{k_U-1} f_j(\varpi)t_m^j$ as in (i),

$$\mu_U^{(\varpi)}(\alpha)(m') = f_0(\varpi) + \sum_{j=1}^{k_U-1} f_j(\varpi)\left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j \ .$$

The matrix of the $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-linear operator $\mu_U^{(\varpi)}$ is a Vandermonde one and, therefore, $\mu_U^{(\varpi)}$ is an isomorphism.

If $V$ is a bigger connected open subset, then the map $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(V)$ takes $m$ to $n = m^{\frac{k_U}{k_V}}$ and $m'$ to $n' = m'^{\frac{k_U}{k_V}}$, and one has $t_n\big|_U = t_m^{\frac{k_U}{k_V}}$. We get

$$\mu_V^{(\varpi)}(t_n^j)(n') = \left(\frac{n}{n'}\right)^j = \left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^{\frac{jk_U}{k_V}} = \mu_U^{(\varpi)}(t_n^j\big|_U)(m') \ .$$

This means that the isomorphisms $\mu_U^{(\varpi)}$ and $\mu_V^{(\varpi)}$ are compatible, and we get an isomorphism of sheaves $\mu^{(\varpi)} : \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \tau_*^{(\varpi)}(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$. We have to verify that it gives rise to an isomorphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

First of all, it is an isomorphism of $R$-modules, by the construction. Furthermore, set $\gamma_j = \mu_U^{(\varpi)}(t_m^j)$. By the same construction, one has $\gamma_j(m') = \left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j$. Since $\sigma^{(\varpi)}(m') = e^{\frac{2\pi i}{k_U}}m'$, it follows that $\sigma^{(\varpi)}(\gamma_j) = e^{-\frac{2\pi ij}{k_U}}\gamma_j$, i.e., the elements $\gamma_j$, which generate the free $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module $\mathrm{Hom}(\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U), R_{\mathbf{C}})$ are eigenvectors with eigenvalues $e^{-\frac{2\pi ij}{k_U}}$, respectively. By the construction of the operator $\delta_\varpi$, one gets $\delta_\varpi(\gamma_j) = \frac{j}{k_U}\gamma_j$. Since $\delta_\varpi(t_m^j) = \frac{j}{k_U}t_m^j$, it follows that $\mu^{(\varpi)}$ is an isomorphism of sheaves of modules over the ring $W(R)$.

Suppose now we are given a $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ of first (resp. second) type. The corresponding map $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ (resp. $\Upsilon^{(\varpi')}(U) \to \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(c(U))$) takes $m'$ to $\exp(\frac{\beta}{k_U})m'$ (resp. $\exp(\frac{\overline{\beta}}{k_U})m'^c$). It follows that the homomorphism $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}(U) \to \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi')}(U)$ (resp. $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}(c(U)) \to \mathcal{C}^{(\varpi')}(U)$) takes $t_m$ to $t_{\gamma m}$ (resp. $t_{\gamma m^c}$), where $\gamma = \exp\left(-\frac{\beta}{k_U}\right)$ and therefore, for $m, m' \in \Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(U)$ (resp. $\Upsilon^{(\varpi)}(c(U))$), one has

$$\mu_U^{(\varpi')}(t_{\gamma m}^j)(\gamma m') = \left(\frac{\gamma m}{\gamma m'}\right)^j = \left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j = \mu_U^{(\varpi)}(t_m^j)(m')$$

$$(\text{resp. } \mu_U^{(\varpi')}(t_{\gamma m^c}^j)(\gamma m'^c) = \left(\frac{\gamma m^c}{\gamma m'^c}\right)^j = \overline{\left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j} = \overline{\mu_{c(U)}^{(\varpi)}(t_m^j)(m')}\ ) \ .$$

Thus, the isomorphism considered is a map of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves.

It remains to verify that, in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the homomorphism $\mu^{(\varpi)}$ commutes with the action of the automorphism $\vartheta^{(\varpi)}$. For the element $\alpha \in \mathcal{C}(U)$ as above, one has

$$(\mu_U^{(\varpi)} \circ \vartheta^{(\varpi)})(\alpha)(m') = \overline{f}_0(\varpi) + \sum_{j=1}^{k_U-1} \overline{f}_{k-j}\left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^j \ .$$

On the other hand, one has

$$(\vartheta^{(\varpi)} \circ \mu_U^{(\varpi)})(\alpha)(m') = \overline{f}_0(\varpi) + \sum_{j=1}^{k_U-1} \overline{f}_j\left(\frac{m}{m'}\right)^{-j} \ .$$

It is easy to see that the right hand sides of both equalities coincide. □

**Corollary 5.4.2.** *There are canonical isomorphisms of sheaves of distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$*

$$R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \ . \qquad \square$$

Suppose that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$. As at the end of §4.5, the single distinguished $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ defines a $\Pi(R)$-sheaf $\mathcal{C}_X$, which is a distinguished $W(R)$-module on $X$. Theorem 5.4.1 implies that, for an open subset $U \subset X$, one has $\mathcal{C}_X(U) = \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}(\rho^{-1}(U))^{c=1}$ and, in particular, the $W(R)$-module $\mathcal{C}_X$ is single. The $\mathbf{R}\Pi(R)$-quasi-unipotent module on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ that corresponds to $\mathcal{C}_X$ is $\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{R}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$.

**Remark 5.4.3.** It follows from Remark 5.2.4(ii), that in its situation there is a canonical isomorphism $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}(U) \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}(V)$.

## 6. The analytification of vanishing cycles for log smooth formal schemes

6.1. **Formulation of results.** The purpose of this section is to show that, for a formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ and any finite étale abelian sheaf $\Lambda$ on the spectrum of $K$, the analytifications of the complexes $R\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, as defined in [Ber96b] and [Ber15], are described in the same way as in Theorem 2.5.2. Here $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}$ is the pullback of $\Lambda$ to the generic fiber $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ of $\mathfrak{X}$. We already mentioned that the correspondence that takes such a sheaf $\Lambda$ to the discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $K^{(\varpi)} \mapsto \Lambda^{(\varpi)}$ is an equivalence of categories.

On the other hand, the nearby and vanishing cycles functors $\Theta$ and $\Psi_\eta$ from [Ber96b] and [Ber15] are naturally extended to the category of étale abelian $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ and take values in the category of étale abelian $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_s$ and $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$, respectively. Namely, the functor $\Theta$ takes an étale abelian $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $L : K^{(\varpi)} \mapsto L^{(\varpi)}$ to the functor on $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose value at $K^{(\varpi)}$ is $\Theta(L^{(\varpi)})$ with the evident homomorphisms $\Theta(L^{(\varpi)}) \to \Theta(L^{(\varpi')})$ for morphisms $K^{(\varpi)} \to K^{(\varpi')}$ in $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$. Notice that the $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $\Theta(L)$ is univocal and, in particular, it is isomorphic to a trivial $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf. Similarly, the functor $\Psi_\eta$ takes $L$ to the functor on $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ whose value at $K^{(\varpi)}$ is $\Psi_\eta(L^{(\varpi)})$ constructed using the algebraic closure $K^{(\varpi)}$ of $K$, and each morphism $K^{(\varpi)} \to K^{(\varpi')}$ induces the evident homomorphism $\Psi_\eta(L^{(\varpi)}) \to \Psi_\eta(L^{(\varpi')})$.

Thus, instead of working with étale abelian sheaves on the spectrum of $K$, we work with discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules. Notice that there is a natural faithful functor $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-Mod$\to \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-Mod. In particular, in the situation of Example 4.2.2(ii) every discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ defines $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $\Lambda_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\underline{\Lambda}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ on the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$, respectively.

For an integer $n \geq 1$, let $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]$-Mod denote the category of discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules which are also $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$-modules, and let $D_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$ denote the derived category of complexes of discrete $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]$-modules with finite cohomology modules.

**Theorem 6.1.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme, and set $X = \mathfrak{X}^h_s$. Then for any $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^+_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$, the following is true*

(i) *there is a canonical isomorphism of complexes of* $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$*-sheaves*

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_*(\underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \ ;$$

(ii) *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$*, then* $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\tau_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}})$*;*

(iii) *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$*, then* $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle}(R\tau_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}))$*.*

The proof of Theorem 6.1.1 is based on log étale cohomology developed by Kazuya Kato and his collaborators for fs log schemes. We refer to [Ill02] for a survey of log étale cohomology.

6.2. **Kummer étale morphisms of log special formal schemes.** Recall (see [Ill02, 1.6]) that a morphism of fs log schemes $\mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{X}$ is said to be Kummer étale if locally in the étale topology it admits a chart $P \to \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{X})$ and $Q \to \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Y})$ with fs monoids $P$ and $Q$ such that (1) the homomorphism $P \to Q$ is injective and $P = Q \cap P^{gr}$; (2) the cokernel of the homomorphism $P^{gr} \to Q^{gr}$ is finite of order invertible on $\mathcal{Y}$; (3) the induced morphism of schemes $\mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{X} \otimes_{\mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{Z}[P])} \mathrm{Spec}(\mathbf{Z}[Q])$ is étale. If both schemes are of locally finite type over $\mathbf{F}$, then the induced map $(\mathcal{Y}^h_{\mathbf{C}})^{\log} \to (\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}})^{\log}$ is a local homeomorphism. Kummer étale morphisms to an fs log scheme $\mathcal{X}$ give rise to a Kummer étale site $\mathcal{X}_{k\text{ét}}$ of $\mathcal{X}$ and, if $\mathcal{X}$ is of locally finite type over $\mathbf{F}$, there is a morphism of sites $(\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}})^{\log} \to \mathcal{X}_{k\text{ét}}$.

Let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation. A morphism of fs $k^\circ$-log special formal schemes $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ is said to be *Kummer étale* if it is of locally finite type and, for any ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ of $\mathfrak{X}$, the morphism of log schemes $(\mathfrak{Y}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}}/\mathcal{J}\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{Y}}) \to (\mathfrak{X}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}/\mathcal{J})$ is Kummer étale. The following is an analog of [Ber96b, Proposition 2.1].

**Proposition 6.2.1.** *Let* $\mathfrak{X}$ *be an fs* $k^\circ$*-log special formal scheme. Then*

(i) *the correspondence* $\mathfrak{Y} \mapsto \mathfrak{Y}_s$ *gives rise to an equivalence between the category of fs* $k^\circ$*-log special formal schemes Kummer étale over* $\mathfrak{X}$ *and the category of fs* $k^\circ_1$*-log schemes Kummer étale over* $\mathfrak{X}_s$*;*

(ii) *If* $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ *is a Kummer étale morphism, then* $\varphi_\eta(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta) = \pi^{-1}(\varphi_s(\mathfrak{Y}_s))$ *and, in particular,* $\varphi_\eta(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta)$ *is a closed analytic domain in* $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$*;*

(iii) *if the* $k^\circ$*-log structures on* $\mathfrak{X}$ *and* $\mathfrak{Y}$ *are vertical, then for any Kummer étale morphism* $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ *the induced morphism of* $k$*-analytic spaces* $\varphi_\eta : \mathfrak{Y}_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ *is quasi-étale.*

*Proof.* (i) Since Kummer étale morphisms are log étale, fully faithfulness of the functor follows from the definition of log étale morphisms (see [Kato89, 3.3]). Therefore, in order to show that it is essentially surjective, it suffices to construct a lifting of a Kummer étale morphism $f : \mathcal{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}_s$ locally in the étale topology. We may therefore assume that the log structures on $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathcal{Y}$ are defined by charts $P \to \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$ and $Q \to \mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Y})$ and the morphism $f$ is defined by an injective homomorphism of fs monoids $P \to Q$ such that (a) the image of $P$ contains the image of a generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $k^{\circ\circ}$ of $k^\circ$, (b) the cokernel of the homomorphism $P^{gr} \to Q^{gr}$ is finite of orders prime to $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k})$, (c) $P$ coincides with the preimage of $Q$ in $P^{gr}$ with respect the latter homomorphism, and (d) the induced morphism of schemes $\mathcal{Y} \to \mathcal{X}' = \mathfrak{X}_s \otimes_{\mathrm{Spec}(\widetilde{k}[P])} \mathrm{Spec}(\widetilde{k}[Q])$ is étale. The scheme $\mathcal{X}'$ is the closed fiber $\mathfrak{X}'_s$ of the special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}' = \mathfrak{X} \times_{\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{P\})} \mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{Q\})$ and, by [Ber96b, 2.1(i)], the morphism $\mathcal{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}'_s$ lifts to an étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}'$. If we provide $\mathfrak{Y}$ with the log structure defined by the induced homomorphism $Q \to \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y})$, we get the required Kummer étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$.

(ii) By [Ber96b, 2.1(ii)], the required property holds for the étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}'$ (with $\mathfrak{X}'$ from the proof of (i)). It suffices therefore to verify this property for the morphism $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ which is a base change of the morphism $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{Q\}) \to \mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{P\})$. Since the latter morphism is finite and surjective, then so is the induced morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces $\mathcal{M}(k\{Q\}) \to \mathcal{M}(k\{P\})$, and the required fact follows.

(iii) By [Ber96b, 2.3(iii)], the morphism $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}'_\eta$ is quasi-étale. Let $p$ be an element of $P$ whose image in $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X})$ coincides with the image of $\varpi$. Then $\mathfrak{X}' = \mathfrak{X} \times_{\mathrm{Spf}(A)} \mathrm{Spf}(B)$, where $A = k^\circ\{P\}/(p - \varpi)$ and $B = k^\circ\{Q\}/(p - \varpi)k^\circ\{Q\}$. In particular, the morphism $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is a base change of the morphism of $k$-affinoid spaces $\mathcal{M}(B) \to \mathcal{M}(A)$. By the assumption, the monoids $P$ and $Q$ are vertical. It follows that their images in $A$ and $B$ consist of invertible elements and coincide with the images of $P^{gr}$ and $Q^{gr}$, respectively. This implies that the morphism $\mathcal{M}(B) \to \mathcal{M}(A)$ is étale and, therefore, the morphism $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is quasi-étale. □

Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be an fs vertical $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme. We fix a functor $\mathfrak{U}_s \mapsto \mathfrak{U}$ from the category of fs $k^\circ_1$-log schemes Kummer étale over $\mathfrak{X}_s$ to the category of fs $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme Kummer étale over $\mathfrak{X}$, which is inverse to that of Proposition 6.2.1(i). By the proposition, the composition of the functor $\mathfrak{U}_s \mapsto \mathfrak{U}$ with the functor $\mathfrak{U} \mapsto \mathfrak{U}_\eta$ induces a morphism of sites $\nu^{\log} : \mathfrak{X}_{\eta_{q\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}_{s_{k\text{ét}}}$, which is an analog of the morphism of sites $\nu : \mathfrak{X}_{\eta_{q\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}_{s_{\text{ét}}}$ from [Ber96b, §2]. In this way we get a commutative diagram of morphisms of sites

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathfrak{X}_{\eta_{\text{ét}}} & \xleftarrow{\ \mu\ } & \mathfrak{X}_{\eta_{q\text{ét}}} & \xrightarrow{\ \nu\ } & \mathfrak{X}_{s_{\text{ét}}} \\ & & & {\scriptstyle\nu^{\log}}\searrow & \uparrow{\scriptstyle\varepsilon} \\ & & & & \mathfrak{X}_{s_{k\text{ét}}} \end{array}$$

The nearby cycles functor from [Ber96b] is the functor $\Theta : \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{\eta_{\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{s_{\text{ét}}}$, defined by $\Theta(F) = \nu_*(\mu^* F)$, and the log nearby cycles functor is the functor $\Theta^{\log} : \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{\eta_{\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{s_{k\text{ét}}}$, defined by $\Theta^{\log}(F) = \nu^{\log}_*(\mu^* F)$. They are analogs of the usual (from [SGA7]) and logarithmic (from [Nak98]) algebraic geometry functors. Namely, for an fs vertical $k^\circ$-log scheme $\mathcal{X}$, there are canonical morphisms of schemes $\mathcal{X}_\eta \overset{j}{\hookrightarrow} \mathcal{X} \overset{i}{\longleftarrow} \mathcal{X}_s$ and of log schemes $\mathcal{X}_\eta \overset{j^{\log}}{\hookrightarrow} \mathcal{X} \overset{i^{\log}}{\longleftarrow} \mathcal{X}_s$. The above functors $\Theta$ and $\Theta^{\log}$ are analogs of the functors $\mathcal{X}^{\sim}_{\eta_{\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{s_{\text{ét}}} : \mathcal{F} \mapsto i^*(j_*\mathcal{F})$ and $\mathcal{X}^{\sim}_{\eta_{\text{ét}}} \to \mathfrak{X}^{\sim}_{s_{k\text{ét}}} : \mathcal{F} \mapsto i^{\log *}(j^{\log}_* \mathcal{F})$, which will be denoted $\Theta$ and $\Theta^{\log}$, respectively, as well.

The following is a straightforward generalization of [Ber94, 4.1 and 4.2].

**Lemma 6.2.2.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be an fs vertical $k^\circ$-log special formal scheme, and let $F$ be an étale sheaf on $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$. Then*

(i) *if $\mathfrak{Y}_s$ is Kummer étale over $\mathfrak{X}_s$, then $\Theta^{\log}(F)(\mathfrak{Y}_s) = F(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta)$;*

(ii) *if $F$ is abelian, then the sheaf $R^q\Theta^{\log}(F)$ is associated to the presheaf $\mathfrak{Y}_s \mapsto H^q(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, F)$;*

(iii) *if $F$ is abelian soft, then the sheaf $\Theta^{\log}(F)$ is flabby.* □

**Corollary 6.2.3.** *(i) For a Kummer étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ and an étale abelian sheaf on $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$, one has $R^q\Theta^{\log}(F)\big|_{\mathfrak{Y}_s} \widetilde{\to} R^q\Theta^{\log}(F\big|_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$;*

*(ii) for a morphism of fs vertical $k^\circ$-log special formal schemes $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ and $F^\cdot \in D^+(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta)$, one has $R\Theta^{\log}(R\varphi_{\eta *}(F^\cdot)) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi_{s*}(R\Theta^{\log}(F^\cdot))$.* □

6.3. **Nearby cycles of formally log smooth formal schemes.** We turn back to our field $K$. Every discrete $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ defines an étale $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf $\Lambda_K$ on $\mathrm{Spec}(K)$. Given $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, the Kummer étale sheaf $\Theta^{\log}(\Lambda_K^{(\varpi)})$ on the algebraic log point $\mathrm{pt}_{K_1^\circ}$ is denoted by $\Lambda_{K_1^\circ}^{(\varpi)}$. Furthermore, each morphism $\varpi \to \varpi'$ in $G(K)$ gives rise to a morphism $\Lambda_{K_1^\circ}^{(\varpi)} \to \Lambda_{K_1^\circ}^{(\varpi')}$, and so the correspondence $\varpi \mapsto \Lambda_{K_1^\circ}^{(\varpi)}$ is a Kummer étale $G(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf on $\mathrm{pt}_{K_1^\circ}$. The pullback of the latter to the Kummer étale site $\mathcal{X}_{k\acute{e}t}$ of a log scheme $\mathcal{X}$ over $\mathrm{pt}_{K_1^\circ}$ is denoted by $\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_{k\acute{e}t}}$.

**Theorem 6.3.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be an fs formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme, and $\Lambda^\cdot \in D_c^+(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$. Then there is a canonical isomorphism of complexes of Kummer étale $G(K)$-sheaves*

$$\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,k\acute{e}t}} \widetilde{\to} R\Theta^{\log}(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ .$$

*Proof.* First of all, it suffices to show that $\Lambda^{(\varpi)}_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,k\acute{e}t}} \widetilde{\to} \Theta^{\log}(\Lambda^{(\varpi)}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $R^q\Theta^{\log}(\Lambda^{(\varpi)}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = 0$ for any $q \geq 1$, any finite discrete $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]$-modules $\Lambda$, and any fixed $\varpi$. We may therefore drop $\varpi$ in the superscript. Furthermore, for any $m \geq 1$ the morphism $\mathrm{Spf}(K_{\mathbf{C}}(\varpi_m)^\circ) \to \mathrm{Spf}(K^\circ)$ is Kummer étale and, therefore, so is its base change to $\mathfrak{X}$. Since the statement is local in the Kummer étale topology, this reduces the situation to the case when $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ and the action of $G$ on $\Lambda$ is trivial. Finally, for the same reason, we may assume that $\mathfrak{X}$ is of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ for an fs log smooth scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $K^\circ$ with trivial log structure on $\mathcal{X}_\eta$ and a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$ (see Definition 3.2.3). We may also assume that the log structure on $\mathcal{X}$ is defined by a chart $P_{\mathcal{X}} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}}$ for an fs monoid $P$ with $P^* = \{1\}$ such that, for every $a \in P$ there exist $b \in P$ and $m \geq 1$ with $ab = \varpi^m$.

In order to verify the required property, we use the following facts on the usual functor $\Theta$ (in the above situation):

(1) $\Lambda(-q)_{\mathcal{X}_s} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_{\mathcal{X}_s} \widetilde{\to} R^q\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta})$, where $M_{\mathcal{X}_s} \to \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_s}$ is the log structure induced from that on $\mathcal{X}$ and $\overline{M}^{gr}_{\mathcal{X}_s} = M^{gr}_{\mathcal{X}_s}/\mathcal{O}^*_{\mathcal{X}_s}$ ([Nak98, (2.0.2)]);
(2) $R\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Y}} \widetilde{\to} R\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ ([Ber96b, 3.1]);
(3) there is a spectral sequence $E_2^{p,q} = H^p(\mathfrak{X}_s, R^q\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta, \Lambda)$ functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$ ([Ber96b, 2.2]).

We also use the fact that any Kummer étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ is locally in the Kummer étale topology is of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'} \to \mathfrak{X} = \widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ for a Kummer étale morphism $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$, where $\mathcal{Y}'$ is the preimage of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'_s$.

By Lemma 6.2.2(i), if $\mathfrak{Y}_s$ is Kummer étale over $\mathfrak{X}_s$ then $\Theta^{\log}(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})(\mathfrak{Y}_s) = H^0(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, \Lambda)$. If $\mathfrak{Y} = \widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}$ as above, then $\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_s} \widetilde{\to} \Theta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta})$, by (1), and therefore $\Lambda_{\mathcal{Y}} \widetilde{\to} \Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, by (2). This implies that $H^0(\mathfrak{Y}_s, \Lambda) = H^0(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, \Lambda)$.

Furthermore, by Lemma 6.2.2(ii), the sheaf $R^m\Theta^{\log}(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ for $m \geq 1$ is associated to the presheaf $\mathfrak{Y}_s \mapsto H^m(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, \Lambda)$. We therefore have to show that, given a Kummer étale morphism $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$, there exists a Kummer étale covering $\{\mathcal{X}^{(i)} \to \mathcal{X}'\}_{i \in I}$ such that the induced homomorphisms $H^m((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})_\eta, \Lambda) \to$

$H^m((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}^{(i)}_{/\mathcal{Y}^{(i)}})_\eta, \Lambda)$ are zero for all $m \geq 1$ and $i \in I$. By the spectral sequence (3) applied to $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}$, each group $H^m((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})_\eta, \Lambda)$ has a decreasing filtration $F^{0,m}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}) = H^m((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})_\eta, \Lambda) \supset F^{1,m} \supset \ldots \supset F^{m,m} \supset F^{m+1,m} = 0$ functorial in $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}$ and such that each quotient $F^{p,m}/F^{p+1,m}$ is isomorphic to a subquotient of $E_2^{p,m-p} = H^p(\mathcal{Y}', R^{m-p}\Theta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})_\eta}))$. Thus, it suffices to show that, given $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$ as above, there exists a Kummer étale covering $\{\mathcal{X}^{(i)} \to \mathcal{X}'\}_{i \in I}$ such that the above homomorphism takes $F^{p,m}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})$ in $F^{p+1,m}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}^{(i)}_{/\mathcal{Y}^{(i)}})$ for all $0 \leq p \leq m$ and all $i \in I$. (If so, we can iterate this construction.) In order to show the latter, it suffices to verify that, for every pair $(p,q)$ with $p+q \geq 1$, there exists a Kummer étale covering as above for which all of the homomorphisms $E_2^{p,q}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}) \to E_2^{p,q}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}^{(i)}_{/\mathcal{Y}^{(i)}})$ are zero.

First of all, $E_2^{p,0} = H^p(\mathcal{Y}', \Lambda)$, and so the required fact is true for $q = 0$ (with an étale covering of $\mathcal{X}'$). If $q \geq 1$, we set $\mathcal{X}'' = \mathcal{X}' \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}[P]} \mathbf{Z}[P^{\frac{1}{n}}]$, where $P \to P^{\frac{1}{n}}$ is the homomorphism $P \to P : a \mapsto a^n$. Then $f : \mathcal{X}'' \to \mathcal{X}'$ is a Kummer étale covering and, by (1), the homomorphism $f_s^{-1}(R^q\Theta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'})_\eta}) \to R^q\Theta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}''_{/\mathcal{Y}''})_\eta})$ is zero, and so is the homomorphism $E_2^{p,q}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_{/\mathcal{Y}'}) \to E_2^{p,q}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}''_{/\mathcal{Y}''})$. □

**Corollary 6.3.2.** *In the situation of Theorem 6.3.1, there is a canonical isomorphism* $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varepsilon_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}})$. □

6.4. **Proof of Theorem 6.1.1.** Step 1. *The statement (iii) follows from (ii).* Indeed, this is trivial.

Step 2. *The statement (ii) is true true if the log structure on $\mathfrak{X}$ is fs.* Indeed, by Corollary 6.3.2, there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varepsilon_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}})$. It follows that $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} (R\varepsilon_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}}))^h$. It suffices therefore to show that the canonical homomorphism $(R\varepsilon_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}}))^h \to R\tau_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}})$, induced by the morphism of sites $X^{\log} \to \mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}$, is an isomorphism. For this we may assume that $\Lambda^{\cdot}$ is a just finite discrete $G(K)$-module $\Lambda$, and it suffices to verify isomorphism between $q$-th cohomology groups of both complexes. By [Nak98, (2.0.2)] and [KN99, (1.5)], there are canonical and compatible isomorphisms

$$R^q\varepsilon_*(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_{s\,\text{két}}}) \widetilde{\to} \Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_s}(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_{\mathfrak{X}_s} \text{ and}$$

$$R^q\tau_*(\Lambda_{X^{\log}}) \widetilde{\to} \Lambda_X(-q) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_X \ ,$$

and the claim follows.

Step 3. *The statement (i) is true if $\mathfrak{X}$ is fs.* Indeed, we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. Fix a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$. The induced homomorphism $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0} \to K^\circ : z \mapsto \varpi$ gives rise to an embedding of algebraically closed fields $\mathcal{K}^{\mathrm{a}} \to K^{(\varpi)}$. We consider first the $\varpi$-th part of the $G(K)$-module $\Lambda$ and do not write the superscript $\varpi$ in notations. Let $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta} \to F^{\cdot}$ be a resolution of $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}$ by soft sheaves $F^i$ (see [Ber94, §3]), and let $K_m$ be the extension of $K$ in $K^{(\varpi)}$ of degree $m \geq 1$. Then the pullbacks $F^i_m$ of $F^i$'s are soft sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}_{\eta_m}$, where $\eta_m = \eta_{K_m}$, and, therefore, $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_{\eta_m}} \to F^{\cdot}_m$ is a soft resolution of $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_{\eta_m}}$. By [Ber96b, 2.2(iii)], one has $R\Theta^{K_m}(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_{\eta_m}}) = \Theta^{K_m}(F^{\cdot}_m)$ and, by [Ber15, 3.1.6(ii)], there is a canonical isomorphism $\varinjlim \Theta^{K_m}(F^{\cdot}_m) \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$. By

Step 2, for each $m \geq 1$ there is a canonical isomorphism $\Theta^{K_m}(F^\cdot_m)^h \widetilde{\to} R\tau_{m*}(\Lambda_{X_m^{\log}})$, where $X_m$ is the analytification of the closed fiber of $\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{K^\circ}K_m^\circ$ with the induced log structure and $\tau_m$ denotes the map $X_m^{\log} \to X$. The composition of the latter with the canonical homomorphism $R\tau_{m*}(\Lambda_{X_m^{\log}}) \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda_{X(\varpi)})$ gives a homomorphism $\Theta^{K_m}(F^\cdot_m)^h \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda_{X(\varpi)})$. In this way we get a canonical homomorphism $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda_{\overline{X(\varpi)}})$, and we have to verify that it is an isomorphism.

Since the latter property is local in the étale topology of $\mathfrak{X}$, we may assume that $\mathfrak{X}$ is of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$, where $\mathcal{X}$ is an fs log smooth scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{C},0}$ and $\mathcal{Y}$ is a subscheme of $\mathcal{X}_s$. By [Ber96b, 3.1], one has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Y}}$ and, by Theorem 2.4.1, $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}_\eta^h})$. Hence, the required fact follows from Theorem 2.5.2. The above construction is functorial with respect to $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$, and the fs case of the theorem follows.

Step 4. *The statements (i) and (ii) are true in the general case.* For this we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and we need the following fact related to Lemma 2.5.3.

**Lemma 6.4.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme, and let $\varphi : \mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ be the normalization of $\mathfrak{X}$ with the log structure $M_{\mathfrak{X}'}$ which is the saturation of $\varphi^*(M_{\mathfrak{X}})$ in $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}'}$. Then $\mathfrak{X}'$ is an fs formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme and, for $X = \mathfrak{X}_s^h$ and $X' = \mathfrak{X}_s'^h$ provided with the induced log structures, the canonical map $X'^{\log} \to X^{\log}$ is a homeomorphism.*

*Proof.* The statement is local in the étale topology of $\mathfrak{X}$, and so we may assume that $\mathfrak{X}$ is the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is the log scheme Spec($\mathbf{C}[P]$) for a fine monoid $P$, the morphism of log schemes $\mathcal{Y} \to \text{Spec}(K^\circ)$ is defined by a chart $Q \to P : \varpi \mapsto p$ for a free monoid $Q$ generated by $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$ and an element $p \in P$ such that the localization of $P$ with respect to it is a group, and $\mathcal{Z}$ is a closed subscheme of $\mathcal{Y}_s = \text{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[P]/(p))$. Then $\mathfrak{X}'$ is the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}'_{/\mathcal{Z}'}$, where $\mathcal{Y}' = \text{Spec}(\mathbf{C}[P'])$ for the saturation $P'$ of $P$ in $P^{gr}$ and $\mathcal{Z}'$ is the preimage of $\mathcal{Z}$ in $\mathcal{Y}'_s$. This implies the first statement. Since $X^{\log}$ and $X'^{\log}$ are the preimages of $X = \mathcal{Z}^h$ and $X' = \mathcal{Z}'^h$ in $(\mathcal{Y}^h)^{\log}$ and $(\mathcal{Y}'^h)^{\log}$, respectively, in order to prove the second statement it suffices to prove that the canonical map $(\mathcal{Y}'^h)^{\log} \to (\mathcal{Y}^h)^{\log}$ is a homeomorphism, but this follows from Lemma 2.5.3. □

Let $\mathfrak{X}'$ be the normalization of $\mathfrak{X}$ as in Lemma 6.4.1. Then by Steps 2 and 3, one has $R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\tau'_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{X'^{\log}})$ and $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\overline{X'^{\log}}})$, where $X' = \mathfrak{X}_s'^h$, and $\tau'$ and $\overline{\tau}'$ are the canonical maps $X'^{\log} \to X'$ and $\overline{X'^{\log}} \to X'$, respectively. On the other hand, by [Ber96b, 2.3(ii)], there are canonical isomorphisms $R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi_{s*}(R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta}))$ and $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta}))$. This implies that

$$R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{s*}(R\tau'_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{X'^{\log}})) \text{ and } R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{s*}(R\overline{\tau}'_*(\underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\overline{X'^{\log}}})) \ .$$

Finally, by Lemma 6.4.1, there are canonical homeomorphisms $\alpha : X'^{\log} \widetilde{\to} X^{\log}$ and $\overline{\alpha} : \overline{X'^{\log}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{X^{\log}}$. Since $\varphi_s^h \circ \tau' = \tau \circ \alpha$ and $\varphi_s^h \circ \overline{\tau}' = \overline{\tau} \circ \overline{\alpha}$, we get the required isomorphisms. □

## 7. Complex analytic vanishing cycles for formal schemes

7.1. **Construction and first properties.** We fix, for every special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$, a distinguished compact hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ which exists, by

Corollary 3.1.6. (We do not require that this hypercovering is proper.) The formal schemes $\mathfrak{Y}_n$ provided with the canonical log structure form a simplicial object in the category of fs log special formal schemes. It follows that the $\mathbf{C}$-analytic spaces $Y_n = \mathfrak{Y}^h_{n,\bar{s}}$, provided with the induced log structures, form a simplicial fs log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic space $Y_\bullet = (Y_n)_{n\ge0}$, and there is an associated augmented simplicial topological space $a^{\log} : Y^{\log}_\bullet = (Y^{\log}_n)_{n\ge0} \to \mathfrak{X}^h_{\bar{s}}$. We set

$$R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = Ra^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{Y^{\log}_\bullet}),\ \text{if } \mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$$

$$R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = \mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle}(Ra^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{Y^{\log}_\bullet})),\ \text{if } \mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}\ .$$

If $\tau_\bullet$ denote the map of simplicial topological spaces $Y^{\log}_\bullet \to Y_\bullet$, then $a^{\log} = a^h_{\bar{s}} \circ \tau_\bullet$ and, therefore, for $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ one also has

$$R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = Ra^h_{s*}(R\tau_{\bullet*}(\mathbf{Z}_{Y^{\log}_\bullet}))\ .$$

Furthermore, the fs log $\mathbf{C}$-analytic spaces $Y_n$ are over the log point $\mathbf{pt}_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1}}$, and there is an associated augmented simplicial topological $\Pi(K_\mathbf{C})$-space $\overline{a}^{\log} : \overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet} = (\overline{Y^{\log}_n})_{n\ge0} \to \mathfrak{X}^h_{\bar{s}}$. We set

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}})\ .$$

If $\overline{\tau}_\bullet$ denotes the map of simplicial topological $\Pi(K_\mathbf{C})$-spaces $\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet} \to Y_\bullet$, then $\overline{a}^{\log} = a^h_{\bar{s}} \circ \overline{\tau}_\bullet$ and, therefore, one also has

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = Ra^h_{\bar{s}*}(R\overline{\tau}_{\bullet*}(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}))\ .$$

**Theorem 7.1.1.** *The following is true:*

(i) *the complexes $R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ do not depend on the choice of the hypercovering up to a canonical isomorphism, and are functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$;*

(ii) *the sheaves $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are constructible, equal to zero if $q > 2\dim(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)$, and the action of $\Pi(K_\mathbf{C})$ on them is quasi-unipotent;*

(iii) *the sheaves $R^q\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are constructible, equal to zero if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ and $q > 2\dim(\mathfrak{X}_\eta) + 1$, and there is a canonical isomorphism*

$$R\mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K_\mathbf{C})}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \widetilde{\to} R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\ .$$

**Remarks 7.1.2.** (i) Functoriality in (i) means that each morphism of special formal schemes $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ gives rise to morphisms

$$\theta^h(\varphi) : \varphi^{h*}_s(R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \to R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}) \text{ and}$$

$$\theta^h_\eta(\varphi) : \varphi^{h*}_{\bar{s}}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \to R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$$

Furthermore, if $\varphi$ is the identity morphism $\mathfrak{X} \to \mathfrak{X}$, then so is the morphism $\theta^h_\eta(\varphi)$ and, given a second morphism $\psi : \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{Y}$, one has $\theta^h_\eta(\varphi\circ\psi) = \theta^h_\eta(\psi) \circ \psi^{h*}_{\bar{s}}(\theta^h_\eta(\varphi))$ (and the same for the morphisms $\theta^h(\varphi)$).

(ii) An étale abelian sheaf $L$ on the analytification $\mathcal{Y}^h$ of a scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of locally finite type over $\mathbf{F}$ is said to be (algebraically) *constructible* if, for every open subscheme $\mathcal{Y}' \subset \mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathbf{F}$, there is a decreasing sequence of Zariski closed subschemes $\mathcal{Z}_0 = \mathcal{Y}' \supset \mathcal{Z}_1 \supset \ldots \supset \mathcal{Z}_n = \emptyset$ such that the restriction of $L$ to each $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathcal{Z}^h_i \backslash \mathcal{Z}^h_{i+1}$ is a locally constant sheaf whose stalks are finitely generated abelian groups. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, it is the definition from [Ver76, §2]. It is easy to see that $L$ is constructible if and only if its restriction to $\mathcal{Y}^h_{\mathbf{C}}$ is constructible. For example, the analytification $\mathcal{F}^h$ of an étale abelian constructible sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathcal{Y}$ is a constructible sheaf on $\mathcal{Y}^h$ (whose stalks are finite abelian groups). It follows from [Ver76, 2.4.2] that, given a morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{Z} \to \mathcal{Y}$ between schemes of finite type over $\mathbf{F}$ and a constructible sheaf $L$ on $\mathcal{Z}^h$, the sheaves $R^q\varphi^h_*(L)$ are constructible.

(iii) If $L$ is an étale abelian $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaf on $\mathcal{Y}^h_{\mathbf{C}}$ (for $\mathcal{Y}$ from (ii)), we say that the action of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ on it is *quasi-unipotent* if, for every open subscheme $\mathcal{Y}' \subset \mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathbf{F}$, there exist $m, n \geq 1$ such that, for every $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, the element $(\sigma^{(\varpi)m} - 1)^n$ acts as zero on the sheaf $L\big|_{\mathcal{Y}'^h}$.

**Lemma 7.1.3.** *In the situation of Theorem 7.1.1, if* $\Lambda^{\cdot} \in D^+_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$, *there are canonical isomorphisms*

(i) $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}})$;

(ii) $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} Ra^{\log}_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{Y^{\log}_\bullet})$, *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$;

(iii) $R\Theta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle}(Ra^{\log}_*(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{Y^{\log}_\bullet}))$, *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$.

*Proof.* The isomorphisms are obtained from Theorem 6.1.1 and [Ber15, 1.2.2(ii) and 3.3.2]. □

*Proof of Theorem 7.1.1.* (ii) We may assume that the formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is quasicompact. By Theorem 5.3.1, for every $m \geq 1$ the sheaves $R^q\overline{\tau}_{m*}(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_m}})$ are constructible, and the action of a sufficiently large power of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$'s on them is trivial. It follows that the sheaves $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are constructible and the action of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ on them is quasi-unipotent.

Consider now for every $n \geq 1$ the exact sequence $0 \to \mathbf{Z} \xrightarrow{n} \mathbf{Z} \to \mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z} \to 0$ which gives rise to exact sequences in the category of algebraically constructible sheaves on $\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}$

$$(*_{\mathfrak{Y}}) \qquad 0 \to R^q\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}})_n \to R^q\overline{a}^{\log}_*((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \to {}_nR^{q+1}\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \to 0\ ,$$

where for an abelian sheaf $L$ we denoted by $L_n$ and ${}_nL$ the cokernel and kernel of the multiplication by $n$ on $F$. By Lemma 7.1.3, the sheaf in the middle is the analytification of the constructible sheaf $R^q\Psi_\eta((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ on $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$. Since the latter are zero for $q > 2\dim(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)$, it follows that $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = 0$ for the same $q$'s.

(iii) Suppose first that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. Fix $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$, and set $\Pi = \mathrm{Hom}_{\Pi(K)}(\varpi, \varpi)$ and $\sigma = \sigma^{(\varpi)}$. Then for every $q \geq 1$ there is an exact sequence (for the $\varpi$-parts of the functors considered)

$$0 \to R^{q-1}\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})/(\sigma - 1)R^{q-1}\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \to R^q\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \to R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^\Pi \to 0\ .$$

all of the required facts follow from (ii). Suppose now that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and set $K' = K_{\mathbf{C}}$. (This notation is used in order to distinguish $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $\Pi(K')$.) By previous case, the first two claims are true, and one has

$$R\mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K')}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \widetilde{\to} (R\Theta^h\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\mathbf{C}}\ .$$

Since $\mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})} = \mathcal{I}^{\langle c\rangle} \circ \mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K')}$, we get the required isomorphism.

(i) It suffices to verify the following fact in the case when $\mathfrak{X}$ is quasicompact. Suppose we are given a commutative diagram of distinguished compact hypercoverings of $\mathfrak{X}$

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet & \xrightarrow{\ a\ } & \mathfrak{X} \\ {\scriptstyle \varphi}\big\uparrow & \nearrow{\scriptstyle b} & \\ \mathfrak{Z}_\bullet & & \end{array}$$

Then there is a canonical isomorphism (with $Z_\bullet = \mathfrak{Z}^h_{\bullet s}$).

$$R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \widetilde{\to} R\overline{b}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Z^{\log}_\bullet}}) \ .$$

For this we consider the homomorphism of the exact sequences $(*_{\mathfrak{Y}}) \to (*_{\mathfrak{Z}})$ as above. The homomorphism between the middle terms is an isomorphism, by Lemma 7.1.3. Moreover, all of the sheaves considered are constructible and zero for $q > 2\mathrm{dim}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)$. The induction from $q = 2\mathrm{dim}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta)$ to $q = 0$ shows that the homomorphisms between the first and third terms are also isomorphisms. The required facts follow. □

We can now extend as follows the definition of vanishing cycles complexes to an exact functor $R\Psi^h_\eta$

$$D^b(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod}) \to D^b(\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}}))) : \Lambda^{\cdot} \mapsto R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}}$$

and that nearby cycles complexes to an exact functor $R\Theta^h$

$$D^b(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod}) \to D^+(\mathfrak{X}^h_s(K_{\mathbf{C}})) : \Lambda^{\cdot} \mapsto R\mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K)}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \ .$$

Notice that the latter complexes consist of univocal $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules (they are isomorphic to trivial $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules). By Theorem 7.1.1, the construction is functorial in $\mathfrak{X}$ and, in particular, any morphism $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ defines morphisms $\theta^h(\varphi, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ and $\theta^h_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ similar to those in Remark 7.1.2(i).

The following corollaries of Theorem 7.1.1 are formulated for an arbitrary complex $\Lambda^{\cdot} \in D^b(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod})$, but it suffices to verify them only for $\Lambda^{\cdot} = \mathbf{Z}$.

**Corollary 7.1.4.** *Given a morphism of finite type $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ with $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}_\eta$, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{s*}(R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})) \text{ and } R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})) \ .$$

*Proof.* Let $b : \mathfrak{Z}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{Y}$ be a distinguished compact hypercovering of $\mathfrak{Y}$. Since $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}_\eta$, the composition $a = \varphi \circ b : \mathfrak{Z}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ is a distinguished compact hypercovering of $\mathfrak{X}$, and we have (with $Z = \mathfrak{Z}^h_{\overline{s}}$)

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \widetilde{\to} R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Z^{\log}_\bullet}}) \widetilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\overline{b}^{\log}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Z^{\log}_\bullet}})) = R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})) \ .$$

The same holds for the functor $\Theta$. □

The nearby cycles and vanishing cycles functors $R\Theta^h$ and $R\Psi^h_\eta$ are extended component wise to simplicial formal schemes.

**Corollary 7.1.5.** *Given a compact hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} Ra^h_{s*}(R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_{\bullet\eta}})) \text{ and } R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} Ra^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_{\bullet\eta}})) \ .$$

*Proof.* One can find a distinguished compact hypercovering $b : \mathfrak{Z}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ that refines $a$, and has $R\Psi_\eta^h(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \tilde{\to} Rb^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet\eta}}))$. The required statement follows therefore from the fact that the canonical morphism $Ra^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Y}_{\bullet\eta}})) \to Rb^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet\eta}}))$ is an isomorphism. This fact is verified using the reasoning from the proof of Theorem 7.1.1. $\square$

**Corollary 7.1.6.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a formally $K^\circ$-log smooth special formal scheme, and let $X$ be the analytification $\mathfrak{X}^h_s$ provided with the induced log structure. Then there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\tau_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}) \tilde{\to} (R\Theta^h \Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\mathbf{C}} \text{ and } R\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \tilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ .$$

*Proof.* First of all, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is distinguished, this follows from Theorem 7.1.1. Furthermore, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is arbitrary, its generic fiber $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is regular and, by Theorem 3.1.3(i), there exists a blow-up $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ with distinguished $\mathfrak{Y}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \tilde{\to} \mathfrak{X}_\eta$. By Corollary 7.1.4, there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \tilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}))$ and, by the previous case, we get $R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \tilde{\to} R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}}}))$, where $Y = \mathfrak{Y}^h_s$. Thus, we have to show that the canonical morphism $R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \to R\varphi^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}}}))$ is an isomorphism. By the reasoning from the proof of Theorem 7.1.1, it suffices to verify the above fact for the group $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$ instead of $\mathbf{Z}$. By Theorem 6.1.1, this is equivalent to the fact that the canonical homomorphism $R\Psi_\eta((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \to R\varphi_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi_\eta((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$ is an isomorphism. The latter follows from [Ber96b, 2.3(ii)]. The same reasoning is applicable to the functor $R\Theta^h$. $\square$

Here is the first comparison statement.

**Theorem 7.1.7.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a special formal scheme over $K^\circ$. Then for any $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^b_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \tilde{\to} R\Theta^h(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \text{ and } R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \tilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ .$$

*Proof.* Since $R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = R\mathcal{I}^{G(K)}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$ (see [Ber15, 3.1.7]) and $R\Theta^h(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = R\mathcal{I}^{\Pi(K)}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$, it suffices to construct the second isomorphism. By Corollary 3.1.6, there exists a distinguished *proper* hypercovering $a : \mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ and, by Lemma 7.1.3, one has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \tilde{\to} R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}})$, where $Y_n = \mathfrak{Y}^h_{n,\overline{s}}$. Furthermore, since $\overline{a}^{\log} = a^h_{\overline{s}} \circ \overline{\tau}_\bullet$, where $\overline{\tau}_\bullet$ is the map of simplicial topological spaces $\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet} \to Y_\bullet$, one has $R\overline{a}^{\log}_*(\Lambda^\cdot_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \tilde{\to} Ra^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\overline{\tau}_{\bullet*}(\Lambda^\cdot_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}))$, and since each $\overline{\tau}_m$ is a composition of a topological covering map $\overline{Y^{\log}_m} \to Y^{\log}_m$ and a proper map $Y^{\log}_m \to Y_m$, one has $R\overline{\tau}_{\bullet*}(\Lambda^\cdot_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \tilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_{\bullet*}(\mathbf{Z}_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{Y_\bullet}$. Finally, since the hypercovering $a^h_{\overline{s}} : Y_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}$ is proper, we get

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})^h \tilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}} = R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \ . \qquad \square$$

7.2. **Invariance under formally smooth morphisms.** Let $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ be a morphism of special formal schemes over $k^\circ$, where $k$ is a non-Archimedean field with discrete valuation. We say that $\varphi$ is *smooth* if every point of $\mathfrak{Y}$ has an étale neighborhood $\mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{Y}$ such that the induced morphism $\mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ is a composition of an étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X} \times \mathfrak{Z}$ and the projection $\mathfrak{X} \times \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$, where $\mathfrak{Z}$ is the $n$-dimensional formal affine space $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{T_1, \dots, T_n\})$. We say that $\varphi$ is *formally smooth* if locally in the étale topology of $\mathfrak{Y}$ it is a composition of morphisms of the form $\mathfrak{Z}_{/\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathfrak{Z}$ for subschemes $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathfrak{Z}_s$ and of smooth morphisms.

**Theorem 7.2.1.** *Let $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ be a formally smooth morphism between special formal schemes over $K^\circ$. Then $\theta^h(\varphi, \Lambda^\cdot)$ and $\theta^h_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^\cdot)$ are isomorphisms for all $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^b(\Pi(K)\text{-Mod})$.*

First of all, in order to prove the above statement, it suffices to consider the case when $\Lambda^\cdot = \mathbf{Z}$. Furthermore, since the sheaves $R^q\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ are constructible, the situation is reduced to the case $\Lambda^\cdot = \mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$. Thus, by the Comparison Theorem 7.1.7, Theorem 7.2.1 follows from the following statement in which $k$ is a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation, and $G$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(k^\mathrm{a}/k)$ (for a fixed algebraic closure $k^\mathrm{a}$ of $k$).

**Theorem 7.2.2.** *Suppose that* $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$*, and let $\varphi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ be a formally smooth morphism between special formal schemes over $k^\circ$. Then $\theta(\varphi, \Lambda^\cdot)$ and $\theta_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda^\cdot)$ are isomorphisms for all $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^b_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G]\text{-Mod})$.*

*Proof.* It suffices to consider the case when $\Lambda^\cdot$ is a finite discrete $G$-module $\Lambda$. By [Ber96b, 2.3(i)], the required fact is true if the morphism $\varphi$ is étale. Thus, in order to prove the theorem, it suffices to consider the two cases when (a) $\varphi$ is of the form $\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}} \to \mathfrak{X}$ for a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathfrak{X}_s$, and (b) $\varphi$ is the projection $\mathfrak{X} \times \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$, where $\mathfrak{Z}$ is the $n$-dimensional formal affine space $\mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{T_1, \dots, T_n\})$.

(a) Let $a : \mathfrak{Z}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ be a distinguished *proper* hypercovering of $\mathfrak{X}$. If $\mathcal{Y}_n$ is the preimage of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathfrak{Z}_{n,s}$, then $\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet/\mathcal{Y}_\bullet} \to \mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ is a distinguished proper hypercovering of $\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$. By the definition of the vanishing cycles complexes, we have

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = Ra_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet\eta}})) \text{ and } R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_\eta}) = Ra_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet/\mathcal{Y}_\bullet})_\eta})) \ .$$

The proper base change theorem for schemes implies that

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\big|_{\overline{\mathcal{Y}}} = Ra_{s*}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet\eta}})\big|_{\overline{\mathcal{Y}}_\bullet}) \ .$$

Since the special formal schemes $\mathfrak{Z}_n$ are locally algebraic, the comparison theorem [Ber96b, 3.1] implies that

$$R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet\eta}})\big|_{\overline{\mathcal{Y}}_\bullet} = R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\mathfrak{Z}_{\bullet/\mathcal{Y}_\bullet})_\eta}) \ ,$$

and the required fact follows. The same reasoning holds from the functor $\Theta$.

(b) Let $\mathfrak{Y} = \mathfrak{X} \times \mathfrak{Z}$. Since all of the sheaves considered are constructible, it suffices to show that, for every closed point $\overline{\mathbf{y}} \in \mathfrak{Y}_{\overline{s}}$, one has $R\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{x}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Theta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{y}}}$ (resp. $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{x}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{y}}}$), where $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ is the image of $\overline{\mathbf{y}}$ in $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$. Replacing $k$ by a finite unramified extension, we may assume that the images $\mathbf{x}$ and $\mathbf{y}$ of the points $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{y}}$ in $\mathfrak{X}_s$ and $\mathfrak{Y}_s$, respectively, are $\widetilde{k}$-rational. By (a), it suffices to show that $R\Gamma(\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{x}), \Lambda) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{y}), \Lambda)$ (resp. $R\Gamma(\overline{\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{x})}, \Lambda) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\overline{\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{y})}, \Lambda)$), where $\pi$ denotes the reduction maps $\mathfrak{X}_\eta \to \mathfrak{X}_s$ and $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \to \mathfrak{Y}_s$, and $\overline{X} = X \widehat{\otimes}_k \widehat{k^\mathrm{a}}$. Since the morphism $\varphi$ is smooth, it induces an isomorphism $\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{y}) \widetilde{\to} \pi^{-1}(\mathbf{x}) \times D$, where $D$ is the open unit disc with center at zero in an affine space, and the required fact follows from acyclicity of the canonical projection $\pi^{-1}(\mathbf{x}) \times D \to \pi^{-1}(\mathbf{x})$ ([Ber93, 7.4.2]). $\square$

7.3. **Comparison theorem.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, an $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$-scheme $\mathcal{X}$, and a subscheme $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_s$. Every $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ can be viewed as a $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-module and, therefore, it gives rise to a locally constant sheaf $\Lambda_{\mathcal{X}^h_\eta}$ on the pro-analytic space $\mathcal{X}^h_\eta$ (see Example 4.3.2(i)). Since $\mathcal{X}^h_{\overline{\eta}}$ is a pro-analytic $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space (see Example 4.2.1(iii)), values of the complex analytic vanishing cycles functor $\Psi_\eta$ are abelian $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on $\mathcal{X}^h_s$. Furthermore, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ is a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ = \widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, and $R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_\eta})$ is a complex of abelian $\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on $\mathcal{Y}^h$.

**Theorem 7.3.1.** *In the above situation, for any $\Lambda^\cdot \in D^b(\Pi(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod})$ there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Theta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Y}^h} \widetilde{\to} R\Theta^h(\Lambda^\cdot_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_\eta}) \text{ and } R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_\eta})\big|_{\mathcal{Y}^h_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^\cdot_{(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_\eta}) \ .$$

*Proof.* Theorem 7.2.1 reduces the situation to the case $\mathcal{Y} = \mathcal{X}_s$, and since the complexes of nearby cycles are expressed from those of vanishing cycles (see §2.3 and §7.1), it suffices to prove the required fact only for the latter. Consider first the case $\Lambda^\cdot = \mathbf{Z}$. By Temkin's theorem on desingularization from [Tem08], there exists a proper hypercovering $a : \mathcal{Y}_\bullet \to \mathcal{X}$ of $\mathcal{X}$ such that each scheme $\mathcal{Y}_n$ is regular and the supports of the subschemes $\mathcal{Y}_{n,s}$ and $\widetilde{\mathcal{Y}}_n$ are divisors with strict normal crossings. Then there are canonical isomorphisms

$$R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{X}^h_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} Ra^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_{\bullet\eta}})) \ .$$

By Theorem 2.5.2, one has

$$R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_{\bullet\eta}}) \widetilde{\to} R\overline{\tau}_{\bullet *}(\mathbf{Z}^\cdot_{\overline{Y^{\log}_\bullet}})$$

Since $\widehat{a} : \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\bullet \to \widehat{\mathcal{X}}$ is a proper hypercovering of $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}$, and all of the formal schemes $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_n$ are distinguished, the required isomorphisms (for $\Lambda^\cdot = \mathbf{Z}$) follow from the construction in §7.1. If $\Lambda^\cdot$ is arbitrary, they follow from Theorem 2.5.2 and the definition in §7.1. □

## 8. Continuity theorems

8.1. **Formulation of results.** The first theorem is an easy consequence of previous results. Recall that the group of automorphisms of a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ trivial modulo an ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ is denoted (in [Ber96b]) by $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$.

**Theorem 8.1.1.** *Let $\mathcal{J}$ be the square of the maximal ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{X}$. Then for every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ and every $q \geq 0$, the group $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ acts trivially on the sheaves $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$.*

*Proof.* It suffices to consider the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ and to show that, for every point $x \in \mathfrak{X}^h_s$ and every $q \geq 0$, the group $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ acts trivially on the stalk $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_x$. By Theorem 7.2.1, the latter coincides with $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$ for the affine formal scheme $\mathfrak{Y} = \mathfrak{X}_{/\{x\}}$. This reduces the situation to the case $\mathfrak{X} = \mathfrak{Y}$. If the $\Pi(K)$-module $\Lambda$ is torsion, the statement follows from the fact that the group $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ is uniquely divisible (see [Ber94, Lemma 8.7]). Suppose now that $\Lambda$ has no torsion. It is then flat over $\mathbf{Z}$ and, therefore, $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) = R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \underline{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{X}^h_s}$. This reduces the situation to the case $\Lambda = \mathbf{Z}$. Since $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ is a finitely generated abelian group and, for every $n \geq 1$, its quotient by the subgroup of elements divisible by $n$ embeds in the finite group $R^q\Psi_\eta((\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z})_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, it suffices to show that the action of $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ on the latter is trivial. But this follows from the previous case. Finally, if $\Lambda$ is arbitrary, let $\Lambda^{(tors)}$ be the torsion $\Pi(K)$-submodule of $\Lambda$, and denote by $A$ and $B$ the image and cokernel of the homomorphism $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{(tors)}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \to R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$. Since $B$ embeds in $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{(nont)}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, where $\Lambda^{(nont)} = \Lambda/\Lambda^{(tors)}$, the group $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ acts trivially on $A$ and $B$. It follows that its image in the automorphism group of $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ embeds in the torsion group $\mathrm{Hom}(B, A)$, and the same fact on unique divisibility of $\mathcal{G}_{\mathcal{J}}(\mathfrak{X})$ implies that the image is trivial. □

In the following theorems, the formal schemes considered are assumed to be quasicompact special over $K^\circ$.

**Theorem 8.1.2.** *Given $\mathfrak{X}$ with rig-smooth generic fiber, there exists $n \geq 1$ such that, for every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ which is either finite or has no $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion, every $\mathfrak{Y}$* of finite type over $K^\circ$*, every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which are congruent modulo $(K^{\circ\circ})^n$, and every $q$, one has $\theta^{h,q}_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^{h,q}_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$.*

**Theorem 8.1.3.** *Given $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$ with rig-smooth generic fibers, there exists an ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ of $\mathfrak{Y}$ such that, for every $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$ which is either finite or has no $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion, every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which are congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$, and every $q$, one has $\theta^{h,q}_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^{h,q}_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$.*

Theorem 8.1.2 and 8.1.3 are deduced from the following Theorems 8.1.4 and 8.1.5, respectively, in which $k$ is an arbitrary non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation and $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$, $G$ is the Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(k^{\mathrm{a}}/k)$ for a fixed algebraic closure $k^{\mathrm{a}}$ of $k$, and the formal schemes considered are quasicompact special over $k^\circ$.

**Theorem 8.1.4.** *Given $\mathfrak{X}$ with rig-smooth generic fiber, there exists $n \geq 1$ such that, for every finite discrete $G$-module $\Lambda$, every $\mathfrak{Y}$* of finite type over $k^\circ$*, every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which are congruent modulo $(k^{\circ\circ})^n$, and every $q$, one has $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$.*

**Theorem 8.1.5.** *Given $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$ with rig-smooth generic fibers, there exists an ideal of definition $\mathcal{J}$ of $\mathfrak{Y}$ such that, for every finite discrete $G$-module $\Lambda$, every pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which are congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$, and every $q$, one has $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$.*

If $\Lambda$ in Theorems 8.1.2 and 8.1.3 are finite, the required statements follow directly from the corresponding Theorems 8.1.4 and 8.1.5. If $\Lambda$ has no $\mathbf{Z}$-torsion then, as in the proof of Theorem 8.1.1, the statements are reduced to the case $\Lambda^{\cdot} = \mathbf{Z}$, which follows from the torsion case $\Lambda = \mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$ with $n \geq 1$.

8.2. **Proof of Theorem 8.1.4.** Let $\varpi$ be a generator of the maximal ideal $k^{\circ\circ}$ of $k^\circ$. Instead of the letter $n$, which will be used for a purpose different from that in the formulation, we will use the letter $l$.

Step 1. *The theorem is true with $l = 3$ if $\mathfrak{X}$ is distinguished.* In the first substep 1.1, we do not assume that $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k}) = 0$.

Substep 1.1. Let $\mathfrak{A}^1 = \mathrm{Spf}(k^\circ\{T\})$ be the formal affine line over $k^\circ$, and let 0 and 1 be the $k^\circ$-points of $\mathfrak{A}^1$ which correspond to the homomorphisms $k^\circ\{T\} \to k^\circ$

that take $T$ to 0 and 1, respectively. A *homotopy* between two morphisms of special formal schemes over $k^\circ$, $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$, is a morphism $\Phi : \mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1 \to \mathfrak{X}$ such that $\Phi(\cdot, 0) = \varphi$ and $\Phi(\cdot, 1) = \psi$ (cf. [MW68, 2.7]).

Suppose $\mathfrak{X} = \mathrm{Spf}(A)$, where $A = k^\circ\{T_1, \dots, T_n\}/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \varpi)$, $1 \le m \le n$, and $e_i \ge 1$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, and suppose that at least one of the integers $e_i$ is not divisible by $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k})$. Let also $\mathfrak{Y}$ be a special formal scheme flat over $k^\circ$. *We claim that, given two morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ congruent modulo $\varpi^3$, there exists a homotopy $\Phi : \mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1 \to \mathfrak{X}$ between them which is trivial modulo $\varpi^2$*, i.e., it coincides modulo $\varpi^2$ with the composition of the projection $\mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1 \to \mathfrak{Y}$ and $\varphi$. (The latter property implies that, for any subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathfrak{X}_s$ that contains $\varphi_s(\mathfrak{Y}_s) = \psi_s(\mathfrak{Y}_s)$, $\Phi$ induces a homotopy between the induced morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$.)

Indeed, the two morphisms from the claim are defined by the elements $f_i = \varphi^*(T_i)$ and $g_i = \psi^*(T_i)$, $1 \le i \le n$. Since $\mathfrak{Y}$ is flat over $k^\circ$, it follows that, for every $1 \le i \le n$, one has $g_i - f_i = \varpi^3 u_i$ with $u_i \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y})$. Suppose that $e_1$ is not divisible by $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k})$. For $2 \le i \le n$, we set $H_i = f_i + \varpi^3 u_i T \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1)$, and we have

$$f_1^{e_1} H_2^{e_2} \cdot \ldots \cdot H_m^{e_m} = f_1^{e_1}(f_2 + \varpi^3 u_2 T)^{e_2} \cdot \ldots \cdot (f_m + \varpi^3 u_m T)^{e_m} = \varpi(1 + \varpi^2 v T) ,$$

where $v \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1)$. Since $e_1$ is not divisible by $\mathrm{char}(\widetilde{k})$, there exists an element $\alpha = \sqrt[e_1]{1 + \varpi^2 v T}$ congruent to one modulo $\varpi^2$. Then the element $H_1 = f_1 \alpha^{-1}$ is congruent to $g_1$ modulo $\varpi^2$, and one has

$$H_1^{e_1} \cdot H_2^{e_2} \cdot \ldots \cdot H_m^{e_m} = \varpi .$$

This means that there is a well defined homomorphism $A \to \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1) : T_i \mapsto H_i$, $1 \le i \le n$. We are going to show that the induced morphism $\Phi : \mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1 \to \mathfrak{X}$ is a homotopy between $\varphi$ and $\psi$. By the construction, one has $H_i(0) = f_i$ for all $1 \le i \le n$, i.e., $\Phi(\cdot, 0) = \varphi$, and $H_i(1) = g_i$ for all $2 \le i \le n$. Since $g_1^{e_1} \cdot g_2^{e_2} \cdot \ldots g_m^{e_m} = \varpi$, $H_1(1)^{e_1} \cdot g_2^{e_2} \cdot \ldots g_m^{e_m} = \varpi$, and the homomorphism $\mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y}) \to \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y}) \otimes_{k^\circ} k$ is injective, we get $H_1(1)^{e_1} = g_1^{e_1}$. The latter implies that $H_1(1) = g_1 \zeta$ for an $e_1$-th root of one $\zeta$. Since $H_1$ is congruent to $g_1$ modulo $\varpi^2$, it follows that $\zeta = 1$, i.e., $H(1) = g_1$ and, therefore, $\Phi(\cdot, 1) = \psi$. This implies the claim.

Substep 1.2. *The claim of Step 1 is true if $\mathfrak{X}$ is the same as in Substep 1.1.* Indeed, suppose we are given a special formal scheme $\mathfrak{Y}$ (not necessarily of finite type) over $k^\circ$, and two morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ that coincide modulo $\varpi^3$. We are going to show that $\theta_\eta^q(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta_\eta^q(\psi, \Lambda)$ for all $\Lambda$ and all $q$. First of all, since the sheaves considered are constructible, it suffices to show that, for every closed point $\overline{\mathbf{y}} \in \mathfrak{Y}_{\overline{s}}$, the homomorphisms $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{x}}} \to R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})_{\overline{\mathbf{y}}}$ induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$ coincide, where $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ is the image of $\overline{\mathbf{y}}$ in $\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}$. Replacing the field $k$ by a finite unramified extension, we may assume that the points $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{y}}$ are over $\widetilde{k}$-rational points $\mathbf{x} \in \mathfrak{X}_s$ and $\mathbf{y} \in \mathfrak{Y}_s$, respectively. Furthermore, by Theorem 7.2.2, one has $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\big|_{\{\overline{\mathbf{x}}\}} \widetilde{\to} R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\mathfrak{X}_{/\{\mathbf{x}\}})_\eta})$ and $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})\big|_{\{\overline{\mathbf{y}}\}} \widetilde{\to} R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{(\mathfrak{Y}_{/\{\mathbf{y}\}})_\eta})$. We may therefore replace $\mathfrak{X}$ by $\mathfrak{X}_{/\{\mathbf{x}\}}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$ by $\mathfrak{Y}_{/\{\mathbf{y}\}}$ and assume that $\mathfrak{X}_s = \{\mathbf{x}\}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}_s = \{\mathbf{y}\}$. In this case, the sheaves considered are just finite discrete $G$-modules.

We set $\mathfrak{Z} = \mathfrak{Y} \times \mathfrak{A}^1$ and denote by $p$ the canonical projection $\mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{Y}$ and by $i$ and $j$ the morphisms $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{Z} : y \mapsto (y, 0)$ and $(y, 1)$, respectively. It follows from Substep 1.1 that there exists a homotopy $\Phi : \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$ between $\varphi$ and $\psi$. By Theorem 7.2.2, applied to the projection $p$, $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_\eta})$ is the constant sheaf on the affine line $\mathfrak{A}_s^1$ over $\widetilde{k}$ associated to the $G$-module $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$ and, therefore,

$\theta^q_\eta(\Phi,\Lambda)$ is just a homomorphism between constant sheaves on $\mathfrak{A}^1_s$ associated to a homomorphism between finite discrete $G$-modules. Since $p\circ i = p\circ j = 1_{\mathfrak{Y}}$, the required fact follows.

Substep 1.3. *The claim of Step 1 is true.* Indeed, by Substep 1.2, it suffices to verify the following two facts:

(1) *given an étale morphism $f:\mathfrak{X}'\to\mathfrak{X}$, if the statement is true for $\mathfrak{X}$ (with some $l$), it is true for $\mathfrak{X}'$ (with the same $l$) and, if $f$ is surjective, the converse is also true (with the same $l$);*

(2) *if $\mathfrak{X}=\mathfrak{Z}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$ for a subscheme $\mathcal{Y}\subset\mathfrak{Z}_s$, if the statement is true for $\mathfrak{Z}$, it is also true for $\mathfrak{X}$ (with the same $l$).*

(1) By [Ber96b, 2.3(i)], one has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\big|_{\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{s}}}\widetilde{\rightarrow}R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta})$, and this immediately implies the direct implication. Conversely, assume that $f$ is surjective and the statement is true for $\mathfrak{X}'$ with an integer $l\ge 1$. Given two morphisms $\varphi,\psi:\mathfrak{Y}\to\mathfrak{X}$ that coincide modulo $\varpi^l$, we set $\mathfrak{Y}'=\mathfrak{X}'\times_{\mathfrak{X},\varphi}\mathfrak{Y}$, $\mathfrak{Y}''=\mathfrak{X}'\times_{\mathfrak{X},\psi}\mathfrak{Y}$, and denote by $\varphi'$ and $\psi''$ the induced morphisms from $\mathfrak{Y}'$ and $\mathfrak{Y}''$ to $\mathfrak{X}'$, respectively. The canonical isomorphism $\mathfrak{Y}'_s\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{Y}''_s$ over $\mathfrak{Y}_s$, induces an isomorphism $\mathfrak{Y}'\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{Y}''$ over $\mathfrak{Y}$. Let $\psi'$ be the composition of the latter isomorphism with $\psi''$. We get two morphisms $\varphi',\psi':\mathfrak{Y}'\to\mathfrak{X}'$ that coincide modulo $\varpi^l$ and are compatible with $\varphi$ and $\psi$, respectively. By the assumption, we have $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi',\Lambda)=\theta^q_\eta(\psi',\Lambda)$. Since $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\big|_{\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{s}}}\widetilde{\rightarrow}R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}'_\eta})$ and $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})\big|_{\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{s}}}\widetilde{\rightarrow}R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta})$ and the étale morphisms $\mathfrak{X}'_s\to\mathfrak{X}_s$ and $\mathfrak{Y}'_s\to\mathfrak{Y}_s$ are surjective, we get $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi,\Lambda)=\theta^q_\eta(\psi,\Lambda)$.

(2) By Theorem 7.2.2, one has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_\eta})\big|_{\overline{\mathcal{Y}}}\widetilde{\rightarrow}R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, and the required fact follows.

Step 2. *The theorem is true in the general case.*

Substep 2.1 (a little digression). Suppose $\mathfrak{Z}$ is a reduced formal scheme flat and of finite type over $k^\circ$. If $\mathrm{Spf}(B)$ is an open affine subscheme of $\mathfrak{Z}$ and $\mathcal{B}=B\otimes_{k^\circ}k$, then $\mathcal{B}^\circ=\{g\in\mathcal{B}\big||g(y)|\le 1 \text{ for all } y\in\mathcal{M}(\mathcal{B})\}$ is finite over $B$ and coincides with the integral closure of $B$ in $\mathcal{B}$ (see [BGR, 6.4.1/6]). Furthermore, if $C=B_{\{f\}}$ for an element $f\in B$ and $\mathcal{C}=C\otimes_{k^\circ}k$, then $\mathcal{C}^\circ=(\mathcal{B}^\circ)_{\{f\}}$. We can therefore glue all of the affine formal schemes $\mathrm{Spf}(\mathcal{B}^\circ)$ so that we get a finite morphism of formal schemes $\mathfrak{Z}'\to\mathfrak{Z}$ with $\mathfrak{Z}'_\eta\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{Z}_\eta$ and $B=\mathcal{B}^\circ$ for every open affine subscheme $\mathrm{Spf}(B)\subset\mathfrak{Z}'$, where $\mathcal{B}=B\otimes_{k^\circ}k$. We will say that $\mathfrak{Z}'$ is *the integral closure of $\mathfrak{Z}$ in $\mathfrak{Z}_\eta$*.

Substep 2.2. In order to prove the theorem, we may assume that $\mathfrak{X}=\mathrm{Spf}(A)$ and $\mathfrak{Y}=\mathrm{Spf}(B)$ are reduced affine and flat over $k^\circ$. Since $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ is regular, there exists a blow-up $\alpha:\mathfrak{X}'\to\mathfrak{X}$ with distinguished $\mathfrak{X}'$ and $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ (see Theorem 3.1.3). The ideal $\mathbf{a}\subset A$, which is the center of the blow-up, contains the element $\varpi^l$ for some $l\ge 1$. We are going to show that the theorem is true with the number $2l+3$.

Let $\varphi,\psi:\mathfrak{Y}\to\mathfrak{X}$ be two morphisms which are congruent modulo $\varpi^{2l+3}$. We set $\mathfrak{Y}'''=\mathfrak{Y}\times_{\mathfrak{X}}\mathfrak{X}'$, where the fiber product is taken with respect to the morphism $\varphi$. Furthermore, let $\mathfrak{Y}''$ be the closed formal subscheme of $\mathfrak{Y}'''$ with the same underlying space and whose structural sheaf is the quotient of that of $\mathfrak{Y}'''$ by the $k^\circ$-torsion. Finally, let $\mathfrak{Y}'$ be the integral closure of $\mathfrak{Y}''$ in $\mathfrak{Y}''_\eta$ (see Substep 2.1), and denote by $\varphi'$ the induced morphism $\mathfrak{Y}'\to\mathfrak{X}'$. Since $\mathfrak{X}'_\eta\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{X}_\eta$ and $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{Y}'''_\eta$, it follows that $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta\widetilde{\rightarrow}\mathfrak{Y}_\eta$. *We claim that the morphism $\psi_\eta:\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta=\mathfrak{Y}_\eta\to\mathfrak{X}_\eta=\mathfrak{X}'_\eta$ extends to a morphism $\psi':\mathfrak{Y}'\to\mathfrak{X}'$ which is congruent to $\varphi'$ modulo $\varpi^3$.*

Indeed, suppose the ideal $\mathbf{a}$ is generated by elements $f_0 = \varpi^l, f_1, \dots, f_n$. Then $\mathfrak{X}' = \bigcup_{i=0}^n \mathfrak{X}^i$ with $\mathfrak{X}^i = \mathrm{Spf}(A_i)$, where $A_i$ is the quotient of $A'_i$ by the $k^\circ$-torsion and

$$A'_i = A\{T_0, \dots, T_{i-1}, T_{i+1}, \dots, T_n\}/(f_i T_0 - f_0, \dots, f_i T_n - f_n) \ .$$

Then $\mathfrak{X}^i_\eta = \{x \in \mathfrak{X}_\eta \big| |f_j(x)| \le |f_i(x)| \text{ for } j \ne i\}$. (It is a strictly affinoid subdomain of $\mathfrak{X}_\eta$.) The preimage $\mathfrak{Y}^i$ of $\mathfrak{X}^i$ is an open affine subscheme of $\mathfrak{Y}'$. Let $\mathfrak{Y}^i = \mathrm{Spf}(B_i)$. Then $\mathfrak{Y}^i_\eta = \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{B}_i)$ for $\mathcal{B}_i = B_i \otimes_{k^\circ} k$, and one has $B_i = \mathcal{B}_i^\circ$. By the assumption, one has $\psi^*(f_i) - \varphi^*(f_i) = \varpi^{2l+3} g_i$ with $g_i \in B$ for all $0 \le i \le n$. This easily implies that $\psi_\eta(\mathfrak{Y}^i_\eta) \subset \mathfrak{X}^i_\eta$ for all $0 \le i \le n$. It follows that the morphism $\psi_\eta$ gives rise to homomorphism $A_i \to \mathcal{B}_i$ whose images lie in $B_i$ and, therefore, it extends to a morphism $\psi' : \mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X}'$. It remains to verify that $\psi'$ is congruent to $\varphi'$ modulo $\varpi^3$.

Since $B_i = \mathcal{B}_i^\circ$, it suffices to show that $|(\psi^*(f) - \varphi^*(f))(y)| \le |\varpi|^3$ for all $0 \le i \le n$ and all $f \in A_i$. The $k^\circ$-subalgebra of $A_i$, generated by the elements $\frac{f_j}{f_i}$ with $j \ne i$, is dense. Since the image of $\mathfrak{Y}^i_\eta$ in $\mathfrak{X}^i_\eta$ is compact, it follows that it suffices to verify the above inequality only for the elements $\frac{f_j}{f_i}$ with $j \ne i$. Notice that $|f_i(x)| \ge |\varpi|^l$ for all points $x \in \mathfrak{X}^i_\eta$. It follows that $\frac{1}{\varphi^*(f_i)}, \frac{1}{\psi^*(f_i)} \in \frac{1}{\varpi^l} B_i$. We therefore have

$$\psi^*\left(\frac{f_j}{f_i}\right) - \varphi^*\left(\frac{f_j}{f_i}\right) = \frac{\varpi^{2l+3}(g_j \varphi^*(f_i) - g_i \varphi^*(f_j))}{\varphi^*(f_i)\psi^*(f_i)} \in \varpi^3 B_i \ ,$$

and the claim follows.

Substep 2.3. *One has* $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$. Indeed, by Substep 2.2, there is a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathfrak{X}' & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \mathfrak{X} \\ {\scriptstyle \varphi'}\uparrow\uparrow{\scriptstyle \psi'} & & {\scriptstyle \varphi}\uparrow\uparrow{\scriptstyle \psi} \\ \mathfrak{Y}' & \xrightarrow{\beta} & \mathfrak{Y} \end{array}$$

Since $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}_\eta$, one has $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\beta_{\bar{s}*}(R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta}))$ and, therefore, the required equality is equivalent to the equality $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi\beta, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi\beta, \Lambda)$ which is equivalent, by commutativity of the above diagram, to the equality $\theta^q_\eta(\alpha\varphi', \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\alpha\psi', \Lambda)$. The left hand side of the latter is the composition $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi', \Lambda) \circ \varphi'^*_{\bar{s}}(\theta^q_\eta(\alpha, \Lambda))$, and the right hand side is the composition $\theta^q_\eta(\psi', \Lambda) \circ \psi'^*_{\bar{s}}(\theta^q_\eta(\alpha, \Lambda))$. Since $\varphi'_{\bar{s}} = \psi'_{\bar{s}}$, the required equality follows from the equality $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi', \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi', \Lambda)$, which is a consequence of Substep 2.2 and Step 1. $\square$

8.3. **Proof of Theorem 8.1.5.** First of all, we can replace $k$ by the completion of the maximal unramified extension, and so we may assume that the residue field $\widetilde{k}$ is algebraically closed. We also fix a generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $k^{\circ\circ}$ of $k^\circ$.

Step 1. Let $\beta : \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{Y}$ be a morphism of finite type such that the theorem is true for the pair $(\mathfrak{X}, \mathfrak{Z})$, and suppose that either (1) $\mathfrak{Z}_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}_\eta$, or (2) $\beta$ is a covering in the étale topology of $\mathfrak{Y}$. *Then the theorem is true for the pair* $(\mathfrak{X}, \mathfrak{Y})$. Indeed, let $\mathcal{J}$ be an ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{Z}$ such that, for every $\Lambda$ and every pair of morphisms $\varphi', \psi' : \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$, which are congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$, one has $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$. Let $\mathcal{I}$ be an ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{Y}$ which generates an ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{Z}$ contained in $\mathcal{J}$, and suppose we are given two morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$, which are congruent modulo $\mathcal{I}$.

(1) Given an étale morphism $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$, and let $\mathfrak{Y}'$ and $\mathfrak{Y}''$ be its base changes with respect to the morphisms $\varphi$ and $\psi$, respectively. Since $\varphi_s = \psi_s$, there is a canonical isomorphism $\mathfrak{Y}'_s \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}''_s$ which lifts to a unique isomorphism $\mathfrak{Y}' \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}''$. In this way we get two morphisms $\mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X}'$ which are compatible with the morphisms $\varphi$ and $\psi$, respectively, and they induce two homomorphisms $H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) = R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda)$. The equality $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi, \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi, \Lambda)$ is equivalent to the property that the latter two homomorphisms always coincide for any étale morphism $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$.

We apply the above remark to the morphisms $\varphi', \psi' : \mathfrak{Z} \to \mathfrak{X}$, induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$, respectively. By the construction of $\mathcal{I}$, the two morphisms $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$ are congruent modulo $\mathcal{J}$. It follows that the two homomorphisms $H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathfrak{Z}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda)$, induced by $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$, coincide, where $\mathfrak{Z}' = \mathfrak{Z} \times_{\mathfrak{X}, \varphi'} \mathfrak{X}'$. Since $\mathfrak{Z}' \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Z} \times_{\mathfrak{Y}} \mathfrak{Y}'$, where $\mathfrak{Y}' = \mathfrak{Y} \times_{\mathfrak{X}, \varphi} \mathfrak{X}'$, it follows that $\mathfrak{Z}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}'_\eta$ and, therefore, the two homomorphisms $H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda)$, induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$, coincide. This implies that the theorem is true for the pair $(\mathfrak{X}, \mathfrak{Y})$.

(2) The assumption implies that the two morphisms from $(\varphi\beta)^*_s(R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$ to $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_\eta})$, induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$, coincide. Since $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Z}_\eta}) = \beta^*_s(R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}))$ and $\beta$ is a covering in the étale topology of $\mathfrak{Y}$, it follows that the two morphisms $\varphi^*_s(R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \to R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$, induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$, also coincide.

Since $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta$ is rig-smooth, we can apply Theorem 3.1.3 to $\mathfrak{Y}$. The above statement (1) then implies that, in order to prove the theorem, it suffices to consider the case when $\mathfrak{Y}$ is distinguished, and (2) implies that it suffices to find an étale neighborhood of every point of $\mathfrak{Y}_s$ in $\mathfrak{Y}$ for which the theorem is true (with $\mathfrak{X}$). We may therefore assume that $\mathfrak{Y}$ is affine and there is an étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{C})$, where $\widehat{C}$ is the adic completion of $C = k^\circ\{T_1, \dots, T_n\}/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - \varpi)$ with respect to the ideal generated by $T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_v$, where $1 \le v \le m \le n$, and $e_i \ge 1$ for all $1 \le i \le m$. In this case, the ideal $\mathbf{b} \subset \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{Y})$ generated by the elements $T_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot T_v$ and $\varpi$ is an ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{Y}$. Suppose the conclusion of Theorem 8.1.4 holds for the formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ with an integer $l \ge 1$. We are going to show that the conclusion of Theorem 8.1.5 for the pair $(\mathfrak{X}, \mathfrak{Y})$ with the ideal $\mathbf{b}^{l_1}$, where $l_1 = l(e_1 + \ldots + e_m)$.

Step 2. Since the sheaves $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})$ are constructible, in order to prove the above fact, it suffices to show that for any $\Lambda$ as in the theorem and any pair of morphisms $\varphi, \psi : \mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$, which are congruent modulo $\mathbf{b}^{l_1}$, the two homomorphisms $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})_{\mathbf{x}} \to R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})_{\mathbf{y}}$, induced by $\varphi$ and $\psi$, coincide for all $q \ge 0$ and all closed points $\mathbf{y} \in \mathfrak{Y}_s$, where $\mathbf{x} = \varphi_s(\mathbf{y})$. Recall that, by Theorem 7.2.1, there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta})_{\mathbf{x}} \widetilde{\to} R\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta})$, where $\mathfrak{Y}' = \mathfrak{Y}_{/\{\mathbf{y}\}}$. Thus, the required fact is reduced to the verification of the following statement: given a closed point $\mathbf{y} \in \mathfrak{Y}_s$ and two morphisms $\varphi', \psi' : \mathfrak{Y}' = \mathfrak{Y}_{/\{\mathbf{y}\}} \to \mathfrak{X}$ which are congruent modulo $\mathbf{b}'^{l_1}$, where $\mathbf{b}'$ is the maximal ideal of definition of $\mathfrak{Y}'$, one has $\theta^q_\eta(\varphi', \Lambda) = \theta^q_\eta(\psi', \Lambda)$ for all $\Lambda$ as in the theorem. Furthermore, since $\mathfrak{Y}' \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Z}_{/\{\mathbf{z}\}}$, where $\mathfrak{Z} = \mathrm{Spf}(C)$ with $C$ from Step 1 and $\mathbf{z}$ is the image of $\mathbf{y}$ in $\mathfrak{Z}$, we may replace $\mathfrak{Y}$ by $\mathfrak{Z}$, i.e., $\mathfrak{Y} = \mathrm{Spf}(C)$ (we do not need the morphisms $\varphi$ and $\psi$ anymore).

Step 3. Suppose that $T_i(\mathbf{y}) = 0$ for $1 \le i \le u$ and $T_i(\mathbf{y}) \ne 0$ for $u + 1 \le i \le m$. If $T_i(\mathbf{y}) = 0$ for some $m + 1 \le i \le n$, we can replace such $T_i$ by $T_i - 1$, and so we may assume that $T_i(\mathbf{y}) \neq 0$ precisely for $u+1 \le i \le n$. Then we may replace $\mathfrak{Y}$ by the open affine subscheme defined by the inequality $T_{u+1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_n \neq 0$, i.e., we may replace $C$ by the localization $C_{\{T_{u+1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_n\}}$. Furthermore, the homomorphism

$$B = k^\circ\{T_1, \ldots, T_u, T_{u+1}^{\pm 1}, \ldots, T_n^{\pm 1}\}/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_u^{e_u} \cdot T_{u+1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m - \varpi) \longrightarrow C$$

that takes each $T_i$ with $u+1 \le i \le m$ to $T_i^{e_i}$ and is identical on the other coordinate functions, gives rise to an étale morphism $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{Z} = \mathrm{Spf}(B)$. Then we have again $\mathfrak{Y}' \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Z}_{/\{\mathbf{z}\}}$, where $\mathbf{z}$ is the image of the point $\mathbf{y}$ in $\mathfrak{Z}_s$, and so we may replace $\mathfrak{Y}$ by $\mathfrak{Z}$, i.e., we may assume that $\mathfrak{Y} = \mathrm{Spf}(B)$ with the above $B$.

Step 4. For every $u+1 \le i \le n$, the element $T_i(\mathbf{y})$ is congruent to $a_i \in (k^\circ)^*$. Replacing such $T_i$ by $T_i a_i^{-1}$, we may assume that $T_i(\mathbf{y}) = 1$ for all $u+1 \le i \le n$. Then the maximal ideal of definition $\mathbf{b}'$ of $\mathfrak{Y}'$ is generated by the elements $\varpi$, $T_i$ for $1 \le i \le u$, and $T_i - 1$ for $u+1 \le i \le n$, and one has and $\mathfrak{Y}' = \mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{B})$, where $\widehat{B}$ is the $\mathbf{b}'$-adic completion of $B$. Since each $T_i$ with $u+1 \le i \le m$ is congruent to one in $\widehat{B}$, the latter ring contains an $e_1$-th root of their product $T_{u+1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m$. Thus, we can replace $T_1$ by its product with an invertible element of $\widehat{B}$ so that

$$\widehat{B} \widetilde{\to} k^\circ[[T_1, \ldots, T_u, S_{u+1}, \ldots, S_n]]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \cdots \cdot T_u^{e_u} - \varpi) \ ,$$

where $S_i = T_i - 1$. At this moment we may replace the letter $u$ by $m$.

Step 5. From the above description of $\widehat{B}$ it follows that there is an isomorphism $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} Z \times D^{n-m}$, where

$$Z = \{x \in \mathbf{G}_{\mathrm{m}}^m \big| T_1^{e_1}(x) \cdot \cdots \cdot T_m^{e_m}(x) = \varpi \text{ and } |T_i(x)| < 1 \text{ for all } 1 \le i \le m\}$$

and $D^{n-m}$ is the open unit polydisc in $\mathbf{A}^{n-m}$ with centre at zero. Notice that the projection $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \to Z$ gives rise to isomorphisms

$$H^q(\overline{Z}, \Lambda) \widetilde{\to} H^q(\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) = R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta})$$

for all $\Lambda$ as in the theorem.

Let $e$ =g.c.d.$(e_1, \ldots, e_m)$, and $k'$ a finite extension of $k$ in $k^{\mathrm{a}}$ that contains an element $\varpi'$ with $\varpi'^e = \varpi$. Then $Z \widehat{\otimes}_k k'$ is a disjoint union $\coprod_{\xi \in \mu_e} Z^{(\xi)}$ with

$$Z^{(\xi)} = \{x \in \mathbf{G}_{\mathrm{m},k'}^m \big| T_1^{e'_1}(x) \cdot \cdots \cdot T_m^{e'_m}(x) = \xi\varpi' \text{ and } |T_i(x)| < 1 \text{ for all } 1 \le i \le m\},$$

where $e'_i = \frac{e_i}{e}$ and, therefore, $\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}} \widetilde{\to} \coprod_{\xi \in \mu_e} Y^{(\xi)}$, where $Y^{(\xi)} = \overline{Z^{(\xi)}} \times \overline{D}^{n-m}$ and $\overline{Z^{(\xi)}} = Z^{(\xi)} \widehat{\otimes}_{k'} \widehat{k^{\mathrm{a}}}$. All of the $k'$-analytic spaces $Z^{(\xi)}$ are isomorphic, and we are going to describe them.

Let $\mathcal{T}$ be the kernel of the homomorphism of algebraic tori $G_{\mathrm{m},k'}^m \to G_{\mathrm{m},k'}$ : $(x_1, \ldots, x_m) \mapsto x_1^{e'_1} \cdot \cdots \cdot x_m^{e'_m}$. It is a split torus of dimension $m-1$. Furthermore, we can find integers $p_1, \ldots, p_m$ with $\sum_{i=1}^m e'_i p_i = 1$. Then the shift $G_{\mathrm{m},k'}^m \to G_{\mathrm{m},k'}^m : (x_1, \ldots, x_m) \mapsto (\frac{x_1}{(\xi\varpi')^{p_1}}, \ldots, \frac{x_m}{(\xi\varpi')^{p_m}})$ takes $Z^{(\xi)}$ to the open subset $\{x \in \mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{an}} \big| |t_i(x)| < |\varpi'|^{-p_i} \text{ for all } 1 \le i \le m\}$, where $t_i = \frac{T_i}{(\xi\varpi')^{p_i}}$. The latter is the preimage $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{P})$ of an open convex subset $\mathcal{P}$ of the skeleton $S(\mathcal{T})$ of $\mathcal{T}$ with respect to the retraction map $\tau : \mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{an}} \to S(\mathcal{T})$.

We set $r = |\varpi|^{\frac{1}{e_1 + \cdots + e_m}}$ and $V = \{y \in \mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \big| |g(y)| \le r \text{ for all } g \in \mathbf{b}'\}$. One has $V \widehat{\otimes}_k k' = \coprod_{\xi \in \mu_p} V^{(\xi)}$, where $V^{(\xi)} = (V \widehat{\otimes}_k k') \cap Y^{(\xi)}$. For every $\xi \in \mu_e$, there is an isomorphism $V^{(\xi)} \widetilde{\to} U \times E_{k'}^{n-m}(0; r)$, where $E_{k'}^{n-m}(0; r)$ is the closed polydisc in

$D^{n-m}_{k'}$ of radius $r$ with center at zero and $U = \tau^{-1}(z)$, where $z$ is the point of $S(\mathcal{T})$ with $|T_i(z)| = r$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, i.e., $U$ is a poly-annulus with all internal and external poly-radii equal to $r$.

*We claim that, for any $\Lambda$, there is a canonical isomorphism of cohomology groups* $H^q(\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q(\overline{V}, \Lambda)$. (Notice that the group on the left hand side is $R^q\Psi_\eta(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta})$.) Indeed, this follows from [Ber96b, 3.3], which implies that $H^q(\overline{Z^{(\xi)}}, \Lambda) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q(\overline{U}, \Lambda)$ (and both of these groups are $q$-th exterior powers of $\Lambda(-1)$).

Step 6. *The theorem is true.* Indeed, suppose we are given two morphisms $\varphi', \psi' : \mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X}$, which are congruent modulo $\mathbf{b}'^{l_1}$ with $l_1$ as in Step 1. Since both of them go through morphisms to $\mathfrak{X}' = \mathfrak{X}_{/\{\mathbf{x}\}}$, where $\mathbf{x} = \varphi'_s(\mathbf{y})$, it suffices to show that the homomorphisms $H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{V}, \Lambda)$, induced by $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$, coincide.

Since $V = \mathcal{M}(\mathcal{C})$ is strictly $k$-affinoid, we can find an affine formal scheme $\mathfrak{V}$ flat and of finite type over $k^\circ$ with $\mathfrak{V}_\eta = V$. We may also assume that $\mathfrak{V}$ is normal. Then $\mathfrak{V} = \mathrm{Spf}(\mathcal{C}^\circ)$, where $\mathcal{C}^\circ = \{g \in \mathcal{C} \big| |g(y)| \le 1 \text{ for all } y \in V\}$. It follows that the canonical immersion $V \to \mathfrak{Y}'_\eta$ is induced by a morphism of formal schemes $\mathfrak{V} \to \mathfrak{Y}'$. Since $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$ are congruent modulo $\mathbf{b}'^{l_1}$, one has $\varphi'^*(f) - \psi'^*(f) \in \mathbf{b}'^{l_1}$ for all functions $f \in \mathcal{O}(\mathfrak{X}')$. It follows that $|(\varphi'^*(f) - \psi'^*(f))(y)| \le r^{l_1} = |\varpi|^l$ for all points $y \in V$. The latter implies that the restriction of the function $\varphi'^*(f) - \psi'^*(f)$ to $V$ lies in the ideal of $\mathcal{C}^\circ$ generated by $\varpi^l$, i.e., the morphisms $\mathfrak{V} \to \mathfrak{X}$ induced by $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$ are congruent modulo $\varpi^l$. By our choice of $l$, the two homomorphisms $H^q(\mathfrak{X}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{V}, \Lambda)$, induced by $\varphi'$ and $\psi'$, coincide. ☐

## 9. Integral cohomology of restricted analytic spaces

9.1. **Construction and first properties.** As in §0.7, we introduce the category $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ of *restricted $K$-analytic spaces*, which is the localization of the category quasicompact special formal schemes flat over $K^\circ$ with respect to *admissible proper* morphisms , i.e., proper morphisms $\mathfrak{Y} \to \mathfrak{X}$ that induce an isomorphism between the generic fibers $\mathfrak{Y}_\eta \widetilde{\rightarrow} \mathfrak{X}_\eta$. Its objects are denoted by $\widehat{X}$, $\widehat{Y}$ and so on. The quasicompact special formal schemes flat over $K^\circ$ which give rise to $\widehat{X}$ are said to be *formal models of* $\widehat{X}$. There is an evident faithful (but not fully faithful) functor $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n} \to K\text{-}\mathcal{A}n : \widehat{X} \mapsto X$ so that the generic fiber functor $\mathfrak{X} \mapsto \mathfrak{X}_\eta$ goes through it. Raynaud theory [Ray74] implies that, if $\widehat{Y} \in K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ is such that the strictly $K$-analytic space $Y$ is compact, then for any $\widehat{X} \in K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ there is a canonical bijection $\mathrm{Hom}_{K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}}(\widehat{Y}, \widehat{X}) \widetilde{\rightarrow} \mathrm{Hom}_{K\text{-}\mathcal{A}n}(Y, X)$. In particular, the above functor gives rise to an equivalence between the full subcategory of $K\text{-}\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ formed by formal schemes flat and of finite type over $K^\circ$ and the category of compact strictly $K$-analytic spaces. We say that a restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ is *rig-smooth* if the $K$-analytic space $X$ is rig-smooth. For such $\widehat{X}$, the family of distinguished formal models of $\widehat{X}$ is cofinal in that of all formal models

We fix for every restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ a formal model $\mathfrak{X}$. Given $\Lambda^{\cdot} \in D^b(\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod})$, we define complexes of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$R\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) = R\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}^h_s, R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \text{ and } R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) = R\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}, R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) .$$

For a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\Lambda$, we also define $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$H^q(\widehat{X}, \Lambda) = R^q\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda) \text{ and } H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) = R^q\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) .$$

For $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$, the corresponding complex and group are denoted by $R\Gamma(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ and $H^q(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)}, \Lambda)$. If $X$ is compact, then $\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)}$ can be viewed as the $\widehat{K^{(\varpi)}}$-analytic space $X^{(\varpi)}$, and $\overline{\widehat{X}}$ can be viewed as a $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $\varpi \mapsto X^{(\varpi)}$.

**Theorem 9.1.1.** *The following is true:*

(i) *the complexes* $R\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ *and* $R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ *do not depend on the choice of a model up to a canonical isomorphism, and are functorial in* $\widehat{X}$*;*

(ii) *there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \otimes^{\mathbf{L}}_{\mathbf{Z}} \Lambda^{\cdot} \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \text{ and } R\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} RI^{\Pi(K)}(R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot})) \ ,$$

*where* $I^{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})}$ *is the functor* $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})\text{-Mod} \to \mathcal{A}b : \Lambda \mapsto \Lambda^{\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})}$*;*

(iii) $H^q(\widehat{X}, \mathbf{Z})$ *and* $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ *are finitely generated abelian groups equal to zero for* $q > 2\dim(X) + 1$*, if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$*, and for* $q > 2\dim(X)$*, respectively;*

(iv) *the action of* $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$ *on* $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ *is quasi-unipotent; if* $\widehat{X}$ *is rig-smooth, there exists* $p \geq 1$ *such that, for every* $q \geq 0$*, the action of the element* $(\sigma^p - 1)^{q+1}$ *on* $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$ *is zero;*

(v) *if* $\Lambda^{\cdot} \in D^b_c(\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}[G(K_{\mathbf{C}})]\text{-Mod})$*, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(X_{\text{ét}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \text{ and } R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \ .$$

**Remarks 9.1.2.** (i) The subscript ét in (v) means that the corresponding complexes are considered with respect to the étale site. They are also viewed as complexes of $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules and, in particular, the second isomorphism is the isomorphism $R\Gamma(\widehat{X}^{(\varpi)}, \Lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(X^{(\varpi)}_{\text{ét}}, \Lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot})$ for each $\varpi \in \Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$.

(ii) By Theorem 9.1.1(i), one can define the cohomology groups $H^q(\widehat{X}, \Lambda)$ and $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda)$ canonically as projective limits of the groups $R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}^h_s, R\Theta^h(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$ and $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathfrak{X}^h_{\overline{s}}, R\Theta^h(\Lambda_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}))$, respectively, taken over formal models $\mathfrak{X}$ of $\widehat{X}$.

*Proof.* (i) Let $\widehat{X}$ and $\widehat{Y}$ be restricted $K$-analytic spaces with formal models $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$, respectively, and suppose we are given a morphism $\varphi : \widehat{Y} \to \widehat{X}$. By the definition, there exists a proper morphism $b : \mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{Y}$ with $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}_\eta$ and a morphism $\psi : \mathfrak{Y}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ which gives rise to the morphism $\varphi$. Since $\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathfrak{Y}_\eta$, Corollary 7.1.4 implies that $R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} Rb^h_{s*}(R\Theta^h(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta}))$ and $R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} Rb^h_{\overline{s}*}(R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta}))$. It follows that $R\Gamma(\mathfrak{Y}_\eta, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\mathfrak{Y}'_\eta, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ and $R\Gamma(\mathfrak{Y}_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \widetilde{\to} R\Gamma(\mathfrak{Y}'_{\overline{\eta}}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ and, therefore, the morphism $\varphi$ induces morphisms $R\Gamma(\widehat{X}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \to R\Gamma(\widehat{Y}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$ and $R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda^{\cdot}) \to R\Gamma(\overline{\widehat{Y}}, \Lambda^{\cdot})$, which do not depend on the choice of the morphism $b$. This implies the required statement.

(ii) follows from the corresponding properties of the functors $R\Theta^h$ and $R\Psi^h_\eta$ introduced in §7.1.

(v) follows from Theorem 7.1.7.

(iii) That the groups considered are finitely generated follows from Theorem 7.1.1(iii) and [Ver76, 2.4.2]. The statement on vanishing of those groups follows from (v) and the additional fact that the same holds for the $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\mathbf{Z}/n\mathbf{Z}$, $n \geq 1$.

(iv) Quasi-unipotence of the action follows from the similar fact for the sheaves $R^q\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ in Theorem 7.1.1(iv). If $\widehat{X}$ is rig-smooth, one can find a distinguished model $\mathfrak{X}$. Theorem 5.3.1 implies that, for such $\mathfrak{X}$, there exists $p \geq 1$ such that $\sigma^p$ acts trivially on the above sheaves, and the required fact follows from the spectral sequence $E_2^{p,q} = H^p(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{s}}, R^q\Psi_\eta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$. □

**Corollary 9.1.3.** *For every prime $l$, there are canonical $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-equivariant isomorphisms*

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathbf{Z}_l \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}_l) = \lim_{\longleftarrow} H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \mathbf{Z}/l^n\mathbf{Z}) \ . \qquad \square$$

The above functors are naturally extended to functors $\widehat{Y}_\bullet \mapsto H^q(\widehat{Y}_\bullet, \Lambda^\cdot)$ and $\widehat{Y}_\bullet \mapsto H^q(\overline{\widehat{Y}}_\bullet, \Lambda^\cdot)$ on the category of simplicial restricted $K$-analytic spaces $\widehat{Y}_\bullet$. The following statement easily follow from Corollary 7.1.5.

**Corollary 9.1.4.** *Given a compact hypercovering $a : \widehat{Y}_\bullet \to \widehat{X}$, there are canonical isomorphisms $H^q(\widehat{X}, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q(\widehat{Y}_\bullet, \mathbf{Z})$ and $H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q(\overline{\widehat{Y}}_\bullet, \mathbf{Z})$ and, in particular, there are spectral sequences $E_1^{p,q} = H^q(\widehat{Y}_p, \mathbf{Z}) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(\widehat{X}, \mathbf{Z})$ and $E_1^{p,q} = H^q(\overline{\widehat{Y}}_p, \mathbf{Z}) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{Z})$.* □

**Corollary 9.1.5.** *Given a finite covering of a compact strictly $K$-analytic space $X$ by compact strictly analytic subdomains, $\mathcal{U} = \{U_i\}_{i \in I}$, there are Leray spectral sequences $E_2^{p,q} = \check{H}^p(\mathcal{U}, \mathcal{H}^q(\mathbf{Z})) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(X, \mathbf{Z})$ and $E_2^{p,q} = \check{H}^p(\mathcal{U}, \overline{\mathcal{H}}^q(\mathbf{Z})) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}(\overline{X}, \mathbf{Z})$, where $\mathcal{H}^q(\mathbf{Z})$ and $\overline{\mathcal{H}}^q(\mathbf{Z})$ are the presheaves $U \mapsto H^q(U, \mathbf{Z})$ and $U \mapsto H^q(\overline{U}, \mathbf{Z})$ on the category of compact strictly analytic subdomains of $X$.* □

**Remark 9.1.6.** An example of an admissible proper morphism is an *admissible blow-up* , i.e., a blow-up with the property that the restriction of its center $\mathcal{I}$ to every open quasicompact subscheme contains a nonzero element of $K^{\circ\circ}$. It would be interesting to know if the family of admissible blow-ups $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ for a quasicompact special formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ is cofinal in that of all admissible proper morphisms. This is true if $\mathfrak{X}$ is of finite type over $K^\circ$. In general, this would imply that $K$-$\widehat{\mathcal{A}n}$ coincides with the localization of the category of quasicompact special formal schemes with respect to admissible formal blow-ups. Notice that the canonical functor from the latter category to $K$-$\mathcal{A}n$ goes through the category of uniformly rigid spaces introduced by Kappen [Kap12]

9.2. **Comparison theorem.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs of $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces $(B, b) \to (\mathbb{F}, 0)$, a separated scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ and flat over $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$, and a subscheme $\mathcal{Z} \subset \mathcal{Y}_s$. The formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$ of $\mathcal{Y}$ along $\mathcal{Z}$ as a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ$. The scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ also defines a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h$ over $\mathbf{D}$.

**Theorem 9.2.1.** *In the above situation, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}_s^h)_\eta, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta, \mathbf{Z}) \text{ and } H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h(\mathcal{Z}_s^h)_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z}) \widetilde{\rightarrow} H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z}) \ .$$

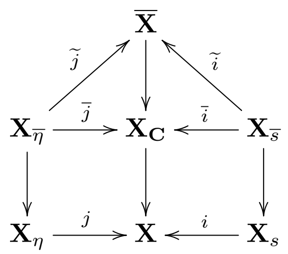
Recall that the groups on the left hand sides are the inductive limits $\lim\limits_{\longrightarrow} H^q(V_\eta, \mathbf{Z})$ and $\lim\limits_{\longrightarrow} H^q(V_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z})$ taken over open neighborhoods of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in (a representative of) $\mathcal{Y}^h$, where $V_\eta$ is the preimage of $\mathbb{F}^*$ in $V$ and $V_{\overline{\eta}} = V_\eta \times_{\mathbb{F}^*} \mathbb{C}$ with the fiber product taken with respect to the exponential map $\mathbf{C} \to \mathbf{C}^*$. (Recall that, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, $H^q(V_\eta, \mathbf{Z})$ are the étale cohomology groups of the $\mathbf{R}$-analytic space $V_\eta$.)

*Proof.* Comparison Theorem 7.3.1 implies that there are canonical isomorphisms $R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Z}^h, R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}))\widetilde{\rightarrow}H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta, \mathbf{Z})$ (resp. $R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Z}^h, R\Psi_\eta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}))\widetilde{\rightarrow}H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z})$). Furthermore, since $\mathcal{Y}$ is separated, each representative of $\mathcal{Y}^h$ is a paracompact topological space and, therefore, $\mathcal{Z}^h$ has a fundamental system of open paracompact neighborhoods in $\mathcal{Y}^h$. From [Gro57, §3.10] it follows that

$$R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Z}^h, R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})) = \varinjlim R^q\Gamma(V, Rj_*\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}) = \varinjlim H^q(V_\eta, \mathbf{Z}) \ .$$

This gives the first isomorphism. The second isomorphism is established in a similar way. For this we use a construction from [SGA7, Exp. XIV].

Let $\overline{\mathbb{C}}$ denote the set $\mathbb{C} \cup \{\infty\}$ provided with the topology which extends that on $\mathbb{C}$ and such that a fundamental system of open neighborhoods of $\infty$ is formed by the sets $\{z \in \mathbb{C} \big| \mathrm{Re}(z) < r\} \cup \{\infty\}$, $r \in \mathbf{R}$. Then the exponential map $\mathbb{C} \to \mathbb{C}^*$ extends to a continuous map $\overline{\mathbb{C}} \to \mathbb{C}$ that takes $\infty$ to zero, and the action of $\pi_1(\mathbb{F}^*)$ on $\mathbb{C}$ extends to a continuous action on $\overline{\mathbb{C}}$. It is easy to see that the space $\overline{\mathbb{C}}$ is homeomorphic to the subset $\{0\} \cup \{z \in \mathbb{C} \big| \mathrm{Re}(z) > 0\} \subset \mathbb{C}$. In particular, it is metrizable. Given a pro-analytic space $\mathbf{X}$ over $\mathbf{D}$, we set $\overline{\mathbf{X}} = \mathbf{X} \times_{\mathbb{C}} \overline{\mathbb{C}}$. Then the last diagram in §2.3 can be complemented as follows




Here $\widetilde{j}$ is an open immersion, and the complement of its image is $\widetilde{i}(\mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}})$. Notice that, for any point $x \in \mathbf{X}_{\overline{s}}$, each open neighborhood of the point $\widetilde{i}(x)$ in $\overline{\mathbf{X}}$ contains the preimage of an open neighborhood of the point $\overline{i}(x)$ in $\mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{C}}$. It follows that, for any abelian sheaf $F$ on $\mathbf{X}_\eta$, there are canonical isomorphisms $\widetilde{i}^*(R\widetilde{j}_*(F))\widetilde{\rightarrow}R\Psi_\eta(F)$.

Applying the above construction to the pro-analytic space $\mathcal{Y}^h$, we get a pro-topological space $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}$. Since representatives of $\mathcal{Y}^h$ are metrizable, then so are representatives of $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}$. It follows that $\mathcal{Z}^h$ has a fundamental system of open paracompact neighborhoods $\mathcal{V}$ in $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}$ and, therefore, $R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Z}^h, R\Psi_h(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h})) = \varinjlim R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{V}, R\widetilde{j}_*\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h})$. Since each open neighborhood of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}$ contains the preimage of an open neighborhoods of $\mathcal{Z}^h$ in $\mathcal{Y}^h$, the latter group coincides with $\varinjlim H^q(V_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{Z})$ as in the formulation. □

**Corollary 9.2.2.** *For every proper scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ over $\mathcal{K}$, there are functorial isomorphisms*

$$H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h, \mathbf{Z})\widetilde{\rightarrow}H^q(\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}}, \mathbf{Z}) \text{ and } H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h}, \mathbf{Z})\widetilde{\rightarrow}H^q(\overline{\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}}}, \mathbf{Z}) \ ,$$

*where* $\overline{\mathcal{Y}^h} = \mathcal{Y}^h \times_{\mathbb{F}^*} \mathbb{F}$.

*Proof.* We can find an open embedding $\mathcal{Y} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}'$ in a proper scheme $\mathcal{Y}'$ over $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ for which $\mathcal{Y} = \mathcal{Y}'_\eta$ and $\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}} = \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}'_\eta$, and the inductive limit in Theorem 9.2.1 can be taken over the preimages of open neighborhoods of zero in $\mathbb{F}$. This gives the required isomorphisms. □

9.3. **Compatibility with integral cohomology of algebraic varieties.** Suppose we are given a morphism of germs $(B,b)\to(\mathbb{F},0)$, and set $\mathcal{T}=\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{B,b})$ and $\mathcal{T}_\eta=\mathcal{T}\otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}}\mathcal{K}$. The formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{T}}=\mathrm{Spf}(\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b})$ is a special formal scheme over $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ=\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{\mathbb{F},0}$.

A scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{T}_\eta$ defines a pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $\mathcal{X}^h$ over $\mathbf{D}^*$. One sets $\overline{\mathcal{X}^h}=\mathcal{X}^h\times_{\mathbf{D}^*}\overline{\mathbf{D}^*}$ (it is a $\Pi(\mathcal{K}_{\mathbf{C}})$-space). Its base change $\mathcal{X}\otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{B,b}}\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b}$ is a scheme of finite type over $\mathrm{Spec}(\widehat{\mathcal{O}}_{B,b}\otimes_{\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ}\widehat{\mathcal{K}})$ and, therefore, it defines a strictly $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$-analytic space $\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$ over $\widehat{\mathcal{T}}_\eta$, which will be called the *(non-Archimedean) analytification* of $\mathcal{X}$ (see [Ber15, §3.2]).

**Theorem 9.3.1.** *Every morphism $\varphi:Y\to\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$ from a compact strictly $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$-analytic space $Y$ to the analytification $\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$ of a separated scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{T}_\eta$ gives rise to homomorphisms*

$$H^q(\mathcal{X}^h,\mathbf{Z})\to H^q(Y,\mathbf{Z})\ \text{and}\ H^q(\overline{\mathcal{X}^h},\mathbf{Z})\to H^q(\overline{Y},\mathbf{Z})$$

*functorial in $Y$ and $\mathcal{X}$.*

**Remark 9.3.2.** Functoriality in $Y$ and $\mathcal{X}$ means that, given a morphism of compact strictly $\widehat{\mathcal{K}}$-analytic spaces $Y'\to Y$ and a morphism of schemes $\mathcal{X}\to\mathcal{X}'$ compatible with a morphism of germs $(B,b)\to(B',b')$ over $(\mathbb{F},0)$, where $\mathcal{X}'$ is a separated scheme of finite type over $\mathcal{T}'_\eta$ and $\mathcal{T}'=\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{O}_{B',b'})$, the following diagrams are commutative

$$\begin{array}{ccc} H^q(\mathcal{X}^h,\mathbf{Z}) & \longrightarrow & H^q(Y,\mathbf{Z}) \\ \uparrow & & \downarrow \\ H^q(\mathcal{X}'^h,\mathbf{Z}) & \longrightarrow & H^q(Y',\mathbf{Z}) \end{array}\qquad \begin{array}{ccc} H^q(\overline{\mathcal{X}^h},\mathbf{Z}) & \longrightarrow & H^q(\overline{Y},\mathbf{Z}) \\ \uparrow & & \downarrow \\ H^q(\overline{\mathcal{X}'^h},\mathbf{Z}) & \longrightarrow & H^q(\overline{Y}',\mathbf{Z}) \end{array}$$

The vertical arrows here are the canonical ones, the upper horizontal arrows correspond to the morphism $\varphi:Y\to\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$, and the lower arrows correspond to the induced morphism $Y'\to\mathcal{X}'^{\mathrm{an}}$.

Let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field with nontrivial discrete valuation, $R$ a Henselian discrete valuation ring whose completion is $k^\circ$, $S$ a local noetherian flat $R$-algebra with residue field $\widetilde{k}$, and $\mathcal{K}$ the fraction field of $R$ (e.g., $R=\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ and $S=\mathcal{O}_{B,b}$ as above). For a scheme of $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $S$, the formal completion $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}$ of $\mathcal{X}$ along the closed fiber $\mathcal{X}_s$ (defined by the maximal ideal of $S$) is a special formal scheme over $k^\circ$, whose generic fiber $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_\eta$ is a paracompact strictly $k$-analytic space. We set $\mathcal{X}_\eta=\mathcal{X}\otimes_R\mathcal{K}$, and denote by $\mathcal{X}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}}$ the analytification of the scheme $\mathcal{X}_\eta\otimes_S\widehat{S}$ (defined in [Ber15, §3.2]). There is a canonical morphism $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_\eta\to\mathcal{X}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}}$. If $\mathcal{X}$ is separated over $S$, it identifies the former with a closed analytic subdomain of the latter and, if $\mathcal{X}$ is proper over $S$, then $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_\eta\widetilde{\to}\mathcal{X}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}}$. If $\mathcal{X}$ is a scheme of finite type over $S\otimes_R\mathcal{K}$, then $\mathcal{X}_\eta=\mathcal{X}$ and we write $\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$ instead of $\mathcal{X}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}}$.

**Lemma 9.3.3.** *Let $\mathcal{X}$ be a separated scheme of finite type over $S\otimes_R\mathcal{K}$, and $\Sigma$ a compact subset of $\mathcal{X}^{\mathrm{an}}$ such that the subset $\Sigma_0=\{x\in\Sigma\big|[\mathcal{H}(x):k]<\infty\}$ is dense in $\Sigma$. Then*

(i) *there exists an open embedding $\mathcal{X}\hookrightarrow\mathcal{Y}$ in a separated scheme of finite type over $S$ such that $\mathcal{X}=\mathcal{Y}_\eta$ and $\Sigma\subset\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$;*

(ii) *given a homomorphism $S' \to S$ from a similar local $R$-algebra $S'$, a separated scheme $\mathcal{X}'$ of finite type over $S' \otimes_R \mathcal{K}$, a morphism $\varphi : \mathcal{X} \to \mathcal{X}'$ compatible with the homomorphism $S' \to S$, and an open embedding $\mathcal{X}' \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}'$ in a separated scheme of finite type over $S'$ with $\mathcal{X}' = \mathcal{Y}'_\eta$ and $\varphi^{\mathrm{an}}(\Sigma) \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}'_\eta$, there exist separated morphisms of finite type $\mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}$ and $\varphi' : \mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}'$ such that $\mathcal{Y}''_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{Y}_\eta = \mathcal{X}$, $\varphi'_\eta = \varphi$, and $\Sigma \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}''_\eta$.*

*Proof.* (i) Step 1. By the Nagata compactification theorem (see [Con07]), there exists an open embedding $\mathcal{X} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Z}$ in a proper scheme $\mathcal{Z}$ over $S$ flat over $R$. One has $\widehat{\mathcal{Z}}_\eta = \mathcal{Z}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}}$ and $\Sigma \cap (\mathcal{Z}_\eta \backslash \mathcal{X})^{\mathrm{an}} = \emptyset$. It suffices therefore to verify the following statement. *Given a separated scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $S$, a compact subset $\Sigma \subset \widehat{\mathcal{X}}_\eta$, and a Zariski closed subset $\mathcal{Y} \subset \mathcal{X}_\eta$ with $\mathcal{Y}^{\mathrm{an}} \cap \Sigma = \emptyset$, there exists a blow-up $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$ with $\mathcal{X}'_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{X}_\eta$ and $\Sigma \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}_\eta$, where $\mathcal{Z}$ is the complement of the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'$.*

Step 2. *The statement is true if $\mathcal{X} = \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ is an affine scheme.* Indeed let elements $g_1, \ldots, g_n \in A$ generate the ideal of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $A \otimes_R \mathcal{K}$. We can find $l \geq 1$ such that the closed analytic domain $W = \{x \in \mathcal{X}_\eta^{\mathrm{an}} \big| |g_i(x)| \leq |\varpi|^l$ for all $1 \leq i \leq n\}$ has empty intersection with $\Sigma$, where $\varpi$ is a generator of the maximal ideal of $R$. Let $f : \mathcal{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$ be the blow-up of $\mathcal{X}$ whose center is the ideal of $A$ generated by the elements $\varpi^l, g_1, \ldots, g_n$. One of the open affine subschemes from the construction of $\mathcal{X}'$ is $\mathcal{W} = \mathrm{Spec}(B)$, where $B$ is the quotient of $A[T_1, \ldots, T_n]/(\varpi^l T_i - g_i)_{1 \leq i \leq n}$ by the $k^\circ$-torsion . Since $\widehat{\mathcal{W}}_\eta = W$, it follows that $\pi'(\Sigma) \cap \mathcal{W}_s = \emptyset$, where $\pi'$ is the reduction map $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_\eta \to \mathcal{X}'_s$. But $\mathcal{W}_s$ contains the intersection $\mathcal{Y}' \cap \mathcal{X}'_s$, where $\mathcal{Y}'$ is the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'$. Thus, if $\mathcal{Z}$ is the complement of $\mathcal{Y}'$ in $\mathcal{X}'$, then $\pi'(\Sigma) \subset \mathcal{Z}_s$ and, therefore, $\Sigma \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}_\eta$.

Step 3. *The statement is true for arbitrary $\mathcal{X}$.* Indeed, let $\{\mathcal{X}^i\}_{i \in I}$ be a finite open affine covering of $\mathcal{X}$. By Step 2, for every $i \in I$ there exists a blow-up $\mathcal{X}''^i \to \mathcal{X}^i$ with $\mathcal{X}''^i_\eta \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{X}^i_\eta$ and such that $\Sigma \cap \widehat{\mathcal{X}}^i_\eta \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^i_\eta$, where $\mathcal{Z}^i = \mathcal{X}''^i \backslash \mathcal{Y}^i$ and $\mathcal{Y}^i$ is the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y} \cap \mathcal{X}^i_\eta$ in $\mathcal{X}''^i$. For every $i \in I$, the center of the $i$-th blow-up can be extended to a coherent subsheaf of ideals $\mathcal{J}_i \subset \mathcal{O}_\mathcal{X}$ that contains a nonzero element of $k^{\circ\circ}$. Let $f_i : \mathcal{X}'^i \to \mathcal{X}$ be the blow-up with center $\mathcal{J}_i$. We can find a blow-up $f : \mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}$ whose center contains a nonzero element of $k^{\circ\circ}$ and such that, for every $i \in I$, one has $f = f_i \circ g_i$, where $g_i$ is a morphism $\mathcal{X}' \to \mathcal{X}'^i$. *We claim that $\mathcal{X}'$ possesses the required property.*

Indeed, that property is equivalent to the fact that $\pi'(\Sigma) \cap (\mathcal{Y}' \cap \mathcal{X}'_s) = \emptyset$, where $\pi'$ is the reduction map $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'_\eta \to \mathcal{X}'_s$ and $\mathcal{Y}'$ is the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'$. Suppose there exists a point $x \in \Sigma$ with $\pi'(x) \in \mathcal{Y}' \cap \mathcal{X}'_s$. One has $x \in \Sigma \cap \widehat{\mathcal{X}}^i_\eta$ for some $i \in I$. Then $\pi'^i(x) \in \mathcal{Y}'^i \cap \mathcal{X}'^i_s$, where $\pi'^i$ is the reduction map $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}'^i_\eta \to \mathcal{X}'^i_s$ and $\mathcal{Y}'^i$ is the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y}$ in $\mathcal{X}'^i$. Since $\mathcal{X}''^i$ is an open subscheme of $\mathcal{X}'^i$, the intersection $\mathcal{Y}'^i \cap \mathcal{X}''^i$ coincides with the Zariski closure of $\mathcal{Y} \cap \mathcal{X}^i_\eta$ in $\mathcal{X}''^i$, i.e., with $\mathcal{Y}^i$, and we get $\pi'^i(x) \in \mathcal{Y}^i \cap \mathcal{X}''^i_s$. This contradicts the assumption $\Sigma \cap \widehat{\mathcal{X}}^i_\eta \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Z}}^i_\eta$.

(ii) Consider the graph morphism $\Gamma_\varphi : \mathcal{X} \to \mathcal{X} \times_{\mathrm{Spec}(S')} \mathcal{X}' = (\mathcal{Y} \times_{\mathrm{Spec}(S')} \mathcal{Y}')_\eta$. *We claim that the closure $\mathcal{Y}''$ of $\Gamma_\varphi(\mathcal{X})$ in $\mathcal{Y} \times_{\mathrm{Spec}(S')} \mathcal{Y}'$ and the induced morphisms $\mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}$ and $\varphi' : \mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}'$ possess the required properties.*

Indeed, by the construction, $\mathcal{X} = \mathcal{Y}''_\eta$ and $\psi'_\eta = \varphi$. It remains to verify that $\Sigma \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}''_\eta$. Since the subset $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}''_\eta$ is closed in $\mathcal{Y}''^{\mathrm{an}}_\eta$, it suffices to show that it contains all points $x \in \Sigma_0$. The field $\mathcal{H}(x)$ of such a point $x$ is the completion of a finite extension $\mathcal{K}'$ of $\mathcal{K}$. The integral closure $R'$ of $R$ in $\mathcal{K}'$ is a Henselian discrete valuation ring. Since $x \in \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ and $\varphi^{\mathrm{an}}(x) \in \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}'_\eta$, there are associated morphisms $\mathrm{Spec}(R') \to \mathcal{Y}$ and $\mathrm{Spec}(R') \to \mathcal{Y}'$, which give rise to a morphism $\mathrm{Spec}(R') \to \mathcal{Y} \times_{\mathrm{Spec}(S')} \mathcal{Y}'$. The image of $\mathrm{Spec}(\mathcal{K}')$ under the latter lies in $\Gamma_\varphi(\mathcal{X})$. It follows that the image of the closed point of $\mathrm{Spec}(R')$ lies in $\mathcal{Y}''_s$. This implies that $x \in \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}''_\eta$. $\square$

*Proof of Theorem 9.3.1.* By Lemma 9.3.3(i), there exists an open embedding $\mathcal{X} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ in a separated scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{T}$ and flat over $\mathcal{K}^\circ$ such that $\mathcal{X} = \mathcal{Y}_\eta$ and $\varphi(Y) \subset \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$. Comparison Theorem 7.3.1 implies that there is a canonical isomorphism $R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta})$ and, therefore, the morphism $Y \to \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta$ induced by $\varphi$ gives rise to a homomorphism

$$R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R\Theta^h(\mathbf{Z}_{\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta})) = H^q(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_\eta, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(Y, \mathbf{Z}) \ .$$

Furthermore, the spectral sequence

$$E_2^{p,q} = H^p(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R^q\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})) \Longrightarrow R^{p+q}\Gamma(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}))$$

gives rise to a homomorphism $E_2^{0,q} = H^0(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R^q\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta})) \to R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}))$. The composition of the canonical map $H^q(\mathcal{X}^h, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^0(\mathcal{Y}^h_s, R^q\Theta(\mathbf{Z}_{\mathcal{Y}^h_\eta}))$ with the above two homomorphisms gives the required homomorphism $H^q(\mathcal{X}^h, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(Y, \mathbf{Z})$. That it does not depend on the choice of the open embedding $\mathcal{X} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}$ easily follows from Lemma 9.3.3(ii). That this homomorphism is functorial in $Y$ is trivial. Functoriality in $\mathcal{X}$ also easily follows from Lemma 9.3.3(ii). The homomorphism $H^q(\overline{\mathcal{X}^h}, \mathbf{Z}) \to H^q(\overline{Y}, \mathbf{Z})$ is constructed in the same way. $\square$

9.4. **Compatibility with cohomology of the underlying topological space.** Given a $K$-analytic space $X$, there are morphisms of sites $X_{\text{ét}} \to |X|$ and $\overline{X}_{\text{ét}} \to |\overline{X}|$, where $|X|$ and $|\overline{X}|$ denote the underlying topological $\Pi(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces of $X$ and $\overline{X}$, respectively. It follows that, for any abelian group $\Lambda$, there are canonical homomorphisms $H^q(|X|, \Lambda) \to H^q(X_{\text{ét}}, \Lambda)$ and $H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{X}_{\text{ét}}, \Lambda))$ and, for finite $\Lambda$'s, the groups on the right hand side coincide with the groups $H^q(X, \Lambda)$ and $H^q(\overline{X}, \Lambda)$, respectively.

**Theorem 9.4.1.** *For every restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ and every abelian group $\Lambda$, there are canonical homomorphisms*

$$H^q(|X|, \Lambda) \to H^q(\widehat{X}, \Lambda) \text{ and } H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) \ ,$$

*which are functorial in $\Lambda$ and $X$ and, for finite $\Lambda$'s, coincide with the above homomorphisms.*

*Proof.* We construct the second homomorphism since the first one is constructed in the same way.

Step 1. Suppose that $\widehat{X}$ comes from a formal scheme of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is a strictly semistable scheme over $K^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ is a union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathfrak{X}_s$. As in the proof of [Ber00, Lemma 4.1], one deduces from results of [Ber99, §5] that there is a canonical isomorphism $H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{Zar}}(\mathcal{Z}_{\mathbf{C}}, \Lambda)$.

Furthermore, the canonical homomorphism $\Lambda_{\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}} \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\Lambda_{\overline{(\mathcal{Z}^h)^{\log}}})$ gives rise to a homomorphism

$$H^q(\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}, R\Psi^h_\eta(\Lambda_{(\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}})_\eta})) = H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) \ .$$

Thus, the canonical homomorphism $H^q_{\mathrm{Zar}}(\mathcal{Z}_{\mathbf{C}}, \Lambda) \to H^q(\mathcal{Z}^h_{\mathbf{C}}, \Lambda)$ gives rise to the required homomorphism which is functorial in $\Lambda$ and $\widehat{X}$.

Step 2. Suppose that $\widehat{X}'$ be a restricted $K'$-analytic space for a finite extension $K'$ of $K$, and $\widehat{X}$ is the space $\widehat{X}'$ but considered as a restricted $K$-analytic space. Then $\overline{\widehat{X}} \widetilde{\to} \overline{\widehat{X}'} \times \mathrm{Hom}_K(K', K^{\mathrm{a}})$ with the induced action of the Galois group of $K$. Step 1 implies that there are homomorphisms $H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda) \widetilde{\to} H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda)$ which are also functorial on $\Lambda$ and $\widehat{X}$.

Step 3. The functor $\widehat{X} \mapsto H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda)$ is naturally extended to the category of simplicial restricted $K$-analytic spaces. Thus, if $\widehat{Y}_\bullet$ is a simplicial restricted $K$-analytic space such that each $\widehat{Y}_n$ is a finite disjoint union of spaces from Step 2, then there are canonical homomorphisms $H^q(|\overline{Y}_{\bullet\eta}|, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{\widehat{Y}}_{\bullet\eta}, \Lambda)$ which are functorial in $\Lambda$ and $\widehat{Y}_\bullet$.

Step 4: Let $\widehat{X}$ be a restricted $K$-analytic space, and let $\mathfrak{X}$ be an arbitrary formal model of $X$. By Temkin's results from [Tem08] (or Theorem 3.1.3), there exists a compact hypercovering $a : \widehat{Y}_\bullet \to \widehat{X}$ with $\widehat{Y}_\bullet$ as in Step 3. Then there are canonical isomorphisms

$$H^q(|\overline{X}|, \Lambda) \to H^q(|\overline{Y}_{\bullet\eta}|, \Lambda) \to H^q(\overline{\widehat{Y}}_{\bullet\eta}, \Lambda) = H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \Lambda) \ ,$$

which are easily verified to be functorial in $\Lambda$ and $\widehat{X}$. □

## 10. Differential forms on distinguished log spaces and germs

10.1. **Complexes $\omega^\cdot_X$ and $\omega^\cdot_{X/R}$.** Given a morphism of log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces $\varphi : X \to B$, one defines a coherent sheaf of relative logarithmic differentials $\omega^1_{X/B}$ as follows: it is the étale $\mathcal{O}_X$-module which the quotient of $\Omega^1_{X/B} \oplus (\mathcal{O}_X \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} M^{gr}_X)$ by the $\mathcal{O}_X$-submodule generated by local sections of the form $(d\beta(m), 0) - (0, \beta(m) \otimes m)$ and $(0, 1 \otimes n)$ with $m$ and $n$ local sections of $M_X$ and $\varphi^{-1}(M_B)$, respectively. The image of a local section $m$ of $M^{gr}_X$ under the homomorphism $M^{gr}_X \to \omega^1_X$ that takes $m \in M^{gr}_X$ to $(0, 1 \otimes m)$ is denoted by $d\log(m)$, and one has $d\log(f) = \frac{df}{f}$ for a local section $f$ of $\mathcal{O}^*_X$. If $\varphi$ is log étale, then $\omega^1_{X/B} = 0$.

Notice that homomorphisms of $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules $\omega^1_{X/B} \to \mathcal{O}_X$ are in one-to-one correspondence with $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_B)$-linear *log derivations* on $\mathcal{O}_X$, i.e., pairs $(\partial, \overline{\partial})$ consisting of a $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_B)$-linear derivation $\partial : \mathcal{O}_X \to \mathcal{O}_X$ and a homomorphism $\overline{\partial} : M^{gr}_X \to \mathcal{O}_X$ (to the sheaf of additive groups $\mathcal{O}_X$) such that $\partial(\beta(m)) = \beta(m)\overline{\partial}(m)$ and $\overline{\partial}(n) = 0$ for all local sections $m$ of $M_X$ and $n$ of $\varphi^{-1}(M_B)$. The $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_B)$-linear log derivations of $\mathcal{O}_X$ form a sheaf of Lie $\varphi^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_B)$-algebras $\mathcal{D}er_{X/B}$ with respect to the Lie bracket $[(\partial_1, \overline{\partial}_1), (\partial_2, \overline{\partial}_2)] = ([\partial_1, \partial_2], [\overline{\partial}_1, \overline{\partial}_2])$, where $[\partial_1, \partial_2]$ is defined in the usual way and $[\overline{\partial}_1, \overline{\partial}_2](m) = \partial_1(\overline{\partial}_2(m)) - \partial_2(\overline{\partial}_1(m))$ for local sections $m$ of $M_X$.

Let $\omega^q_{X/B}$ be the $q$-th exterior power of $\omega^1_{X/B}$ over $\mathcal{O}_X$. The direct sum $\omega^{\cdot}_{X/B} = \oplus_{q=0}^{\infty}\omega^q_{X/B}$ is a differential graded algebra. If the log structures on $X$ and $B$ are trivial, then $\omega^{\cdot}_{X/B}$ is the usual de Rham differential graded algebra $\Omega^{\cdot}_{X/B}$. The *$q$-th de Rham cohomology groups* (of $X$ over $B$) are the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/B) = R^q\Gamma(X, \omega^{\cdot}_{X/B})$. If $B = \mathbb{F}^0$ provided with the trivial log structure, the de Rham complex and the de Rham cohomology groups are denoted by $\omega^{\cdot}_X$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X)$, respectively. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the sheaves $\omega^q_{X_\mathbf{C}}$ are provided with an action of the complex involution $c$ compatible with its action on $X_\mathbf{C}$. It follows that the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C})$ are provided with an action of the complex involution $c$, and one has $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X) = H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C})^{\langle c\rangle}$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X) \otimes_\mathbf{R} \mathbf{C} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C})$.

The classical Poincaré lemma is extended to log spaces as follows: if the morphism of the underlying $\mathbf{F}$-analytic spaces is smooth and $\varphi^*(M_B) \widetilde{\to} M_X$, then for every point $x \in X$, the canonical morphism of complexes $\omega^{\cdot}_{B,b} \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X,x}$ is a quasi-isomorphism, where $b = \varphi(x)$.

The definition of the relative de Rham complex extends in the evident way to morphisms of log pro-analytic spaces in which all of the transition morphisms are étale.

Till the end of this section, $X$ is a distinguished log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space over $\mathbf{pt}_R$, where $R$ is from §5, i.e., $R$ is either $K^\circ_r$ for $1 \le r < \infty$, or $\mathcal{K}^\circ = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ (in the latter case we set $r = \infty$). Recall also that, if $r = \infty$, $X$ comes from a distinguished log germ $(Y, X)$ over $(\mathbb{F}, 0)$ from Definition 5.1.1(ii), and it is provided with the étale sheaf of local rings $\mathcal{O}_X = i^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{Y(X)})$ and the log structure $M_X = i^{-1}(M_{Y(X)})$, where $i$ is the map $X \to Y(X)$. We also set $\omega^{\cdot}_X = i^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{Y(X)})$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R} = i^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{Y(X)/\mathbb{F}(0)})$, and denote by $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X)$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$ the higher direct images of the latter with respect to the functor of global sections on $X$. As above, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, the sheaves $\omega^q_{X_\mathbf{C}/R_\mathbf{C}}$ are provided with an action of the complex involution $c$ compatible with its action on $X_\mathbf{C}$, and one has $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R) = H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C}/R_\mathbf{C})^{\langle c\rangle}$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R) \otimes_\mathbf{R} \mathbf{C} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_\mathbf{C}/R_\mathbf{C})$. Notice also that if $X$ has a fundamental system of open paracompact neighborhoods in $Y$, then the above groups are just the de Rham cohomology groups of the log pro-$\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $Y(X)$, $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(Y(X))$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(Y(X)/\mathbb{F}(0))$, respectively, and one has

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X) = \varinjlim H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(V) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R) = \varinjlim H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(V/\mathbb{F}) \ ,$$

where $V$ runs through open neighborhoods of $X$ in $Y$ and the logarithmic structure on the $\mathbf{F}$-analytic affine line $\mathbb{F}$ is generated by the coordinate function $z$.

The sheaf $\omega^1_{\mathbf{pt}_R}$ is an étale sheaf on $\mathbb{F}^0$. Its value on $\mathbb{F}^0$, denoted by $\omega^1_R$, is free of rank one over $R$ with generator $d\log(\varpi)$ for each $\varpi \in \pi(R)$. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, one has $\omega^1_R = (\omega^1_{R_\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c\rangle}$. If $\varpi'$ is another element of $\pi(R)$, then $d\log(\varpi') = (1 + \frac{\delta_\varpi(\alpha)}{\alpha})d\log(\varpi)$, where $\alpha = \frac{\varpi'}{\varpi}$.

The sheaves of $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules $\omega^q_X$ and $\omega^q_{X/R}$ are locally free, and there is an exact sequence of complexes

$$(*) \qquad 0 \to \omega^1_R \otimes_R \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}[-1] \xrightarrow{f} \omega^{\cdot}_X \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R} \to 0 \ .$$

Here $\omega^1_R$ is considered as a complex in degree one, the homomorphism $f$ takes the element $d\log(\varpi) \otimes \eta$ for a local section $\eta$ of $\omega^{q-1}_{X/R}$ to the element $d\log(\varpi) \wedge \overline{\eta}$ for a local section $\overline{\eta}$ of $\omega^{q-1}_{X/R}$ that lifts $\eta$. The exact sequence $(*)$ induces a connecting homomorphism

$$\nabla : H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R) \to \omega^1_R \otimes_R H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$$

called the *Gauss-Manin connection*. That $\nabla$ is a connection, i.e., $\nabla(\gamma x) = d\gamma \otimes x + \gamma\nabla(x)$ for all $\gamma \in R$ and $x \in H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$, follows from the facts it coincides with the differential $d_1^{0,q}$ of the spectral sequence $E_1^{p,q} = R^{p+q}\varphi_*(\mathrm{gr}^p) \Longrightarrow R^{p+q}\varphi_*(\omega^{\cdot}_X)$ of the filtered object

$$F^0 = \omega^{\cdot}_X \supset F^1 = \omega^1_R \otimes_R \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}[-1] \supset F^2 = 0$$

(see [EGA3, Ch. 0, 13.6.4]), the filtration is compatible with the exterior product, i.e., $F^i \wedge F^j \subset F^{i+j}$, and the sequence of functors $R^q\varphi_*$ is multiplicative (see [KO68]).

For each element $\varpi \in \pi(R)$, the composition of $\nabla$ with the isomorphism $\chi_\varpi : \omega^1_R \widetilde{\to} R : d\log(\varpi) \mapsto 1$ is a homomorphism

$$\delta_\varpi : H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R) \to H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$$

so that $\nabla(x) = \delta_\varpi(x) \otimes d\log(\varpi)$ for $x \in H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}})$. One has $\delta_\varpi\widetilde{\widetilde{\varpi}} - \widetilde{\widetilde{\varpi}}\delta_\varpi = \widetilde{\widetilde{\varpi}}$. If $\varpi'$ is another element of $\pi(R)$ as above, then $\delta_\varpi = (1 + \frac{\delta_\varpi(\alpha)}{\alpha})\delta_{\varpi'}$. Thus, the homomorphisms $\delta_\varpi$ give rise to an action of the ring $W(R)$ on the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$.

The exact sequence $(*)$ gives rise to the similar long exact sequence for cohomology sheaves of the complexes and, in particular, to a similar homomorphism of sheaves

$$\nabla : \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}) \to \omega^1_R \otimes_R \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}) \ .$$

which is easily seen to possess the similar property $\nabla(\gamma x) = d(\gamma) \otimes x + \gamma\nabla(x)$ for all $\gamma \in R$ and all local sections $x$ of $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R})$. Again, for each element $\varpi \in \pi(R)$ the composition of $\nabla$ with the isomorphism $\chi_\varpi : \omega^1_R \widetilde{\to} R : d\log(\varpi) \mapsto 1$ gives a homomorphism

$$\delta_\varpi : \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}) \to \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}) \ ,$$

and all these homomorphisms give rise to an action of the ring $W(R)$ on the sheaves $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R})$.

We now notice that the above operators $\delta_\varpi$ on the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$ and the sheaves $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R})$ are induced by endomorphisms $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi$ of the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}$ in the derived category of complexes of sheaves of $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces. Namely, $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi$, as a morphism in the derived category, is defined by the canonical quasi-isomorphism $C(f)^{\cdot} \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}$ and the morphism of complexes $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi : C(f)^{\cdot} \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}$, which is the composition of the canonical morphism $-\delta(f) : C(f)^{\cdot} \to \omega^1_R \otimes_R \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}$ and the isomorphism $\omega^1_R \widetilde{\to} R : d\log(\varpi) \mapsto 1$. It follows that the spectral sequence

$$(**) \qquad E_2^{p,q} = H^p(X, \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R})) \Longrightarrow H^{p+q}_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)$$

is compatible with the action of the operators $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi$. We will show in §10.5 that the operators $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi$ define a homomorphism from $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ to the endomorphism ring of $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ in the derived category of sheaves of $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

In what follows we also consider modified de Rham complexes, which are more general than the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and to which some results are extended without any extra effort. Such a complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ is associated to a number $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$ and consists of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X_{\mathbf{C}}$. (If $\lambda = 0$, it is the usual de Rham complex $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$.) Given $q \ge 0$, the sheaf $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ that corresponds to $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ is canonically isomorphic to the subsheaf $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, where $[\lambda]$ is the integral part of $\lambda$, but it is convenient to denote it by $\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. The reason is that the differential $d : \omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \to \omega^{q+1}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ is defined by

$$d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) = \varpi^{-\lambda}(-\lambda d\log(\varpi) \wedge \eta + d\eta) \ ,$$

where $\eta$ is a local section of the sheaf $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Given a $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, the corresponding morphism $\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \to \varpi'^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}'^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ takes the above $\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta$ to $\varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)\varphi_\omega(\eta)$, where $\varphi_\omega$ is the corresponding automorphism of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. (Recall that $\varphi_\omega(\eta) = \eta$ (resp. $\eta^c$) if $\varphi$ is of first (resp. second) type.) We also set $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(X_{\mathbf{C}}) = R^q\Gamma(X_{\mathbf{C}}, \omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$. We notice that the there is a homomorphism of complexes of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves:

$$\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda-[\lambda]} \to \omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} : \varpi^{-(\lambda-[\lambda])}\eta \mapsto \varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\eta \ ,$$

which is an isomorphism if $r = \infty$, and induces an isomorphism $\omega^\cdot_{X'_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda-[\lambda]} \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$, where $X'$ is the closed analytic subspace $X_{r-[\lambda]}$ of $X$ (see Example 5.1.2(iii)). This isomorphism gives rise to an isomorphism of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $\mathcal{C}_{X'_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda-[\lambda]} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$, and often allows one to reduce some problems to the case $\lambda \in [0,1)$.

The same construction defines similar complexes $\omega^\cdot_{Y_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ (resp. $\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{Y}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$) and de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(Y_{\mathbf{C}})$ (resp. $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathcal{Y}_{\mathbf{C}})$) for any log $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space $Y$ (resp. any log scheme $\mathcal{Y}$ of finite type) over $R$.

### 10.2. Cohomology sheaves of the complexes $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.

**Proposition 10.2.1.** *The homomorphism $M^{gr}_X \to \omega^1_X : m \mapsto d\log(m)$ gives rise to isomorphisms of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$*

$$\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$$

*and isomorphisms of sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$, which commute with the action of the ring $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$,*

$$\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}) \ .$$

In §10.5, we provide $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ with the structure of a $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module in the derived category of sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ such that the latter isomorphism is an isomorphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules.

The proposition is an easy consequence of Lemma 10.2.4 which gives a local description of the complexes $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (and also includes an analog of Lemma 17 from [HoAt55]). For this we recall the following classical construction.

Let $A$ be a commutative $\mathbf{C}$-algebra provided with $p$ pairwise commuting $\mathbf{C}$-linear maps $D_1, \dots, D_p : A \to A$. One associates with these objects a complex of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces $\mathrm{K}^\cdot_A(D_1, \dots, D_p)$ with $\mathrm{K}^q_A(D_1, \dots, D_p) = \bigwedge^q_A(A^p)$ and the differential defined by

$$d(fl_{j_1} \wedge \dots \wedge l_{j_q}) = \sum_{i=1}^p D_i(f) l_i \wedge l_{j_1} \wedge \dots \wedge l_{j_q} \ .$$

It is called the *Koszul complex* on $A$ with operators $D_1, \dots, D_p$. If $D_1 = \ldots = D_p = 0$, this complex (with zero differentials) will be denoted by $\mathrm{K}^\cdot_A(0^p)$. Notice that if one of the maps is bijective, the complex $\mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_A(D_1,\dots,D_p)$ is exact. Indeed, suppose $D_i$ is bijective. We define a **C**-linear map $F_i : \mathrm{K}^q_A(D_1,\dots,D_p) \to \mathrm{K}^{q-1}_A(D_1,\dots,D_p)$ that takes $fl_{j_1} \wedge \cdots \wedge l_{j_q}$ with $j_1 < \ldots < j_q$ to zero, if $i \notin \{j_1,\dots,j_q\}$, and to $D_i^{-1}(f)l_{j_1} \wedge \ldots \wedge \widehat{l}_{j_k} \wedge \ldots \wedge l_{j_q}$, if $i = j_k$. Then $F_i \circ d + d \circ F_i = \mathrm{Id}$.

**Construction 10.2.2.** Suppose that $A$ is a commutative **C**-algebra which is embedded in the **C**-vector space of formal power series of the form $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n} a_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}}$ with coefficients in **C** and such that, if $f$ as above lies in the image of $A$, then the latter contains the elements $\sum_{\mathbf{k}\in S} a_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}}$ for all subsets $S \subset \mathbf{Z}^n$ (see examples of such $A$'s below). Suppose we are given a tuple of functions $\delta = (\delta_1,\dots,\delta_p)$ on $\mathbf{k} \in \mathbf{Z}^n$ with values in **C** . For $1 \le i \le p+1$, let $A^{(i)}_\delta$ denote the **C**-vector subspace of $A$ whose nonzero elements are $f$'s as above in which the sum is taken over the tuples $\mathbf{k}$ with the property $\delta_j(\mathbf{k}) = 0$ for all $1 \le j \le i-1$ and $\delta_i(\mathbf{k}) \ne 0$. (If $i = p+1$, the latter condition is empty.) Then there is an isomorphism of **C**-vector spaces $\oplus_{i=1}^{p+1} A^{(i)}_\delta \widetilde{\to} A$. Finally, suppose we are given $p$ pairwise commutating **C**-linear maps $D_1,\dots,D_p : A \to A$ such that, if $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n} a_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}}$ lies in the image of $A$, one has $D_i(f) = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n} a_{\mathbf{k}} \delta_i(\mathbf{k}) T^{\mathbf{k}}$ for each $1 \le i \le p$. Then for every $1 \le i \le p$, $D_i$ induces an injective **C**-linear operator $A^{(i)}_\delta \to A^{(i)}_\delta$, and we assume that this operator is bijective. (This amounts to convergence of the formal power series $D_i^{-1}(T_j)$, $1 \le j \le p$, and will always hold in our examples.) Then one can define subcomplexes $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,1},\dots,E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m+1}$ of $\mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_A(D_1,\dots,D_p)$ in which

$$E^q_{\delta,i} = \{\omega = \sum_{\mathbf{j}} f_{\mathbf{j}} l_{j_1} \wedge \ldots \wedge l_{j_q} \big| f_{\mathbf{j}} \in A^{(i)}_\delta\} \ ,$$

and there is an isomorphism of complexes $\oplus_{i=1}^{p+1} E^{\cdot}_{\delta,i} \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_A(D_1,\dots,D_s)$. Since the restriction of each $D_i$ to $A^{(i)}_\delta$ for $1 \le i \le p$ is a bijection, one can define **C**-linear maps $F_i : E^q_{\delta,i} \to E^{q-1}_{\delta,i}$ (as above) with $F_i \cdot d + d \cdot F_i = \mathrm{Id}$. This means that the complexes $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,1},\dots,E^{\cdot}_{\delta,p}$ are acyclic and, therefore, there is a canonical quasi-isomorphism

$$E^{\cdot}_{\delta,p+1} \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_A(D_1,\dots,D_p) \ .$$

**Examples 10.2.3.** Here are some of the examples of **C**-algebras to which Construction 10.2.2 will be applied in this and the following sections with the field $K = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}$.

(1) $A$ is the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x}$, where $\mathcal{X}$ is the log scheme $\mathrm{Spec}(C_r)$ with

$$C_r = K^\circ_r[T_1,\dots,T_n]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - z, T_1^{re_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_\nu^{re_\nu}), \text{ if } r < \infty,$$

$$\text{and } C_\infty = \mathcal{K}^\circ[T_1,\dots,T_n]/(T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m} - z), \text{ if } r = \infty,$$

$1 \le \nu \le m \le n$, the log structure on $\mathcal{X}$ is generated by the coordinate functions $T_1,\dots,T_m$, the morphism of log schemes $\mathcal{X} \to \mathrm{pt}_R$ is defined by the homomorphism $z \mapsto T_1^{e_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e_m}$, and $x$ is the zero point of $\mathcal{X}^h$, i.e., $t_i(x) = 0$ for all $1 \le i \le n$, where $t_i$ is the image of $T_i$ in $C_r$. (If $r < \infty$, $z$ is a fixed generator of $R^{\circ\circ}$.) Each element of $A$ has a unique representation as a power series $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n_+} a_{\mathbf{k}} t^{\mathbf{k}}$ over **C** taken over tuples $\mathbf{k} = (k_1,\dots,k_n) \in \mathbf{Z}^n_+$ with the property that, if $r < \infty$, then $k_i < re_i$ for some $1 \le i \le \nu$, and such that $f$ is convergent at each point from the intersection of $\mathcal{X}^h$ with a small ball in $\mathbf{C}^n$ with center at zero. Notice that the local ring $\mathcal{O}_{X,x}$ for a distinguished log analytic space (for $r < \infty$) or germ (for $r = \infty$) $X$ over $\mathbf{pt}_R$ is of the above form $A$.

(2) $B$ is the localization of $A$ from (1) with respect to powers of the element $t_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot t_\mu$ with $1 \le \mu < \nu$ if $r < \infty$ (resp. $1 \le \mu < m$ if $r = \infty$). Each element of $B$ has a unique representation as a power series $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n} a_{\mathbf{k}} t^{\mathbf{k}}$ taken over tuples $\mathbf{k} \in \mathbf{Z}^\mu \times \mathbf{Z}_+^{n-\mu}$ such that $(t_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot t_\mu)^l f \in A$ for some $l \ge 0$. If $\mathcal{X}'$ is the spectrum of the localization of $C_r$ with respect to powers of the element $t_1 \cdot \ldots \cdot t_\mu$ and $j$ denotes the open immersion $\mathcal{X}' \hookrightarrow \mathcal{X}$, then $B$ is the stalk at $x$ of the analytification $(j_*\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}'})^h$ of the sheaf $j_*\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}'}$.

(3) $B'$ is the stalk at $x$ of the sheaf $j_*^h\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}'^h}$ for $\mathcal{X}'$ from (2). Each element of $B'$ has a unique representation as a power series $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}\in\mathbf{Z}^n} a_{\mathbf{k}} t^{\mathbf{k}}$ taken over tuples $\mathbf{k} \in \mathbf{Z}^\mu \times \mathbf{Z}_+^{n-\mu}$ with the property that, if $r < \infty$, then $k_i < re_i$ for some $\mu + 1 \le i \le \nu$ and such that $f$ is convergent at each point from the intersection of $\mathcal{X}'^h$ with a small ball in $\mathbf{C}^n$ with center at zero.

**Lemma 10.2.4.** *In the examples (1)-(3), the following is true:*

(i) *the map* $l_{j_1} \wedge \ldots \wedge l_{j_q} \mapsto d\log(T_{j_1}) \wedge \ldots \wedge d\log(T_{j_q})$, $1 \le j_1 < \ldots < j_q \le m$, *induces quasi-isomorphisms of complexes*

$$\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{C}}(0^m) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} \widetilde{\to} (j_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}',\lambda})^h_x \widetilde{\to} (j^h_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}'^h,\lambda})_x \ ;$$

(ii) *the map* $l_{j_1} \wedge \ldots \wedge l_{j_q} \mapsto d\log(T_{j_1}) \wedge \ldots \wedge d\log(T_{j_q})$, $1 \le j_1 < \ldots < j_q \le m-1$, *induces quasi-isomorphisms of complexes*

$$\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x} \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{C}}(0^{m-1}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}^h/R,x} \widetilde{\to} (j_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}'/R})^h_x \widetilde{\to} (j^h_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}'^h/R})_x \ .$$

We notice that the complexes $(j_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}',\lambda})^h_x$ and $(j_*\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}'/R})^h_x$ depend only on the complex analytic germs $(\mathcal{X}^h, x)$ and $(\mathcal{Y}^h, x)$, where $\mathcal{Y} = \mathcal{X}\backslash\mathcal{X}'$. Indeed, if $\mathcal{J}$ is the subsheaf of ideals of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^h}$ with support $\mathcal{Y}^h$, then $(j_*\omega^q_{\mathcal{X}',\lambda})^h_x$ and $(j_*\omega^q_{\mathcal{X}'/R})^h_x$ coincide with the stalks at $x$ of the sheaves $\varinjlim_n \mathcal{H}om(\mathcal{J}^n, \omega^q_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda})$ and $\varinjlim_n \mathcal{H}om(\mathcal{J}^n, \omega^q_{\mathcal{X}/R})$, respectively.

*Proof.* In the situation of examples (1)-(3), we set $e = \text{g.c.d.}(e_1, \ldots, e_m)$, $e'_i = \frac{e_i}{e}$ for $1 \le i \le m$, and we denote by $\varrho$ the image of the element $T_1^{e'_1} \cdot \ldots \cdot T_m^{e'_m}$ in $A$. Notice that $\varrho^e = z$, and $\varrho$ generates the $R$-algebra $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x}$. If $\lambda$ is of the form $\frac{p}{e}$ with $0 \le p < re$, then $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} = \mathbf{C}\varrho^p$, and if $\lambda$ is not of that form, then $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} = 0$. Let $U$ be one of the rings $A$, $B$, or $B'$.

(i) First of all, the isomorphism from the end of §10.1 reduces the situation to the case $\lambda \in [0, 1)$. In this case each of the complexes on the right hand side is naturally isomorphic to the Koszul complex

$$\mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_U\left(D_1, \ldots, D_m, \frac{\partial}{\partial T_{m+1}}, \ldots, \frac{\partial}{\partial T_n}\right) ,$$

where $D_i = T_i\frac{\partial}{\partial T_i} - \lambda e_i \cdot \mathrm{Id}$. The classical Poincaré lemma implies that the latter complex is quasi-isomorphic to the Koszul complex $\mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_{U'}(D_1, \ldots, D_m)$ of the similar ring $U'$ with $n = m$. We may therefore assume that $n = m$.

Since $D_i(T^{\mathbf{k}}) = (k_i - \lambda e_i)T^{\mathbf{k}}$, we can apply Construction 10.2.2 for the tuple of functions $\delta = (\delta_1, \ldots, \delta_m)$ with $\delta_i(\mathbf{k}) = k_i - \lambda e_i$. The $\mathbf{C}$-linear maps $D_i : U^i_\delta \to U^i_\delta$ are bijective and, therefore, the complex considered is quasi-isomorphic to the subcomplex $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m+1}$. The space $U^{(m+1)}_\delta$ consists of the elements $f = \sum_{\mathbf{k}} a_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}} \in U$

in which the sum is taken over $\mathbf{k}$'s with $k_i = \lambda e_i$ for all $0 \le i \le m$. If $\lambda$ is not of the form $\frac{p}{e}$ with $0 \le p < re$, then such $\mathbf{k}$ do not exist and, therefore, $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m+1} = 0$, and it is precisely the case when $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} = 0$. Suppose now that $\lambda = \frac{p}{e}$ for $0 \le p < re$. Then for the above $\mathbf{k}$ one has $k_i = pe'_i$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, and the image of $T^{\mathbf{k}}$ in $U$ is the element $\varrho^p$. This implies that $U_\delta^{(m+1)} = \mathbf{C}\varrho^p = \mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x}$ and, therefore, $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,\lambda,x} \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{C}}(0^m) \widetilde{\to} E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m+1}$.

(ii) Let $F^{\cdot}_U$ and $G^{\cdot}_U$ denote the complexes that corresponds to $U$ in (i) and (ii), respectively. The $U$-module $G^1_U$ is the quotient of $F^1_U$ by the $U$-submodule generated by the one-form $d\log(z) = \sum_{i=1}^m e_i d\log(T_i)$, and, in particular, it is a free $U$-module of rank $n-1$ with generators $d\log(T_1), \dots, d\log(T_{m-1}), dT_{m+1}, \dots, dT_n$. For $1 \le i \le m-1$, we set $D_i = T_i \frac{\partial}{\partial T_i} - \frac{e_i}{e_m} T_m \frac{\partial}{\partial T_m}$. Then for any $f \in U$, one has

$$\sum_{i=1}^{m-1} D_i(f) d\log(T_i) + \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{\partial f}{\partial T_i} dT_i = df - \frac{1}{e_m} T_m \frac{\partial f}{\partial T_m} d\log(z) \ .$$

This implies that there is a canonical isomorphism of complexes

$$\mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_U \left( D_1, \dots, D_{m-1}, \frac{\partial}{\partial T_{m+1}}, \dots, \frac{\partial}{\partial T_n} \right) \widetilde{\to} G^{\cdot}_U \ .$$

As in (i), the Poincaré lemma reduces the situation to the case $n = m$.

One has $D_i(T^{\mathbf{k}}) = \delta_i(\mathbf{k}) T^{\mathbf{k}}$ for $\delta_i(\mathbf{k}) = k_i - k_m \frac{e_i}{e_m}$, and the corresponding map $D_i : U_\delta^{(i)} \to U_\delta^{(i)}$ is bijective. We can therefore apply Construction 10.2.2. It follows that the canonical map $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m} \to \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_U(D_1, \dots, D_{m-1})$ is a quasi-isomorphism. If $\mathbf{k}$ is a tuple as above with $k_i = k_m \frac{e_i}{e_m}$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, then $k_i = pe'_i$ with $0 \le p < re$ for all $1 \le i \le m$. It follows that $U_\delta^{(m)}$ is the $R$-algebra generated by the element $\varrho$, i.e., it coincides with $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x}$. This implies that $\mathcal{C}_{\mathcal{X}^h,x} \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \mathrm{K}^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{C}}(0^{m-1}) \widetilde{\to} E^{\cdot}_{\delta,m}$. □

*Proof of Proposition 10.2.1.* In order to show that the homomorphisms constructed are isomorphisms, we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$ and that $X$ and $x$ are from Example 10.2.3(1) with $K = \widehat{\mathcal{K}}$. Both isomorphisms follow from Lemma 10.2.4. It remains to show that the second isomorphism is a homomorphism of modules over $W(R)$. By the above description, each cohomology class in $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X/R})_x$ is represented by a $\mathbf{C}$-linear combination of elements of the form $\xi = \varrho^i \eta$ with $\eta = d\log(T_{j_1}) \wedge \dots \wedge d\log(T_{j_q})$ and $\varrho^i \in \mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda,x}$ for $\lambda = \frac{i}{e} < r$. One has $d\xi = \lambda \varrho^i d\log(\varpi) \wedge \eta$. The form on the right hand side is the image of element $d\log(\varpi) \otimes \lambda\xi \in (\omega^1_R \otimes_R \omega^{\cdot}_{X/R}[-1])^{q+1}_x$. It follows that $\delta_\varpi(\xi) = \lambda\xi$. □

**Corollary 10.2.5.** *In the situation of Proposition 10.2.1, if $\lambda$ is a complex number such that the $\mathbf{C}$-linear operator $\delta_\varpi - \lambda$ is not invertible on $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}})$ for some $q \ge 0$, then $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$ and $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \ne 0$.*

*Proof.* If $\lambda$ is a complex number, which does not lie in $\mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$, or $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} = 0$, then the operator $\delta_\varpi - \lambda$ is invertible on all of the sheaves $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}})$. This implies that the operator $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi - \lambda$ is invertible on all of the $\mathbf{C}$-vectors spaces $E_2^{p,q}$ from the spectral sequence $(**)$ in §10.1 and, therefore, it is invertible on the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}})$. □

10.3. **Complexes $\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$.** In [KN99, §3], the space $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ is provided with a sheaf of differential graded $\mathbf{C}$-algebras $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (denoted there by $\omega^{\cdot,\log}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$). We recall the construction. Consider the exact sequence of abelian sheaves (see §5.3)

$$0 \longrightarrow \tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \xrightarrow{\mu} \mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} \longrightarrow \tau^{-1}(\overline{M}^{gr}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \longrightarrow 0 \ .$$

One defines a sheaf of $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})$-algebras $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ by

$$\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} = (\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \mathrm{Sym}_{\mathbf{Z}}(\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}))/\mathcal{J} \ ,$$

where $\mathcal{J}$ is the sheaf of ideals generated by local sections of the form $f \otimes 1 - 1 \otimes \mu(f)$ for local section $f$ of $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})$. The canonical homomorphism $\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} \to \mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is universal among homomorphisms from $\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ to $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})$-algebras. One also defines a sheaf of differential graded $\mathbf{C}$-algebras on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ by

$$\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} = \mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} \otimes_{\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})} \tau^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \ .$$

We consider $\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ as single $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-space $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ so that morphisms of first (resp. second) type act trivially (resp. as the complex conjugation).

We introduce $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-algebras and of differential graded $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}})$-algebras on $\overline{X^{\log}}$ by $\mathcal{O}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} = \nu^{-1}(\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}})$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} = \nu^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}})$, respectively. The restrictions of the above $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves to $X^{(\varpi)}$ are denoted by $\mathcal{O}_{X^{(\varpi)}}$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{(\varpi)}}$, respectively, and for a morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$, the corresponding isomorphism $({}^{t}\varphi)^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{(\varpi)}}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{X^{(\varpi')}}$ is denoted by $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}$. For example, if $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ is a $\beta$-morphism (of any type), $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}$ takes $\log(\varpi)$ to $\log(\varpi') + \beta$ (see Example 5.3.2(i)).

Notice that the Poincaré lemma implies the following fact: given a smooth morphism $\varphi : X' \to X$ with $\varphi^*(M_X) \widetilde{\to} M_{X'}$, for every point $\overline{y}' \in \overline{X'^{\log}}$, the canonical morphisms of complexes $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},y} \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X'^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},y'}$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\overline{y}} \to \omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X'^{\log}},\overline{y}'}$ are quasi-isomorphisms, where $y$, $y'$ and $\overline{y}$ are the images of the point $\overline{y}'$ in $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$, $X'^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$, respectively.

We are going to introduce bigger complexes of sheaves of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$

$$\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}} = \oplus_{\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0,r)} \omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \text{ and } \overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}} = \oplus_{\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0,r)} \omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda} \ ,$$

where $\omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda} = \nu^{-1}(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$ and each $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ is related to the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ from the previous subsection. As in the definition of the latter, $\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ in essence coincides with the subsheaf $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ of $\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$, but its differential is different so that it is convenient to denote it by $\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Namely, it is defined by

$$d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) = \varpi^{-\lambda}(-\lambda d\log(\varpi) \wedge \eta + d\eta)$$

for a local section $\eta$ of $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^{q}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (e.g., $d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}) = \varpi^{-\lambda}([\lambda] - \lambda)\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]} d\log(\varpi)$). The sheaves $\omega^{0}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\omega^{0}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda}$ are also denoted by $\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\mathcal{O}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda}$, respectively.

If $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ is a $\beta$-morphism in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ as above, then the corresponding isomorphism $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}} : ({}^t\varphi)^{-1}(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X(\varpi)})\widetilde{\to}\varpi'^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}'^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X(\varpi')}$ is defined by

$$\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) = \varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) \ .$$

The element $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta))$ is equal to $\varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)$ multiplied by

$$\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(-\lambda d\log(\varpi)\wedge\eta + d\eta) = -\lambda\left(d\log(\varpi') + d\beta\right)\wedge\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) + d\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) \ .$$

On the other hand, the element $d\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta)$ is equal to $\varpi'^{-\lambda}$ multiplied by

$$\begin{aligned} &-\lambda\exp(-\lambda\beta)d\log(\varpi')\wedge\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) + d(\exp(-\lambda\beta)\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta)) = \\ =\ &\exp(-\lambda\beta)\left(-\lambda d\log(\varpi')\wedge\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) - \lambda d\beta\wedge\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) + d\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta)\right) \ . \end{aligned}$$

This means that $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda}$ are complexes of sheaves of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on the $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-spaces $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$, respectively. If $\lambda = 0$, they coincide with $\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$.

We now provide the sheaves $\overline{\omega}^q_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\overline{\omega}^q_{X(\varpi)}$ with a different structure of an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module so that the differentials between them commute with the action of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ and the complexes $\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ becomes a complex of sheaves of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules. Namely, for $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ we define

$$\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) = \varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}(\widetilde{\varpi}\eta)$$

for a local section $\eta$ of $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X(\varpi)}$, respectively, as above. One has

$$\begin{aligned} d(\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta)) &= \varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}(-(\lambda+1)d\log(\varpi)\wedge(\widetilde{\varpi}\eta) + d(\widetilde{\varpi}\eta) = \\ &= \varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}(\widetilde{\varpi}(-\lambda d\log(\varpi)\wedge\eta + d\eta)) = \widetilde{\varpi}\cdot d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) \ . \end{aligned}$$

This means that the endomorphism of multiplication by $\widetilde{\varpi}$ commutes with the differential. Furthermore, given a morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ as above, the element $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta))$ is equal to

$$\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}(\widetilde{\varpi}\eta)) = \varpi'^{-(\lambda+1)}\exp(-(\lambda+1)\beta)\widetilde{\varpi}\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) \ .$$

Since $\exp(-\beta)\varpi = \varpi'$, that element is equal to

$$\varpi'^{-(\lambda+1)}\widetilde{\varpi}'\exp(-\lambda\beta)\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\eta) = \widetilde{\varpi}'\cdot\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}(\varpi^{-\lambda}\eta) \ .$$

Thus, $\overline{\omega}^q_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ and $\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ are complexes of sheaves of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\overline{X^{\log}}$, respectively.

There is a canonical morphism of complexes of sheaves of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}$

$$h_\lambda : \tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}) \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \ ,$$

where $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$ is considered as a complex in degree zero. Namely, by the definition of $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ (see §5.2), if $U$ is a connected open subset of $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ and $\lambda \neq \frac{j}{k_U}$ for $0 \leq j < rk_U$, then $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) = 0$ for all $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. Suppose $\lambda = \frac{j}{k_U}$ for $0 \leq j < rk_U$. Then $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U)$ is the one-dimensional $\mathbf{C}$-vector space generated by the element $t^j = \widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}t^p$ with $t^{k_U} = \widetilde{\varpi}$ and $p = j - k_U\cdot\lambda$. We define a homomorphism $\mathcal{C}^{(\varpi)}_\lambda(U) \to \varpi^{-\lambda}\varpi^{[\lambda]}\mathcal{O}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}}}(\tau^{-1}(U))$ by sending $t^j$ to $\varpi^{-\lambda}t^j$. One has

$$d(\varpi^{-\lambda}t^j) = \varpi^{-\lambda}\left(-\lambda t^j d\log(\varpi) + jt^j d\log(t)\right) = 0$$

and, therefore, $h_\lambda$ is a morphism of complexes. Given a $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ of first (resp. second) type, the corresponding homomorphism from $\mathcal{C}_\lambda^{(\varpi)}(U)$ to $\mathcal{C}_\lambda^{(\varpi')}(U)$ (resp. $\mathcal{C}_\lambda^{(\varpi')}(c(U))$) takes $at^j$ to $a\exp(-\lambda\beta)t^j$ (resp. $\overline{a}\exp(-\lambda\beta)(t^c)^j$) for $a \in \mathbf{C}$. It is compatible with the similar homomorphism for the sheaf of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\varpi^{-\lambda}\varpi^{[\lambda]}\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}}$. Thus, $h_\lambda$ is a morphism of complexes of sheaves of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules. Finally, one has

$$h_\lambda(\widetilde{\varpi}t^j) = h_\lambda(t^{j+k_U}) = \varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}(\widetilde{\varpi}t^j) = \widetilde{\varpi} \cdot h_\lambda(t^j)$$

and, therefore, the morphism $h : \tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \to \overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}}$ induced by $h_\lambda$'s is morphism of complexes of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}^{\log}$. The above morphisms gives rise to similar morphisms of complexes of sheaves of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $\overline{h}_\lambda : \overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}) \to \omega^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda}$ and of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules $\overline{h} : \overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) \to \overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ on $\overline{X^{\log}}$.

**Proposition 10.3.1.** *The morphism $h_\lambda$ is a quasi-isomorphism (and, therefore, $h$, $\overline{h}_\lambda$ and $\overline{h}$ are quasi-isomorphisms).*

*Proof.* We may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$.

Step 1. It suffices to show that, for every point $y \in X^{\log}$, there is a canonical quasi-isomorphism $\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda,x}^{(\varpi)} \widetilde{\to} \varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log},y}$, where $x = \tau(y)$. We may therefore assume that $X = \mathrm{Spec}(B)^h$ with $B$ as in Definition 5.1.1 and $x$ is the zero point in $X$, i.e., $T_i(x) = 0$ for all $1 \le i \le n$. (We use notations from that definition). By the Poincaré lemma, we may even assume that $n = m$. Notice that for any connected open neighborhood $V$ of $x$ one has $k_V = e_V = e = \text{g.c.d.}(e_1, \ldots, e_m)$. We set $A = \mathcal{O}_{X,x}$. By [KN99, (3.3)], if we fix elements of $\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log},y}$ whose images under the exponential map $\mathcal{L}_{X^{\log},y} \to \overline{M}^{gr}_{X,x}$ are the generators $T_1, \ldots, T_m$ of $P(X)$, we get an isomorphism $R[S_1, \ldots, S_m] \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{O}_{X^{\log},y}$. It follows that, for every $q \ge 0$, one has

$$\omega^q_{X^{\log},y} = A \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \Omega^q_{\mathbf{C}[S_1,\ldots,S_m]/\mathbf{C}}$$

with $d\varpi = \sum_{i=1}^m e_i dS_i$ and $dT_i = T_i dS_i$ for $1 \le i \le m$. Elements of the $\mathbf{C}$-algebra $A$ are represented as convergent power series $\sum_{\mathbf{k}} a_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}}$, where $a_{\mathbf{k}} \in \mathbf{C}$ and the sum is taken over the tuples $\mathbf{k} = (k_1, \ldots, k_m) \in \mathbf{Z}_+^m$ with $k_i < re_i$ for some $1 \le i \le \mu$. For such $\mathbf{k}$, one has

$$d(\varpi^{-\lambda}T^{\mathbf{k}}) = \varpi^{-\lambda}T^{\mathbf{k}} \sum_{i=1}^m (k_i - \lambda e_i)\, dS_i \ .$$

Notice that $k_i - \lambda e_i = 0$ for all $1 \le i \le m$ if and only if $\lambda = \frac{j}{e}$ for some $0 \le j < re$, an in this case $k_i = je'_i$ for all $1 \le i \le m$, where $e'_i = \frac{e_i}{e}$.

Step 2. We set $V^q = \Omega^q_{\mathbf{C}[S_1,\ldots,S_m]/\mathbf{C}}$ and, for a tuple of complex numbers $\mathbf{p} = (p_1, \ldots, p_m)$, define a differential $d_{\mathbf{p}} : V^q \to V^{q+1}$ by

$$d_{\mathbf{p}}\omega = -\left(\sum_{i=1}^m p_i dS_i\right) \wedge \omega + d\omega \ .$$

Each element $\omega \in \omega^q_{X^{\log},y}$ is a convergent sum $\sum_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}}\omega_{\mathbf{k}}$ with $\max_{\mathbf{k}}\{\deg(\omega_{\mathbf{k}})\} < \infty$, where the degree of $\sum_{\mathbf{j}} f_{\mathbf{j}} dS_{j_1} \wedge \ldots \wedge dS_{j_q} \in V^q$ is the maximum of degrees of nonzero $f_{\mathbf{j}}$'s. Set $\mathbf{e} = (e_1, \ldots, e_m)$, Then there is a morphism of complexes

$$(V^{\cdot}, d_{\lambda\mathbf{e}-\mathbf{k}}) \to \varpi^{-\lambda}\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log},y} : \eta \mapsto \varpi^{-\lambda}T^{\mathbf{k}}\eta$$

such that $(T^{\mathbf{k}}\eta)_{\mathbf{k}'} = \delta_{\mathbf{k},\mathbf{k}'}\eta$. Furthermore, the correspondence $\omega \mapsto \omega_{\mathbf{k}}$ defines a morphism of the same complexes in the opposite direction.

Thus, in order the prove proposition, it suffices to construct, for every nonzero tuple $\mathbf{p}$, a system of $\mathbf{C}$-linear maps $F^q_{\mathbf{p}} : V^q \to V^{q-1}$ with $d^{q-1}_{\mathbf{p}} \circ F^q_{\mathbf{p}} + F^{q+1}_{\mathbf{p}} \circ d^q_{\mathbf{p}} = \mathrm{Id}$ and such that, for every $\eta \in V^q$, one has $\deg(F^q_{\mathbf{p}}(\eta)) \leq \deg(\eta)$ and, for every $\omega \in \omega^q_{X^{\log},y}$ such that $\omega_{\mathbf{k}} = 0$ for $\mathbf{k}$ with $\lambda\mathbf{e} - \mathbf{k} = 0$ (as at the end of Step 2), the sum $\sum_{\mathbf{k}} T^{\mathbf{k}} F^q_{\lambda\mathbf{e}-\mathbf{k}}(\omega_{\mathbf{k}})$ is convergent.

Step 3. Let $|\mathbf{p}|$ denote the Euclidean length of a nonzero tuple $\mathbf{p} \in \mathbf{C}^m$. Then the tuple $\frac{\mathbf{p}}{|\mathbf{p}|}$ lies on the unit sphere in $\mathbf{R}^m$ and, therefore, there exists an orthogonal $(m \times m)$-matrix $D$ that takes it to the tuple $\mathbf{p}_0 = (1, 0, \dots, 0)$, and for the matrix $C = \frac{1}{|\mathbf{r}|} D$ one has $\mathbf{p} \cdot C = \mathbf{p}_0$. Notice that all entries $c_{ij}$ of the matrix $C$ are of length at most $|\mathbf{p}|^{-1}$. Consider the automorphism $\varphi$ of the $\mathbf{C}$-algebra $\mathbf{C}[S_1, \dots, S_m]$ which is induced by the linear transformation $\varphi(S_i) = \sum_{j=1}^m c_{ij} S_j$. It gives rise to an isomorphism of complexes $\Phi^{\cdot} : (V^{\cdot}, d_{\mathbf{p}}) \widetilde{\to} (V^{\cdot}, d_{\mathbf{p}_0})$. The latter is isomorphic to the tensor product $V^{\cdot}_1 \otimes_{\mathbf{C}} \Omega^{\cdot}_{\mathbf{C}[S_2,\dots,S_m]/\mathbf{C}}$, where $V^{\cdot}_1$ is the complex constructed for the ring of polynomials $\mathbf{C}[S_1]$ and the tuple 1. The required homotopy for $\mathbf{C}[S_1]$, i.e. a $\mathbf{C}$-linear map $F_1 : V^1_1 = \mathbf{C}[S_1]dS_1 \to V^0_1 = \mathbf{C}[S_1]$, is given by the formula

$$F_1(S_1^n dS_1) = -S_1^n - \sum_{i=1}^n (-1)^i n(n-1) \cdot \ldots \cdot (n-i+1) S_1^{n-i}$$

It induces a homotopy $F^q_{\mathbf{p}_0} : (V^q, d_{\mathbf{p}_0}) \to (V^{q-1}, d_{\mathbf{p}_0})$ which, in its turn, induces a homotopy $F^q_{\mathbf{p}} = (\Phi^{q-1})^{-1} \circ F^q_{\mathbf{p}_0} \circ \Phi^q : (V^q, d_{\mathbf{p}}) \to (V^{q-1}, d_{\mathbf{p}})$ that satisfies the required properties. ☐

**Corollary 10.3.2.** *There is a canonical quasi-isomorphism of complexes of sheaves of* $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$*-modules on the* $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$*-space* $X_{\mathbf{C}}$

$$R\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \ .$$

*Proof.* By Proposition 10.3.1, there is a canonical quasi-isomorphism of complexes of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-sheaves $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$. It gives rise to an isomorphism in the derived category

$$R\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})) \widetilde{\to} R\tau_*(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$$

Thus, it remains to show that the canonical morphism of complexes $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \to \tau_*(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda})$ induces, for every $q \geq 0$, an isomorphism of sheaves $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}) \to R^q\tau_*(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}) = R^q\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}))$ is an isomorphism. For this we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and the latter homomorphism can be described as follows.

The quasi-isomorphism $\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log},\lambda}$ gives rise to short exact sequences of sheaves

$$0 \to \tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda}) \to \mathcal{O}_{X^{\log},\lambda} \to \mathrm{Ker}(\omega^1_{X^{\log},\lambda} \xrightarrow{d} \omega^2_{X^{\log},\lambda}) \to 0 \ , \text{ and}$$

$$0 \to d(\omega^{q-2}_{X^{\log}}) \to \omega^{q-1}_{X^{\log},\lambda} \to \mathrm{Ker}(\omega^q_{X^{\log},\lambda} \xrightarrow{d} \omega^{q+1}_{X^{\log},\lambda}) \to 0 \ , \ q \geq 2.$$

The long exact sequences associated to the left exact functor $\tau_*$ give rise, by induction, to a homomorphism of sheaves

$$\mathcal{H}^q(\tau_*(\omega^{\cdot}_{X^{\log},\lambda})) \to R^q\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda})) \ ,$$

whose composition with the canonical map $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X,\lambda}) \to \mathcal{H}^q(\tau_*(\omega^\cdot_{X^{\log},\lambda}))$ gives the required homomorphism

$$\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X,\lambda}) \to R^q\tau_*(\tau^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda})) \ .$$

Since this homomorphism commutes with cup product, the situation is reduced to the case $q = 1$ and $\lambda = 0$. In this case, by Proposition 10.2.1 and [KN99, Lemma (1.5)], there are canonical isomorphisms $f : \mathbf{C}_X \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}_X} \overline{M}^{gr}_X \widetilde{\to} \mathcal{H}^1(\omega^\cdot_X)$ and $g : \mathbf{C}(-1)_X \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}_X} \overline{M}^{gr}_X \widetilde{\to} R^1\tau_*(\mathbf{C}_{X^{\log}})$, where $\mathbf{C}(-1) = \mathbf{C} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \frac{1}{2\pi i}\mathbf{Z}$. The homomorphism $a \otimes \frac{1}{2\pi i}n \mapsto \frac{an}{2\pi i}$ identifies the latter with $\mathbf{C}$, and it follows easily from the constructions of $f$ and $g$ that the homomorphism considered induces the identity map on $\mathbf{C}_X \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}_X} \overline{M}^{gr}_X$. This gives the required fact. □

**Corollary 10.3.3.** *For every distinguished formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$, there is a compatible system of canonical isomorphisms*

$$R\Theta^h(\mathbf{F}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}} \ .$$

*Proof.* If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, then $R\Theta^h(\mathbf{C}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ coincides with the left hand side of the isomorphism in Corollary 10.3.2, and the required fact follows. If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, then that isomorphism is an extension to $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$ of an isomorphism of complexes on $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$. Those complexes are $R\Theta^h(\mathbf{R}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$ and $\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}}$, and this gives the required fact. □

10.4. **Complexes $L^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$.** For $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$, $\varpi \in \Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $p \geq 0$, let ${}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ denote the subsheaf of $\tau^{(\varpi)}_*(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X^{(\varpi)}})$ with local sections of the form

$$\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\eta_l \ ,$$

where $\eta_0, \dots, \eta_p$ are local sections of the subsheaf $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$. It is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$-module isomorphic to a direct sum of $p+1$ copies of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, if $r = \infty$, and of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}/\widetilde{\varpi}^{r-[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, if $r < \infty$. One has

$$d\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\left(d\log(\varpi) \wedge (-\lambda\eta_l + (l+1)\eta_{l+1}) + d\eta_l\right) \ .$$

This means that $d({}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda) \subset {}^pL^{(\varpi)q+1}_\lambda$ and, therefore, there are well defined subcomplexes ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda = {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda = L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} = \varinjlim_p {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$ of $\tau^{(\varpi)}_*(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{X^{(\varpi)}})$, and ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot} = {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} = \oplus_{\lambda\in\mathbf{Q}_+}{}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$ and $L^{(\varpi)\cdot} = L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} = \oplus_{\lambda\in\mathbf{Q}_+}L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$ are subcomplexes of $\tau^{(\varpi)}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{X^{(\varpi)}})$. Notice that, for every $p \geq 1$, there is an exact sequence of complexes

$$0 \to {}^{p-1}L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda \to {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda \to {}^0L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda \to 0 \ .$$

Moreover, the correspondence $\eta \mapsto \varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\eta$ gives rise to isomorphisms of complexes $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \widetilde{\to} {}^0L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$, if $r = \infty$, and $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}/\widetilde{\varpi}^{r-[\lambda]}\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \widetilde{\to} {}^0L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$, if $r < \infty$. In particular, if $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda,x} = 0$ for a point $x \in X_{\mathbf{C}}$, the complexes ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\lambda,x}$ and $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\lambda,x}$ are acyclic (see Proposition 10.2.1).

Furthermore, one has

$$\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot\eta=\varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\widetilde{\varpi}\eta_l\ .$$

This means that the endomorphism of multiplication by $\widetilde{\varpi}$ on $\overline{\omega}^q_{X(\varpi)}$ takes ${}^pL^{(\varpi)q}$ to itself, and so ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ and $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ are complexes of sheaves of modules over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$.

We introduce $\mathbf{C}$-linear operators $\delta_\varpi:{}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda\to{}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ by

$$\delta_\varpi(\eta)=\varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\left(\lambda\eta_l-(l+1)\eta_{l+1}\right)\ .$$

One has

$$\begin{aligned}\delta_\varpi(\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot\eta)&=\delta_\varpi\left(\varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\widetilde{\varpi}\eta_l\right)=\\&=\varpi^{-(\lambda+1)}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\left((\lambda+1)\widetilde{\varpi}\eta_l-(l+1)\widetilde{\varpi}\eta_{l+1}\right)=\\&=(\widetilde{\varpi}\cdot\delta_\varpi+\widetilde{\varpi})(\eta)\ .\end{aligned}$$

This means that the operators $\delta_\varpi$ make each ${}^pL^{(\varpi)q}$ and $L^{(\varpi)q}$ sheaves of modules over $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$. We notice that this operator $\delta_\varpi$ *commutes* with the canonical action of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ on ${}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ (which takes the above $\eta$ to $\varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\widetilde{\varpi}\eta_l$).

Finally, one has $\delta_\varpi(d\eta)=d(\delta_\varpi\eta)$ since both sides are equal to

$$\begin{aligned}\varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log\varpi)^l\quad&\left(d\log(\varpi)\wedge(-\lambda^2\eta_l+2(l+1)\eta_{l+1}-(l+1)(l+2)\eta_{l+2})+\right.\\&\left.+\lambda d\eta_l-(l+1)d\eta_{l+1}\right)\end{aligned}$$

Thus, ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ and $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ are complexes of sheaves of modules over $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$.

Let now $\varphi:\varpi\to\varpi'$ be a $\beta$-morphism in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ of first (resp. second) type. Then the corresponding homomorphism $\varphi_{\overline{\omega}}$ from §10.3 takes the above $q$-form $\eta$ to

$$\varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log(\varpi')+\beta)^l\eta'_l\ ,$$

which is a local section of ${}^pL^{(\varpi')q}_\lambda$, where $\eta'_l=\eta_l$ (resp. $\eta'_l=\eta^c_l$). This implies that $\varphi$ gives rise to $\mathbf{C}$-linear (resp. $\mathbf{R}$-linear) morphisms of complexes $\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}:{}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda\to{}^pL^{(\varpi')\cdot}_\lambda$ (resp. $\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}:c^{-1}({}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda)\to{}^pL^{(\varpi')\cdot}_\lambda$), which induce morphisms $\varphi_{L_\lambda}:L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda\to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}_\lambda$ and $\varphi_L:L^{(\varpi)\cdot}\to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}$ (resp. $\varphi_{L_\lambda}:c^{-1}(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda)\to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}_\lambda$ and $\varphi_L:c^{-1}(L^{(\varpi)\cdot})\to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}$). It follows from the definition of the multiplication by $\widetilde{\varpi}$ that $\widetilde{\varpi}'\cdot\varphi_L=\varphi_L\cdot\widetilde{\varpi}$ and, therefore, there are subcomplexes of sheaves of $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules ${}^pL^\cdot_\lambda\subset L^\cdot_\lambda\subset\overline{\tau}_*(\omega^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}},\lambda})$ and of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-modules ${}^pL^\cdot\subset L^\cdot\subset\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$. *We claim that* $\delta_{\varpi'}\circ\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}=\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}\circ\delta_\varpi$.

Indeed, setting $\alpha^\lambda = \exp(-\lambda\beta)$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}(\eta) &= \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log(\varpi')+\beta)^l \eta'_l = \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{l=0}^{p}\sum_{j=0}^{l}\binom{l}{j}(\log\varpi')^j\beta^{l-j}\eta'_l = \\ &= \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{j=0}^{p}(\log\varpi')^j\left(\sum_{l=j}^{p}\binom{l}{j}\beta^{l-j}\eta'_l\right) .\end{aligned}$$

If we set $\xi_j = \sum_{l=j}^{p}\binom{l}{j}\beta^{l-j}\eta'_l$, we get

$$\delta_{\varpi'}(\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}(\eta)) = \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{j=0}^{p}(\log\varpi')^j\,(\lambda\xi_j-(j+1)\xi_{j+1})$$

On the other hand, we have

$$\begin{aligned}\varphi_{{}^pL_\lambda}(\delta_\varpi(\eta)) &= \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{l=0}^{p}(\log(\varpi')+\beta)^l(\lambda\eta'_l-(l+1)\eta'_{l+1}) = \\ &= \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{j=0}^{p}(\log\varpi')^j\left(\sum_{l=j}^{p}\binom{l}{j}\beta^{l-j}(\lambda\eta'_l-(l+1)\eta'_{l+1})\right) = \\ &= \varpi'^{-\lambda}\alpha^\lambda \sum_{j=0}^{p}(\log\varpi')^j\left(\lambda\xi_j-\sum_{l=j}^{p}(l+1)\binom{l}{j}\beta^{l-j}\eta'_{l+1}\right) .\end{aligned}$$

Since $(l+1)\binom{l}{j} = (j+1)\binom{l+1}{j+1}$, it follows that

$$\sum_{l=j}^{p}(l+1)\binom{l}{j}\beta^{l-j}\eta'_{l+1} = (j+1)\sum_{l=j+1}^{p}\binom{l}{j+1}\beta^{l-j-1}\eta'_l = (j+1)\xi_{j+1} .$$

The claim follows and, therefore, ${}^pL^\cdot$ and $L^\cdot$ are complexes of sheaves of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules.

We notice that there is a canonical isomorphism of sheaves of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules

$$\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}} \widetilde{\to} \mathrm{Ker}(L^0 \xrightarrow{d} L^1) .$$

It gives rise to a commutative diagram of morphisms of complexes of sheaves on $\overline{X^{\log}}$

$$\begin{array}{ccc}\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}) & \longrightarrow & \overline{\tau}^{-1}(L^\cdot) \\ \downarrow & \swarrow & \\ \overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}} & & \end{array}$$

By Proposition 10.3.1, the left vertical arrow is a quasi-isomorphism. It provides the complex $\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ with the $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module structure in the derived category of complexes of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-sheaves. It follows $\overline{\tau}^{-1}(L^\cdot) \to \overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}}$ is a morphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules in the same derived category, and it induces a morphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules $L^\cdot \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})$ in the similar derived category on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$.

We say that a $R$-linear endomorphism $M$ of a sheaf of $R$-modules $F$ on $X$ is *locally nilpotent* if, for every section $f \in F(U)$ over an open subset $U \subset X$ and every point $x \in U$, there exist an open neighborhood $U'$ of $x$ in $U$ and an integer

$n \geq 1$ with $M^n(f\big|_{U'}) = 0$. For such $M$, the exponent $\exp(M) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{M^n}{n!}$ is a well defined $R$-linear automorphism of $F$. More generally, for any element $\beta \in R$ the exponent $\exp(N) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{N^n}{n!}$ of the operator $N = \beta \cdot \mathrm{Id}_F + M$ is well defined, and it is in fact equal to $\exp(\beta) \cdot \exp(M)$. Indeed, for the above local section $f$, let $l \geq 0$ be an integer with $M^{l+1}(f\big|_{U'}) = 0$. Setting $g = f\big|_{U'}$, one has

$$\begin{aligned} \exp(N)(g) &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!}(\beta \cdot \mathrm{Id} + M)^n(g) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} \left( \sum_{j=0}^{l} \binom{n}{j} M^j(\beta^{n-j} g) \right) = \\ &= \sum_{j=0}^{l} \frac{1}{j!} \left( \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\beta^n}{n!} \right) M^j(g) = \exp(\beta) \cdot \exp(M)(g) \ . \end{aligned}$$

Till the end of this subsection, assume that $r < \infty$. Then an example of such $N$ is the $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-linear endomorphism $\delta_\varpi$ acting on the sheaf $L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$. (The action of $R_{\mathbf{C}}$ on the latter sheaf is the canonical one.) Indeed, for a local section $\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda} \sum_{l=0}^{p} (\log \varpi)^l \eta_l$ of ${}^pL_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$, one has

$$\delta_\varpi(\eta) = \varpi^{-\lambda} \sum_{l=0}^{p} (\log \varpi)^l \left(\lambda \eta_l - (l+1)\eta_{l+1}\right)$$

and, therefore, $\delta_\varpi = \lambda \mathrm{Id} + M$, where $M$ is defined by $M(\eta) = -\sum_{l=0}^{p} (l+1)\eta_{l+1}$. It follows that $M^{p+1} = 0$ on ${}^pL_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$ and, in particular, $M$ is locally nilpotent on $L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$. A more general example of such an endomorphism $N$ is the product $\beta\delta_\varpi$ for $\beta \in R_{\mathbf{C}}$ (with respect to the canonical $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-module structure on $L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$). Notice that the automorphism $\exp(\beta\delta_\varpi)$ extends naturally to the sheaf $L^{(\varpi)q} = \bigoplus_{\lambda \in \mathbf{Q}_+} L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$.

**Proposition 10.4.1.** *Given a $\beta$-morphism $\varphi : \varpi \to \varpi'$ in $\Pi(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ of first (resp. second) type, the following diagram is commutative*

$$\begin{array}{ccc} L^{(\varpi)q} & \xrightarrow{e^{-\beta\delta_\varpi}} & L^{(\varpi)q} \\ \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \varphi_L^q} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \psi^{(\varpi)}} \\ L^{(\varpi')q} & \xrightarrow{\psi^{(\varpi')}} & \omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \end{array} \qquad \left( \text{resp.} \qquad \begin{array}{ccc} L^{(\varpi)q} & \xrightarrow{e^{-\overline{\beta}\delta_\varpi}} & L^{(\varpi)q} \\ \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \varphi_L^q} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle c \circ \psi^{(\varpi)}} \\ L^{(\varpi')q} & \xrightarrow{\psi^{(\varpi')}} & \omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \end{array} \right)$$

*Proof.* It suffices to verify commutativity of the diagram on each of the sheaves $L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$. For a local section $\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (\log \varpi)^l \eta_l$ of $L_\lambda^{(\varpi)q}$ (the sum is in fact finite), one has $-\beta\delta_\varpi(\eta) = -\lambda\beta\eta + M(\eta)$, where $M$ is the locally nilpotent operator with

$$M(\eta) = \varpi^{-\lambda} \beta \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (\log \varpi)^l (l+1) \eta_{l+1} \ ,$$

and therefore $\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi) = \exp(-\lambda\beta)\exp(M)$. One has

$$\begin{aligned}\exp(M)(\eta) &= \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{n=0}^{\infty}\frac{\beta^n}{n!}\left(\sum_{l=0}^{\infty}(\log\varpi)^l(l+1)\cdot\ldots\cdot(l+n)\eta_{l+n}\right) = \\ &= \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{l=0}^{\infty}\binom{j}{l}(\log\varpi)^l\cdot\beta^{j-l}\right)\eta_j = \\ &= \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}(\log(\varpi)+\beta)^j\eta_j\ .\end{aligned}$$

Thus, $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)(\eta)) = \exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\beta^j\eta_j$ (resp. $(c\circ\psi^{(\varpi)})(\exp(-\overline{\beta}\delta_\varpi)(\eta)) = \exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\beta^j\eta_j^c$). On the other hand, one has

$$\varphi^q_{L_\lambda}(\eta) = \varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}(\log(\varpi')+\beta)^j\eta_j$$

$$(\text{resp. } \varphi^q_{L_\lambda}(\eta) = \varpi'^{-\lambda}\exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}(\log(\varpi')+\beta)^j\eta_j^c\ )$$

and, therefore, $\psi^{(\varpi')}(\varphi_{L_\lambda}(\eta)) = \exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\beta^j\eta_j$ (resp. $\exp(-\lambda\beta)\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\beta^j\eta_j^c$). The required fact follows. $\square$

In the situation of Proposition 10.4.1, the isomorphisms $\varphi^q_L$ are induced by an isomorphism of complexes $\varphi_L : L^{(\varpi)\cdot} \to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}$, but the automorphisms $\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)$ do not commute with the differential of the complex $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ unless $\beta \in \mathbf{C}$. In the latter case we denote in the same way by $\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)$ the induced automorphism of the complex $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$.

**Corollary 10.4.2.** *In the situation of Proposition 10.4.1, assume that $\beta \in \mathbf{C}$. Then $\varphi_L = \exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)$ (resp. $\varphi_L = c\circ\exp(-\overline{\beta}\delta_\varpi)$).* $\square$

For example, the actions of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ and $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ on the complex $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ coincide.

**Remark 10.4.3.** Suppose that $r < \infty$ and we are given an exact functor $F$ from the derived category of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ to the derived category of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules such that $F^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}) = H^q(F(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}))$ are finitely generated over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$. Then the operator $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ on $F^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot})$ is well defined, but the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ for the action on $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ does not seem to imply the same equality for the action on $F^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot})$. The problem is that the action of $\delta_\varpi$ on the sheaves $L^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ is locally nilpotent and the space $X$ in general is not compact. In §11.4 we overcome this problem in a situation of interest for us.

10.5. **A quasi-isomorphism $L^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}\widetilde{\to}\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.** If $\eta$ is a local section of $L^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ as above, we set $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\eta) = \overline{\eta}_0$, where $\overline{\xi}$ denotes the image of a local section $\xi$ of $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$ in $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Since $(d\eta)_0 = d\log(\varpi)\wedge(-\lambda\eta_0+\eta_1)+d\eta_0$, it follows that $\overline{(d\eta)}_0 = d\overline{\eta}_0$, i.e., $\psi^{(\varpi)}$ define an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-linear morphism of complexes $\psi^{(\varpi)}_\lambda : L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda \to \omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$. Furthermore, for a subset $I \subset \mathbf{Q}\cap[0,r)$, we set $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_I = \oplus_{\lambda\in I}L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda$. The morphisms $\psi^{(\varpi)}_\lambda$ define a morphism of complexes $\psi^{(\varpi)}_I : L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_I \to \omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$. If $I = \mathbf{Q}\cap[0,r)$, we withdraw it from the notations.

**Proposition 10.5.1.** *(i) If $I$ contains all $\lambda$'s with $\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \neq 0$, then $\psi^{(\varpi)}_I : L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_I \to \omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ is a quasi-isomorphism; in particular, $\psi^{(\varpi)}$ define a $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module structure on the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$;*

*(ii) the morphisms $\delta_\varpi$ on $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$ give rise to the morphisms $\widetilde{\delta}_\varpi$ on $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (introduced in §10.1) and, in particular, they induce the Gauss-Manin connection on the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}})$;*

*(iii) if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ and $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$, then the action of $c^{(\varpi)}$ on $L^{(\varpi)q}$ is compatible with the action of the complex conjugation on $\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.*

*Proof.* Step 1. *The statement (iii) is true.* Indeed, if $\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^p(\log\varpi)^p\eta_l$ is a local section of $L^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ as above, then $c^{(\varpi)}(\eta) = \varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^p(\log\varpi)^p\eta_l^c$. It follows that $\psi^{(\varpi)}(c^{(\varpi)}(\eta)) = \overline{\eta_0^c} = (\overline{\eta}_0)^c$, and we get the claim.

In order to prove (i) and (ii), we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$.

Step 2. In order to prove (i), we have to show that, for every point $x \in X$, the map $\oplus_{\lambda\in I}\mathcal{H}^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\lambda,x}) \to \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}},x})$ induced by $\psi^{(\varpi)}$ is a bijection. We can therefore assume that $X = \mathcal{X}^h$ for $\mathcal{X} = \mathrm{Spec}(B)^h$ with $B$ as in Step 1 from the proof of Proposition 10.3.1, $x$ the zero point, and $n = m$.

Step 3. The $\mathbf{C}$-vector space $L^{(\varpi)q}_{\lambda,x}$ is generated elements of the form

$$\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}(\log\varpi)^l f\, d\log(T_{j_1})\wedge\ldots\wedge d\log(T_{j_q}) \ ,$$

where $1 \le j_1 < \ldots < j_q \le m$, $l \ge 0$, and $f \in A = \mathcal{O}_{X_{r-[\lambda]},x}$. The latter is a convergent power series $\sum_{\mathbf{k}} a_{\mathbf{k}}T^{\mathbf{k}}$ taken over $\mathbf{k} \in \mathbf{Z}^m_+$ with the property that $k_i < (r-[\lambda])e_i$ for some $1 \le i \le \mu$. Notice that the differential $d(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}(\log\varpi)^l T^{\mathbf{k}})$ is equal to

$$\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}T^{\mathbf{k}}\left(\sum_{i=1}^m\left((k_i-(\lambda-[\lambda])e_i)(\log\varpi)^l + le_i(\log\varpi)^{l-1})\right)d\log(T_i)\right) \ .$$

Let $\delta = (\delta_1,\ldots,\delta_m)$ be the tuple of functions with $\delta_i = k_i - (\lambda-[\lambda])e_i$ and, for $1 \le i \le m+1$, let $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i}$ be the subcomplex of $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda,x}$ such that $N^q_{\lambda,i}$ consists of $\mathbf{C}$-linear combinations of the above elements with $f \in A^{(i)}_\delta$ (see Construction 10.2.2). There is an isomorphism of complexes

$$\bigoplus_{i=1}^{m+1} N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i}\widetilde{\to}L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda} \ .$$

Step 4. For $l \ge 0$, let $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,l}$ be the subcomplex of $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i}$ consisting of forms in which the degree in $\log(\varpi)$ is at most $l$. One has $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,0} = E^{\cdot}_{\delta,i}$, $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i} = \bigcup_{l=0}^\infty N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,l}$, and there are exact sequences of complexes

$$0 \to N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,l} \to N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,l+1} \to E^{\cdot}_{\delta,i} \to 0 \ .$$

Thus, if $1 \le i \le m$, the complex $E^{\cdot}_{\delta,i}$ is exact, and from the above exact sequence follow that all of the complexes $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i,l}$ are exact and, therefore, the complex $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,i}$ is exact, i.e., there is a canonical quasi-isomorphism complexes $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,m+1}\widetilde{\to}L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\lambda,x}$. The complex $N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,m+1}$ is generated by the elements as above with sums $\sum_{\mathbf{k}} a_{\mathbf{k}}T^{\mathbf{k}}$ taken over tuples $\mathbf{k} \in \mathbf{Z}^m_+$ with the property that $k_i = (\lambda-[\lambda])e_i$ for all $1 \le i \le m$.

Notice that such a tuple exists only for $\lambda$'s of the form $[\lambda]+\frac{p}{e}$ with $0\le p<e$. In particular, if $\lambda$ is not of this form, then the complex $L^{\cdot}_{X,\lambda,x}$ is acyclic.

Step 5. Suppose $\lambda=[\lambda]+\frac{p}{e}$ with $0\le p<e$. Then for the above tuples $\mathbf{k}$, one has $k_i=pe'_i$, $1\le i\le m$. It follows that each element of $N^q_{\lambda,m+1}$ is of the form

$$\eta=\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}t^p\sum_{j=0}^{l}(\log\varpi)^j\xi_j\ ,$$

where $t$ denotes the image of $T_1^{e'_1}\cdot\ldots\cdot T_m^{e'_m}$ in $A$, and $\xi_j$ are $\mathbf{C}$-linear combination of the $q$-forms $d\log(T_{j_1})\wedge\ldots\wedge d\log(T_{j_q})$. Notice that

$$d\eta=\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}t^p\sum_{j=0}^{l}j(\log\varpi)^{j-1}d\log(\varpi)\wedge\xi_j\ .$$

It follows that $d\eta=0$ if and only if $d\log(\varpi)\wedge\xi_j=0$ for all $1\le j\le l$. We also notice that, since $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\eta)=\varpi^{[\lambda]}t^p\xi_0$, Proposition 10.2.1 implies that the map considered in Step 2 is a surjection, and it remains to verify that the map $\psi^{(\varpi)}:\mathcal{H}^q(N^{\cdot}_{\lambda,m+1})\to\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}},x})$ is an injection.

Step 6. Suppose that for the above element $\eta$, one has $d\eta=0$ and $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\eta)=0$. It follows that $\xi_0=0$ and, therefore,

$$\eta=d\left(\varpi^{-\lambda}\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}t^p\sum_{j=1}^{k}\frac{1}{j+1}(\log\varpi)^{j+1}\chi_j\right)\ ,$$

where $\chi_j$ is a $(q+1)$-form of the same kind with $\xi_j=d\log(\varpi)\wedge\chi_j$. (Existence of such $\chi_j$'s follows from the fact that the Koszul complex $\mathrm{K}_{\mathbf{C}}(D_1,\ldots,D_m)$ for the $\mathbf{C}$-linear maps $D_i:\mathbf{C}\to\mathbf{C}$ of multiplication by $e_i$ is exact.) Thus, the map $\mathcal{H}^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\lambda,x})\to\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}},x})$ is injective, and (i) is proved.

Step 7. Let $C(f)^{\cdot}$ be the cone of the morphism $f$ from the exact sequence of complexes $(*)$ in 10.1 for $X_{\mathbf{C}}$ over $R_{\mathbf{C}}$. In order to prove (ii), it suffices to construct a morphism of complexes $\gamma^{(\varpi)}:L^{(\varpi)\cdot}\to C(f)^{\cdot}$ that makes the following diagram commutative

$$\begin{array}{ccc} L^{(\varpi)\cdot} & \xrightarrow{\gamma^{(\varpi)}} & C(f)^{\cdot} \\ & \searrow^{\psi^{(\varpi)}} & \downarrow{\scriptstyle\widetilde{\delta}_{\varpi}} \\ & & \omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}} \end{array}$$

Recall that, for a local section $\eta=\varpi^{-\lambda}\sum_{l=0}^{l}(\log\varpi)^l\eta_l$ of $L^{(\varpi)q}$, one has $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\eta)=\overline{\eta}_0$. Recall also that $C(f)^q=(\omega^1_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}\otimes_{R_{\mathbf{C}}}\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}})\oplus\omega^q_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}$, and $\widetilde{\delta}_{\varpi}(d\log(\varpi)\otimes\xi,\chi)=\lambda\xi-\overline{\chi}$. We define a $\mathbf{C}$-linear homomorphism of sheaves $\gamma^{(\varpi)}:L^{(\varpi)q}\to C(f)^q$ by

$$\gamma^{(\varpi)}(\eta)=(d\log(\varpi)\otimes(-\lambda\overline{\eta}_0+\overline{\eta}_1),\eta_0)\ .$$

We see that $\psi^{(\varpi)}(\eta)=\widetilde{\delta}_{\varpi}(\gamma^{(\varpi)}(\eta))$, and we have to verify that $\gamma^{(\varpi)}$ is a morphism of complexes. For this we recall that $(d\eta)_0=d\log(\varpi)\wedge(-\lambda\eta_0+\eta_1)+d\eta_0$ and, in particular, $(\overline{d\eta})_0 = d\overline{\eta}_0$, and notice that $(d\eta)_1 = d\log(\varpi)\wedge(-\lambda\eta_1+2\eta_2)+d\eta_1$ and, in particular, $(\overline{d\eta})_1 = d\overline{\eta}_1$. It follows that

$$\gamma^{(\varpi)}(d\eta) = (d\log(\varpi)\otimes(-\lambda d\overline{\eta}_0 + d\overline{\eta}_1), d\log(\varpi)\wedge(-\lambda\eta_0+\eta_1)+d\eta_0) = d(\gamma^{(\varpi)}\eta) \ .$$

This implies the required fact. □

**Corollary 10.5.2.** *The action of the ring $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$ on the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}})$ is compatible with the $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module structure induced by that on the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.* □

In the situation of Proposition 10.4.1, the isomorphism of complexes $\varphi_L : L^{(\varpi)\cdot} \to L^{(\varpi')\cdot}$ gives rise to an automorphism $\varphi_\omega$ of the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ in the derived category. If $r<\infty$ and $\beta\in\mathbf{C}$, we denote by $\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)$ the automorphism of the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ induced by the corresponding automorphism of $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}$.

**Corollary 10.5.3.** *In the situation of Proposition 10.4.1, assume that $r<\infty$ and $\beta\in\mathbf{C}$. Then the automorphisms $\varphi_\omega$ and $\exp(-\beta\delta_\varpi)$ (resp. $c\circ\exp(-\overline{\beta}\delta_\varpi)$) of the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ coincide.* □

For example, the actions of $\sigma^{(\varpi)}$ and $\exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ on the complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ coincide.

If $r=1$, the assumption of Corollary 10.5.3 holds for all morphisms in the category $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1})$. In this case one also has $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1}) = \mathbf{C}[\delta_\varpi]$, and the element $\delta_\varpi$ does not depend on $\varpi$. Thus, if $\delta$ denotes the operator induced by $\delta_\varpi$ on $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1}}$, one has $\varphi_\omega = \exp(-\beta\delta)$. In particular, the action of the groupoid $\Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1})$ on $\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},1}}$ is completely determined by the operator $\delta$.

10.6. **An isomorphism $R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$.** By Theorem 5.4.1, there is a canonical isomorphism of sheaves of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$

$$\chi : \mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}\widetilde{\to}\overline{\tau}_*((\underline{R}_{\mathbf{C}})_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) = \overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$$

which induces a morphism of complexes of sheaves of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules on $X_{\mathbf{C}}$

$$f : R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})) \to R\overline{\tau}_*((\underline{R}_{\mathbf{C}})_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) = R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} \ .$$

By Proposition 10.3.1, there is an isomorphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules in the derived category

$$g : R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}}))\widetilde{\to}R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \ .$$

We construct a morphism $\theta : L^{\cdot} \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}$ in the derived category as the following composition of the homomorphisms

$$L^{\cdot} \to R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^{\cdot}_{\overline{X^{\log}}}) \stackrel{g^{-1}}{\to} R\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}})) \stackrel{f}{\to} R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}} \ .$$

**Proposition 10.6.1.** *The morphism $\theta$ is an isomorphism in the derived category of complexes of sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces, and it gives rise to an isomorphism of $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules*

$$R\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{F}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}} R_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}\omega^{\cdot}_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$$

*Proof.* It suffices to assume $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{C}$ and to prove that, for every point $x\in X$ and every integer $q\ge 0$, $\varphi$ induces an isomorphism $\mathcal{H}^q(L^\cdot_x)\widetilde{\to}R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{C}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x\otimes_{\mathbf{C}}R$ and, for this, it suffices to verify commutativity of the following diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R,x}) & \xleftarrow{u} & \mathcal{C}_{X,x}\otimes_{\mathbf{Z}}\bigwedge^q\overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X,x} & \xrightarrow{v} & R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{C}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x\otimes_{\mathbf{C}}R\\ \downarrow{\scriptstyle\psi_x^{-1}} & & & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle f_x}\\ \mathcal{H}^q(L^\cdot_x) & \longrightarrow & R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x & \xrightarrow{g_x^{-1}} & R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_X))_x\end{array}$$

where $u$ is the second isomorphism of Proposition 10.2.1, and $v$ is induced by the isomorphism of Theorem 5.3.1.

We may assume that $X=\mathcal{X}^h$ for $\mathcal{X}=\mathrm{Spec}(B)$ with $B$ as in Step 1 from the proof of Proposition 10.3.1. We set $e=\text{g.c.d.}(e_1,\dots,e_m)$ and denote by $t$ the image of the element $T_1^{e'_1}\cdot\ldots\cdot T_m^{e'_m}$ in $\mathcal{O}(X)$, where $e'_i=\frac{e_i}{e}$. Furthermore, the group $\overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X,x}$ is freely generated by the images of the coordinate functions $T_1,\dots,T_{m-1}$ and, in particular, its $q$-th external power is zero for $q\ge m$. We may therefore assume that $q\le m-1$. Each element of the tensor product in the first row is a $\mathbf{C}$-linear combination of elements of the form $\gamma=t^jT_{i_1}\wedge\ldots\wedge T_{i_q}$. It suffices to check commutativity on these elements. After a permutation of coordinates, we may assume that $\gamma=t^jT_1\wedge\ldots\wedge T_q$. Then $u(\gamma)$ is represented by the element $t^jd\log(T_1)\wedge\ldots\wedge d\log(T_q)$, and so $\psi_x^{-1}(u(\gamma))$ is represented by the element $\varpi^{-\frac{j}{e}}t^jd\log(T_1)\wedge\ldots\wedge d\log(T_q)$ of $\mathcal{H}^q(L^\cdot)_x$ that maps to $\mathcal{H}^q(\overline{\tau}_*\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x$ which, in its turn, maps to $R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x$.

On the other hand, there is a canonical homomorphism of sheaves

$$\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_X))\otimes_{\mathbf{Z}_X}\bigwedge^q\overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X,x}\to R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\tau}^{-1}(\mathcal{C}_X))$$

and the image of the element $\eta=t^jT_1\wedge\ldots\wedge T_q$ from the stalk at $x$ of the sheaf on the left hand side in the stalk of that on the right hand side goes under the map $g_x$ to the class of $\varpi^{-\frac{j}{e}}t^jd\log(T_1)\wedge\ldots\wedge d\log(T_q)$ in $R^q\overline{\tau}_*(\overline{\omega}^\cdot_{\overline{X^{\log}}})_x$. Thus, commutativity of the above diagram follows from the fact that both maps $v$ and $f_x$ are induces by the same isomorphism $\chi:\mathcal{C}_X\widetilde{\to}\overline{\tau}_*(\mathbf{C}_{\overline{X^{\log}}})\otimes_{\mathbf{C}}R$. □

**Corollary 10.6.2.** *If $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, the isomorphism of Proposition 10.6.1 provides the $W(R_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $\omega^\cdot_{X_{\mathbf{C}}/R_{\mathbf{C}}}$ (considered as an object of the derived category) with an $R_{\mathbf{C}}$-semilinear automorphism of order two $\vartheta$.* □

**Corollary 10.6.3.** *For every distinguished formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ over $K^\circ$, there is a compatible system of canonical isomorphisms of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules in the derived category*

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{F}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}\widetilde{\to}\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{\mathbf{C},s_r}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}}\ .$$

Here we set $\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}=\mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{K^\circ}K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$.

*Proof.* By the definition of $R\Psi^h_\eta$, the complex on the left hand side of the isomorphism in Proposition 10.6.1 is $R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{F}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta})$, and the required fact follows. □

## 11. Comparison with de Rham cohomology

11.1. **Formulation of results.** Let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field (whose valuation is not assumed to be nontrivial). For a morphism of $k$-analytic spaces $\varphi : Y \to X$, we consider the sheaf of relative one-differential forms $\Omega^1_{Y/X}$ as a sheaf in the G-topology on $Y$ (it is denoted by $\Omega_{Y_G/X_G}$ in [Ber93, §1.4]). Its exterior powers $\Omega^q_{Y/X}$ form a relative de Rham complex $\Omega^{\cdot}_{Y/X}$. The *de Rham cohomology groups* (of $Y$ over $X$) are groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(Y/X) = R^q\Gamma(X, \Omega^{\cdot}_{Y/X})$. We are in fact interested only in the following situation.

Let $X$ be a rig-smooth $K$-analytic space. The de Rham complex and de Rham cohomology of the canonical morphism $X \to \mathcal{M}(K)$ are denoted by $\Omega^{\cdot}_{X/K}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K)$, respectively. By a theorem of Kiehl [Kie67], if $\mathcal{X}$ is a smooth scheme of finite type over $K$, there is a canonical isomorphism $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathcal{X}/K) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathcal{X}^{\rm an}/K)$. Furthermore, $X$ can be also considered as a non-Archimedean $\mathbf{F}$-analytic space for the field $\mathbf{F}$ provided with the trivial valuation. The de Rham complex and de Rham cohomology of the canonical morphism $X \to \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{F})$ are denoted by $\Omega^{\cdot}_X$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(X)$, respectively. Notice that, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, there are canonical isomorphisms $H^q_{\rm dR}(X) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(X_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c \rangle}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/K_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c \rangle}$.

For example, for the morphism $\mathcal{M}(K) \to \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{F})$, one has $\Omega^0_K = K$ and $\Omega^1_K$ is a one dimensional $K$-vector space generated by the one form $d\log(\varpi) = \frac{d\varpi}{\varpi}$ for any generator $\varpi$ of the maximal ideal $K^{\circ\circ}$ of $K^\circ$. In particular, $H^0_{\rm dR}(K) = \mathbf{F}$ and $H^1_{\rm dR}(K)$ is a one-dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector space with a canonical generator, the image of $d\log(\varpi)$ which does not depend on the choice of $\varpi$.

Furthermore, consider the exact sequence of complexes

$$0 \to \Omega^1_K \otimes_K \Omega^{\cdot}_{X/K}[-1] \stackrel{f}{\to} \Omega^{\cdot}_X \to \Omega^{\cdot}_{X/K} \to 0 \ .$$

As in §10.1, one shows that this exact sequence gives rise to a connection

$$\nabla : H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K) \to \Omega^1_K \otimes_K H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K)$$

called the *Gauss-Manin connection.* . For a generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$, the composition of the latter with the isomorphism $\Omega^1_K \widetilde{\to} K : d\log(\varpi) \mapsto 1$, gives rise to $\mathbf{F}$-linear endomorphisms

$$\delta_\varpi : H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K) \to H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K) \ ,$$

which provide the $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces $H^q_{\rm dR}(X/K)$ with an action of the algebra $W(K)$.

Furthermore, let $k$ be a non-Archimedean field with discrete valuation which is not assumed to be nontrivial. Given a morphism $\varphi : \mathfrak{X} \to \mathfrak{Y}$ of special formal schemes over $k^\circ$, the sheaf of relative differential one-forms $\Omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$ is the conormal sheaf of the diagonal immersion $\mathfrak{X} \to \mathfrak{X} \times_{\mathfrak{Y}} \mathfrak{X}$. It is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$-module which gives rise to the sheaf of relative differential one-forms $\Omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$. (If $\mathfrak{X} = {\rm Spf}(A)$ and $\mathfrak{Y} = {\rm Spf}(B)$, then $\Omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$ is the sheaf associated to the finite $A$-module $I/I^2$, where $I$ is the kernel of the multiplication homomorphism $A \widehat{\otimes}_B A \to A$.)

Furthermore, suppose that $\varphi : \mathfrak{X} \to \mathfrak{Y}$ is a morphism of fine log special formal schemes over $k^\circ$. The sheaf of relative logarithmic differential one-forms $\omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$ is a coherent $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$-module which is the quotient of $\Omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}} \oplus (\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} M^{gr}_{\mathfrak{X}})$ by the $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{X}}$-submodule generated by local sections of the form $(d\beta(m), 0) - (0, \beta(m) \otimes m)$ and $(0, 1 \otimes n)$ with $m$ a local section of $M_{\mathfrak{X}}$ and $n$ the image of a local section of $M_{\mathfrak{Y}}$ in $M_{\mathfrak{X}}$. The image of a local section $m$ of $M^{gr}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ under the homomorphism $M^{gr}_{\mathfrak{X}} \to \omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}} : m \mapsto (0, 1 \otimes m)$ is denoted by $d\log(m)$. The exterior powers of $\omega^1_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$ form a relative log de Rham complex $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}}$. The *log de Rham cohomology groups* (of $\mathfrak{X}$ over $\mathfrak{Y}$) are the groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}) = R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}, \omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}})$. If both formal schemes $\mathfrak{X}$ and $\mathfrak{Y}$ are of finite type over $k^\circ$ and their log structures are vertical, then $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}} \otimes_{k^\circ} k = \Omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta/\mathfrak{Y}_\eta}$ and, therefore,

$$H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/\mathfrak{Y}) \otimes_{k^\circ} k = H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta/\mathfrak{Y}_\eta) \ .$$

Let us turn back to our field $K$, and let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a quasicompact separated distinguished special formal scheme over $K^\circ$ provided with the canonical log structure. The de Rham complex and de Rham cohomology groups of the canonical morphism $\mathfrak{X} \to {\rm Spf}(K^\circ)$ will be denoted by $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ)$, respectively. By the previous paragraph, if $\mathfrak{X}$ is of finite type over $K^\circ$, then $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ} \otimes_{K^\circ} K = \Omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta/K}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \otimes_{K^\circ} K = H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_\eta/K)$. The log formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ can be also considered as a log special formal scheme over the field $\mathbf{F}$ provided with the trivial valuation and trivial log structure. The corresponding de Rham complex and de Rham cohomology groups are denoted by $\omega^{\cdot}_{\mathfrak{X}}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X})$, respectively.

For example, for the morphism ${\rm Spf}(K^\circ) \to {\rm Spf}(\mathbf{F})$, one has $\omega^0_{K^\circ} = K^\circ$ and $\omega^1_{K^\circ}$ is a free $K^\circ$-module of rank one generated by the one form $d\log(\varpi)$ for any generator $\varpi$ of $K^{\circ\circ}$. In particular, $\omega^1_{K^\circ} \otimes_{K^\circ} K = \Omega^1_K$, $H^0_{\rm dR}(K^\circ) = \mathbf{F}$ and $H^1_{\rm dR}(K^\circ)$ is a one-dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector space with a canonical generator, the image of $d\log(\varpi)$ which does not depend on the choice of $\varpi$.

As above (and §10.1), one defines the *Gauss-Manin connection*

$$\nabla : H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \to \omega^1_{K^\circ} \otimes_{K^\circ} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \ ,$$

which gives rise to an action of the ring $W(K^\circ)$ on the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ)$ and, in particular, to $\mathbf{F}$-linear endomorphisms $\delta_\varpi : H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \to H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ)$.

Recall that $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F})$ are quasi-unipotent $\Pi(K)$-modules of finite dimension over $\mathbf{F}$ and, by §4.5, the tensor products $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$ are provided with the structure of a distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. We set $\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}} = \mathfrak{X}\widehat{\otimes}_{K^\circ} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$. Notice that, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, then the action of the complex conjugation $c$ on $\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}$ induces an action on the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$, and one has $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c \rangle}$ and $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})^{\langle c \rangle}$. Recall also that in this case we denoted by $c^{(\varpi)}$ the automorphism of $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$, which is the 0-morphism of second type.

**Theorem 11.1.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a quasicompact distinguished special formal scheme over $K^\circ$. Then*

(i) *there is a canonical isomorphism of finitely dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces*

$$H^q(\mathfrak{X}_\eta, \mathbf{F}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}) \ ;$$

(ii) *the groups $H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ have the structure of a single distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules*

$$H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\rm dR}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}) \ .$$

(iii) *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ *and* $\varpi \in \Pi(K)$*, the action of* $c^{(\varpi)}$ *on* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ *coincides with that of the complex conjugation* $c$*.*

**Corollary 11.1.2.** *If* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$*, the groups* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ)$ *have the structure of a single distinguished* $W(K^\circ)$*-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished* $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$*-modules (considered as* $\Pi(K)$*-modules)*

$$H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{R}) \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \otimes_{K^\circ} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \ . \qquad \square$$

In the situation of Corollary 11.1.2, one can describe the $\mathbf{R}\Pi(K)$-quasi-unipotent module $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{R})$ and the distinguished $W(K^\circ)$-module $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ)$ in terms of one another (see §0.8 and Example 4.5.7).

Theorem 11.1.1 implies that, for any admissible proper morphism between quasicompact separated distinguished log special formal schemes $\mathfrak{X}' \to \mathfrak{X}$, there are canonical isomorphisms

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}') \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}'/K^\circ) \ .$$

This allows us to define de Rham cohomology groups of a separated rig-smooth restricted $K$-analytic space as follows. (A restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$ is separated if the $K$-analytic space $X$ is separated.)

For a separated rig-smooth restricted $K$-analytic space $\widehat{X}$, we define

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}) = \varprojlim H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ) = \varprojlim H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \ ,$$

where the projective limits are taken over distinguished formal models $\mathfrak{X}$ of $\widehat{X}$. Notice that all transition homomorphisms in these projective systems are isomorphisms.

**Corollary 11.1.3.** *Let* $\widehat{X}$ *be a rig-smooth restricted* $K$*-analytic space. Then*

(i) *there is a canonical isomorphism of finite dimensional* $\mathbf{F}$*-vector spaces*

$$H^q(\widehat{X}, \mathbf{F}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}) \ ;$$

(ii) *the groups* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ *have the structure of a single distinguished* $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$*-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished* $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$*-modules*

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}_{\mathbf{C}}/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}) \ ;$$

(iii) *if* $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$*, the groups* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ)$ *have the structure of a single distinguished* $W(K^\circ)$*-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished* $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$*-modules (considered as* $\Pi(K)$*-modules)*

$$H^q(\overline{\widehat{X}}, \mathbf{R}) \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{X}/K^\circ) \otimes_{K^\circ} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} \ . \qquad \square$$

Here is a consequence of Corollary 11.1.3 for compact rig-smooth $K$-analytic spaces. For this we say that a $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $D$ is *distinguished* if it is isomorphic to the tensor product $D^\circ \otimes_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}} K_{\mathbf{C}}$ for a distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module $D^\circ$. It is easy to see that the functor $D^\circ \mapsto D^\circ \otimes_{K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}} K_{\mathbf{C}}$ from the category of distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules to that of distinguished $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules is an equivalence of categories. Similarly, if $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, we say that a $W(K)$-module $D$ is *distinguished* if it is isomorphic to $D^\circ \otimes_{K^\circ} K$ for a distinguished $W(K^\circ)$-module $D$. It follows from Corollary 4.5.6 that the correspondence $D \mapsto D \otimes_K K_{\mathbf{C}}$ gives rise to an equivalence between the category of distinguished $W(K)$-modules and that of distinguished $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules (considered as $\Pi(K)$-modules).

**Corollary 11.1.4.** *Let $X$ be a compact rig-smooth $K$-analytic space. Then*

(i) *there are canonical isomorphisms of finite dimensional* $\mathbf{F}$*-vector spaces*

$$H^q(X,\mathbf{F})\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X) \ ;$$

(ii) *the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/K_{\mathbf{C}})$ have the structure of a distinguished $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules*

$$H^q(\overline{X},\mathbf{F})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}}K_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_{\mathbf{C}}/K_{\mathbf{C}}) \ ;$$

(iii) *if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/K)$ have the structure of a single distinguished $W(K)$-module, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(K_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules (considered as $\Pi(K)$-modules)*

$$H^q(\overline{X},\mathbf{R})\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}K_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/K)\otimes_K K_{\mathbf{C}} \ . \qquad \square$$

Suppose now we are given a separated distinguished scheme $\mathcal{X}$ of finite type over $\mathcal{K}^\circ=\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{F},0}$ and a closed subscheme $\mathcal{Y}\subset\mathcal{X}_s$ which is a union of some of the irreducible components of $\mathcal{X}_s$. Then $(\mathcal{X}^h,\mathcal{Y}^h)$ is a distinguished log germ over $(\mathbb{F},0)$ in the sense of Definition 5.1.1(ii). It gives rise to a logarithmic space structure on $\mathcal{Y}^h$ and was an object of study of the previous section in the case $r=\infty$. Instead of the notation $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{Y}^h)$ and $H^q(\mathcal{Y}^h/K^\circ_\infty)$ for the corresponding de Rham cohomology groups used in §10.1, we denote them by $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h))$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)/\mathcal{K}^\circ)$, respectively. By Corollary 10.5.2, the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\mathbf{C}}/\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ are provided with the structure of a $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-module. It follows that the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)/\mathcal{K}^\circ)$ are provided with the structure of a $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$-module (considered as a $\pi(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$-module).

**Theorem 11.1.5.** *In the above situation, the following is true:*

(i) *there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_\eta,\mathbf{F})\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h))\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}) \ ;$$

(ii) *the $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ)$-module structure on the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)/\mathcal{K}^\circ)$ is distinguished, and there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ)$-modules*

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)/\mathcal{K}^\circ)\otimes_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}/\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ) \ ;$$

(iii) *there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules*

$$H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\overline{\eta}},\mathbf{F})\otimes_{\mathbf{F}}\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\mathbf{C}}/\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}) \ ,$$

*which induce the isomorphisms of Theorem 11.1.1(ii) for $(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_{\mathbf{C}}$;*

(iv) *if $\mathbf{F}=\mathbf{R}$, there are canonical isomorphisms of distinguished $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules (considered as $\Pi(\mathcal{K})$-modules)*

$$H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\overline{\eta}},\mathbf{R})\otimes_{\mathbf{R}}\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)/\mathcal{K}^\circ)\otimes_{\mathcal{K}^\circ}\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}$$

*which induce the isomorphisms of Corollary 11.1.2 for $\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}$*

Notice that, if $\mathcal{X}$ is proper over $\mathcal{K}^\circ$, GAGA implies that there are canonical isomorphisms

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}/\mathcal{K}^\circ)\widetilde{\to}H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h/\mathcal{K}^\circ) \ .$$

Theorem 11.1.1 will be proved in §11.4 using results from §10 and §§11.2-11.3, and Theorem 11.1.5 will be proved in §11.5.

## 11.2. **Comparison of algebraic and analytic de Rham cohomology.**

**Theorem 11.2.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a quasicompact distinguished special formal scheme of $K^\circ$. Then for every $1 \le r < \infty$ and every $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$, there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}/K^\circ_r) \ .$$

*Proof.* If $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, there are canonical isomorphisms $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}((\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}})_{s_r})^{\langle c \rangle}$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}((\mathfrak{X}_{\mathbf{C}})^h_{s_r})^{\langle c \rangle}$ and there are similar isomorphisms for the second pair of groups. This reduces the situation to the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. In this case we use the reasoning from the proof of Grothendieck's theorem [Gro66].

Step 1. *The statement is true if there exists an open immersion $\mathfrak{X} \hookrightarrow \mathfrak{X}' = \widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is a proper distinguished scheme over $K^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ is a union of irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ such that $\mathcal{Z} \backslash \mathfrak{X}_s = \mathcal{Z} \cap \mathcal{W}$, where $\mathcal{W}$ is a union of some of the other irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s$.*

Indeed, in this case $\mathfrak{X}'_{s_r}$ is a proper log scheme over $K^\circ_r$, the open immersion $j : \mathfrak{X}_{s_r} \hookrightarrow \mathfrak{X}'_{s_r}$ is strict, and the complement of $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ is locally defined by one equation. For every $q \ge 0$, the coherent sheaves $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r},\lambda}$ and $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r}$ are the restrictions to $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ of the coherent sheaves $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}'_{s_r},\lambda}$ and $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}'_{s_r}/K^\circ_r}$, respectively. Since the morphism of schemes $j$ is affine, it follows that $R^p j_*(\mathcal{F}) = 0$ for any coherent sheaf $\mathcal{F}$ on $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ and any $p \ge 1$ and, therefore, the de Rham cohomology groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r})$ and $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r)$ are the $q$-th hypercohomology groups of the complexes $j_*\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r},\lambda}$ and $j_*\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r}$, respectively. Since the scheme $\mathfrak{X}'_{s_r}$ is proper, GAGA implies that

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}'^h_{s_r}, (j_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r},\lambda})^h) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}'^h_{s_r}, (j_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r})^h) \ .$$

On the other hand, since the complement of $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ is locally defined by one equation, each point of $\mathfrak{X}'^h_{s_r}$ has a fundamental system of open Stein neighborhoods whose intersections with $\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$ is a Stein space. It follows that $R^p j^h_*(F) = 0$ for any coherent sheaf $F$ on $\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$ and any $p \ge 1$ and, therefore, one has

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}'^h_{s_r}, j^h_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r},\lambda}) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}/K^\circ_r) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathfrak{X}'^h_{s_r}, j^h_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}/K^\circ_r}) \ .$$

Thus, in order to verify the claim, it suffices to show that there are quasi-isomorphisms of complexes

$$(j_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r},\lambda})^h \widetilde{\to} j^h_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r},\lambda} \text{ and } (j_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r})^h \widetilde{\to} j^h_*\omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}/K^\circ_r} \ .$$

This is a purely local complex analytic fact which follows from Lemma 10.2.4.

Step 2. Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be an arbitrary quasicompact distinguished formal scheme over $K^\circ$. *Then each point of $\mathfrak{X}$ has an étale affine neighborhood which satisfies the assumptions of Step 1.* Indeed, by Definition 3.1.1(ii), each point of $\mathfrak{X}$ has an étale neighborhood of the form $\widehat{\mathcal{Y}}_{/\mathcal{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{Y}$ is an affine distinguished scheme over $K^\circ$ and $\mathcal{Z}$ is a union of irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}_s$. First of all, replacing $\mathcal{Y}$ by an étale neighborhood, we may assume that all of the irreducible components of the support of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ are smooth. Furthermore, take an open immersion $\mathcal{Y} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}'$ in an integral projective scheme over $K^\circ$. After replacing $\mathcal{Y}'$ by a blow-up, we may assume that $\mathcal{Y}'_s \backslash \mathcal{Y}_s$ is a union of irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}'_s$. By Temkin's theorem [Tem08, 1.1], there exists a blow-up $\mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}'$ whose center is disjoint from $\mathcal{Y}$. The scheme $\mathcal{Y}''$ is proper and distinguished, the morphism $\mathcal{Y}'' \to \mathcal{Y}'$ is an isomorphism over $\mathcal{Y}$ and, in particular, there is an open immersion $\mathcal{Y} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}''$, and the complement of $\mathcal{Y}_s$ in $\mathcal{Y}''_s$ is a union of irreducible components of $\mathcal{Y}''_s$. The claim follows.

Step 3. *The theorem is true for* $\mathfrak{X}$. Indeed, by Step 2, there exists an étale hypercovering $\mathfrak{Y}_\bullet \to \mathfrak{X}$ such that each $\mathfrak{Y}_n$, $n \geq 0$, is a finite disjoint union of formal schemes which satisfy the assumptions of Step 1. By Step 1, the required statement is true for all $\mathfrak{Y}_n$'s. Since the de Rham cohomology groups considered are expressed in terms of the schemes and their complex analytifications related to $\mathfrak{Y}_n$'s, the claim follows. □

**Corollary 11.2.2.** *In the situation of Theorem 11.2.1, the cohomology groups* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r})$ *and* $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r)$ *have finite dimension over* $\mathbf{F}$.

*Proof.* We may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$, and set $X = \mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}$. By Proposition 10.2.1, one has $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X,\lambda}) = \mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{gr}_X$ (resp. $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/K^\circ_r}) = \mathcal{C}_X \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_{X/K^\circ_r}$). The sheaves on the right hand side are constructible sheaves of $\mathbf{C}$-vector spaces on $X$. Since $X$ is the analytification of a scheme of finite type over $\mathbf{C}$, it follows from [Ver76, 2.4.2] that the cohomology groups of $X$ with coefficients in those sheaves have finite dimension over $\mathbf{C}$. This implies that the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r})$ (resp. $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r)$), which coincide, by Theorem 11.2.1, with the groups $H^q_{\mathrm{dR},\lambda}(X)$ (resp. $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/K^\circ_r)$) have finite dimension over $\mathbf{F}$. □

Till the end of this subsection $\mathcal{X}$ denotes the log scheme $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$ over $K^\circ_r$, and we set $R = K^\circ_r$. Recall that in §10.4, we introduced, for each $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$, $\varpi \in \Pi(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ and $p, q \geq 0$, a coherent $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}}}$-module ${}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda = {}^pL^{(\varpi)q}_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$. This sheaf is the analytification of the coherent $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}}$-module ${}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda = {}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ with local sections, which are convenient to represent in the form

$$\eta = \varpi^{-\lambda} \sum_{l=0}^{p} (\log \varpi)^l \eta_l \ ,$$

where $\eta_0, \ldots, \eta_p$ are local sections of the subsheaf $\widetilde{\varpi}^{[\lambda]}\omega^q_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}}$ of $\omega^q_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}}$. The sheaves ${}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ form a complex ${}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda = {}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ with respect to the differential defined by the same formula as for the complex ${}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda = {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$. For $q \geq 0$, we set $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda = \varinjlim_p {}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ and $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q} = \oplus_{\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0,r)} \mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$. The analytification of the latter $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}}$-modules are the $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}}}$-modules $L^{(\varpi)q}_\lambda$ and $L^{(\varpi)q}$, and they form complexes $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda = \mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot} = \mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}}$, respectively.

**Corollary 11.2.3.** *In the above situation, there are canonical isomorphisms of hypercohomology groups*

$$R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}}, {}^p\mathcal{L}^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda) \widetilde{\to} R^q\Gamma(\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}}, {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_\lambda) \ ,$$

*and these groups have finite dimension over* $\mathbf{C}$.

*Proof.* For each $p \geq 1$, the homomorphisms ${}^{p}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)q} \to {}^{0}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)q} : \eta \mapsto \varpi^{-\lambda}\eta_p$ gives rise to an exact sequence of complexes

$$0 \to {}^{p-1}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot} \to {}^{p}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot} \to {}^{0}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot} \to 0 \ .$$

By induction, this reduces the situation to the case $p = 0$. Furthermore, there are isomorphisms of complexes

$$\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}/\widetilde{\varpi}^{r-[\lambda]}\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \widetilde{\to} {}^{0}\mathcal{L}_\lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot} \text{ and } \omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}/\widetilde{\varpi}^{r-[\lambda]}\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda} \widetilde{\to} {}^{0}L_\lambda^{(\varpi)\cdot} \ .$$

The complexes on the left hand side coincide with $\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}'_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ and $\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}'^h_{\mathbf{C}},\lambda}$ for the scheme $\mathcal{X}' = \mathfrak{X}_{s_{r-[\lambda]}}$. The required facts therefore follow from Theorem 11.2.1 and Corollary 11.2.2. □

### 11.3. **de Rham cohomology as a projective limit.**

**Theorem 11.3.1.** *Let $\mathfrak{X}$ be a quasicompact distinguished special formal scheme of $K^\circ$. Then there are canonical isomorphisms*

$$H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}) \widetilde{\to} \varprojlim_r H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}) \text{ and } H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}/K^\circ) \widetilde{\to} \varprojlim_r H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r) \ .$$

The following proposition and lemma are slight modifications of Theorem (4.5) and Lemma (4.6) from Hartshorne's paper [Har75]. All complexes $F^\cdot$ considered here are assumed to be such that $F^q = 0$ for $q < 0$.

**Proposition 11.3.2.** *Let $\{F^\cdot_r\}_{r\geq 1}$ is a projective system of complexes of abelian sheaves on a topological space $X$, and set $F^\cdot = \varprojlim_r F^\cdot_r$. Let also $T$ be a functor from the category of abelian sheaves to that of abelian groups that commutes with direct products. Assume that there is a base $\mathcal{B}$ of the topology of $X$ such that for each $U \in \mathcal{B}$*

1. *the homomorphisms $F^q_{r+1}(U) \to F^q_r(U)$ are surjective for all $q \geq 0$ and $r \geq 1$;*
2. *$H^p(U, F^q_r) = 0$ for all $p > 0$, $q \geq 0$ and $r \geq 1$.*

*Then for each $p \in \mathbf{Z}$, there is an exact sequence*

$$0 \to \varprojlim_r{}^{(1)}\ R^{p-1}T(F^\cdot_r) \to R^pT(F^\cdot) \stackrel{\alpha_p}{\to} \varprojlim_r R^pT(F^\cdot_r) \to 0 \ .$$

*In particular, if for some $p$, the system $\{R^{p-1}T(F^\cdot_r)\}_{r\geq 1}$ satisfies the Mittag-Leffler condition* (ML)*, then $\alpha_p$ is an isomorphism.*

**Lemma 11.3.3.** *Given a morphism of complexes of abelian sheaves $\alpha^\cdot : G^\cdot \to F^\cdot$ and an injective resolution $\varphi^\cdot : F^\cdot \to I^\cdot$, there exists an injective resolution $\psi^\cdot : G^\cdot \to J^\cdot$ and a commutative diagram*

$$\begin{array}{ccc} F^\cdot & \xrightarrow{\varphi^\cdot} & I^\cdot \\ {\scriptstyle\alpha^\cdot}\uparrow & & \uparrow{\scriptstyle\beta^\cdot} \\ G^\cdot & \xrightarrow{\psi^\cdot} & J^\cdot \end{array}$$

*with the property that, for every $p$, there is an isomorphism $J^p \widetilde{\to} I^p \oplus K^p$ such that $\beta^p$ is the projection onto the first summand.*

*Proof.* For a complex of abelian sheaves $K^\cdot$ and a homomorphism $\gamma : K^0 \to L$, there is a complex $K^\cdot_\gamma$ with $K^0_\gamma = L$ and a quasi-isomorphism of complexes $\gamma^\cdot : K^\cdot \to K^\cdot_\gamma$ with $\gamma^0 = \gamma$ which possess the universal property that, for any pair consisting of a morphism of complexes $\delta^\cdot : K^\cdot \to P^\cdot$ and a homomorphism $L \to P^0$ whose composition with $\gamma$ coincides with $\delta^0$, $\delta^\cdot$ goes through a unique morphism of complexes $K^\cdot_\gamma \to P^\cdot$. (The complex $K^\cdot_\gamma$ is constructed as follows: $K^0_\gamma = L$ and, for $i \geq 1$, $K^i_\gamma$ is the cokernel of the homomorphism $K^{i-1} \to K^i \oplus K^{i-1}_\gamma : (x \mapsto (d^{i-1}_K(x), -\gamma^{i-1}(x))$.)

Let $\chi : G^0 \to K^0$ be an embedding in an injective sheaf. Then the sheaf $J^0 = I^0 \oplus K^0$ is also injective, and denote by $\psi^0$ the homomorphism $G^0 \to J^0 : x \mapsto (\alpha^0(\varphi^0(x)), \psi(x))$. The canonical projection $\beta^0 : J^0 \to I^0$ gives rise to a morphism of complexes $G^\cdot_{\psi^0} \to F^\cdot_{\varphi^0}$. Application of the same procedure to the induced morphism of truncated complexes $\sigma_{\geq 1}(G^\cdot_{\psi^0}) \to \sigma_{\geq 1}(F^\cdot_{\varphi^0})$ and the injective resolution $\sigma_{\geq 1}(F^\cdot_{\varphi^0}) \to \sigma_{\geq 1}(I^\cdot)$ gives an inductive procedure for constructing the required injective resolution of $G^\cdot$. ☐

*Proof of Proposition 11.3.2.* Step 1. By Lemma 11.3.3, applied inductively to morphisms of complexes $F^\cdot_{r+1} \to F^\cdot_r$ we can find a compatible system of injective resolutions $\beta^\cdot_r : F^\cdot_r \to I^\cdot_r$ such that $I^p_{r+1} \widetilde{\to} I^p_r \oplus K^p_r$ and $\beta^\cdot_r$ is the projection onto the first summand. Then all of the sheaves $I^p$ from the projective limit of complexes $I^\cdot = \varprojlim_r I^\cdot_r$ are injective. We are going to show that the canonical morphism $F^\cdot \to I^\cdot$ is a quasi-isomorphism.

Step 2. *For every $U \in \mathcal{B}$ and every $r \geq 1$, the morphism $F^\cdot_r(U) \to I^\cdot_r(U)$ is a quasi-isomorphism.* Indeed, since $F^\cdot_r \to I^\cdot_r$ is an injective resolution, it induces an isomorphism of hypercohomology groups $R^p\Gamma(U, F^\cdot_r) \widetilde{\to} R^p\Gamma(U, I^\cdot_r)$. But the spectral sequence $E^{p,q}_1 = H^q(U, F^p_r) \Longrightarrow R^{p+q}\Gamma(U, F^\cdot_r)$ and the condition (2) imply that $R^p\Gamma(U, F^\cdot_r) = F^p(U)$ for all $p \geq 0$. Since one also has $R^p\Gamma(U, I^\cdot_r) = I^p_r(U)$ for all $p \geq 0$, the claim follows.

Step 3. *For every $U \in \mathcal{B}$, the morphism $F^\cdot(U) \to I^\cdot(U)$ is a quasi-isomorphism.* Indeed, by the condition (1), all of the homomorphisms $F^p_{r+1}(u) \to F^p_r(U)$ are surjective and, by the construction of the sheaves $I^q_r$ the same is true for them. We can therefore apply Proposition (4.4) from [Har75], and we get a homomorphism of exact sequences

$$
\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
0 & \longrightarrow & \varprojlim_r{}^{(1)} H^{p-1}(F^\cdot_r(U)) & \longrightarrow & H^p(F^\cdot(U)) & \longrightarrow & \varprojlim_r H^p(F^\cdot_r(U)) & \longrightarrow & 0 \\
 & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\
0 & \longrightarrow & \varprojlim_r{}^{(1)} H^{p-1}(I^\cdot_r(U)) & \longrightarrow & H^p(I^\cdot(U)) & \longrightarrow & \varprojlim_r H^p(I^\cdot_r(U)) & \longrightarrow & 0
\end{array}
$$

By Step 1, the left and right vertical arrows are isomorphisms and, therefore, so is the middle one. This implies that $F^\cdot \to I^\cdot$ is an injective resolusion of $F^\cdot$.

Step 4. *The proposition is true.* Indeed, one has $R^pT(F^\cdot_r) = H^p(T(I^\cdot_r))$ and, by Step 3, one also has $R^pT(F^\cdot) = H^p(T(I^\cdot))$. Since the functor $T$ commutes with direct products, one has $T(I^\cdot) = \varprojlim_r T(I^\cdot_r))$, and since $I^p_r$ ia a direct summand of

$I^p_{r+1}$, the homomorphisms $T(I^p_{r+1}) \to T(I^p_r)$ are surjective. The required fact now follows from the same Proposition (4.4) from [Har75]. □

*Proof of Theorem 11.3.1.* We apply Proposition 11.3.2 to formal scheme $\mathfrak{X}$ which coincides, as a topological space, with each $\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}$. The base $\mathcal{B}$ consists of open affine subschemes. The sheaves $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}}$ and $\omega^q_{\mathfrak{X}_{s_r}/K^\circ_r}$ are coherent on $\mathcal{X}_{s_r}$ and, therefore, the condition (2) is satisfied. That (1) holds follows from the same coherence and the construction of those sheaves, which implies surjectivity of the canonical homomorphisms from $(r+1)$-th sheaf to $r$-th one. Furthermore, the functor $T$ is the functor of global sections and, finally, the Mittag-Leffler condition is satisfied, by Corollary 11.2.2. This implies Theorem 11.3.1. □

11.4. **Proof of Theorem 11.1.1.** Step 1. By the definition of the functor $R\Theta$ and Corollary 10.3.2, there is a compatible system of canonical isomorphisms in the derived category

$$R\Theta(\mathbf{F}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r}} ,$$

and it gives rise to a compatible system of isomorphisms of finitely dimensional $\mathbf{F}$-vector spaces $H^q(\mathfrak{X}_\eta, \mathbf{F}) \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}^h_{s_r})$. By Theorem 11.2.1, the group on the right hand side of the latter isomorphism is canonically isomorphic to $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathfrak{X}_{s_r})$ and, therefore, the statement (i) follows from Theorem 11.3.1.

Step 2. Similarly, by the definition of the functor $R\Psi^h_\eta$ and Proposition 10.6.1, there is a compatible system of isomorphisms of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules in the derived category

$$R\Psi^h_\eta(\mathbf{F}_{\mathfrak{X}_\eta}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r} \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}} ,$$

where $\mathcal{X}_r = \mathfrak{X}^h_{\mathbf{C},s_r}$, which in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$ define a compatible system of $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$-semilinear automorphisms of order two $\vartheta$ of the complex $\omega^\cdot_{\mathcal{X}^h_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}}$ in the derived category. In this way we get a compatible system of isomorphisms of $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-modules

$$H^q(\mathfrak{X}_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r} \widetilde{\to} H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}) ,$$

which are free $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$-modules of finite rank and which, in the case $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{R}$, are compatible with the $K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}$-semilinear automorphisms $\vartheta$ acting on both sides.

It remains to show that $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r}) = H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$ is a distinguished $W(K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$-module. Since the facts already established imply that the properties (1) and (2) of Definitions 4.5.1 and 4.5.4 hold, we have to verify the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i \delta_\varpi)$ for the action on $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h_r/K^\circ_{\mathbf{C},r})$. For this we may assume that $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{C}$. (Recall that the property (3) of Definition 4.5.4 follows from that of Definition 4.5.1.)

Step 3. We set $X = \mathcal{X}^h_r$, $R = K^\circ_r$, and fix $\varpi \in \Pi(R)$. Since $\mathcal{X}_r$ is quasicompact, the set $I$ consisting of $\lambda \in \mathbf{Q} \cap [0, r)$ with $\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda} \neq 0$ is finite. By Proposition 10.5.1, there is a canonical quasi-isomorphism of complexes $\oplus_{\lambda \in I} L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda} \widetilde{\to} \omega^\cdot_{X/R}$. Suppose we are given an exact functor $F$ from the bounded derived category of $W(R)$-modules on $X$ to the bounded derived category of $W(R)$-modules such that all of the $R$-modules $F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R}) = H^q(F(\omega^\cdot_{X/R}))$ are finitely generated. *We claim that* *the above quasi-isomorphism of complexes induces, for every $\lambda \in I$ and every $q \geq 0$, an isomorphism*

$$F^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})\widetilde{\to}F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda = \{x \in F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})\big|(\delta_\varpi - \lambda)^n = 0 \text{ for some } n \geq 1\} .$$

Indeed, by the proof of Proposition 10.5.1, the above quasi-isomorphism identifies $\mathcal{H}^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})$ with the subsheaf $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$ of $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})$ at which $\delta_\varpi$ acts as multiplication by $\lambda$ (it is the sheaf $\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda} \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}} \bigwedge^q \overline{M}^{(nont)}_X$). It follows that, for every $\lambda' \neq \lambda$, the operator $\delta_\varpi - \lambda'$ is invertible on $L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda}$ and, therefore, the image of $F^q(L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})$ in $F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})$ is contained in $F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$. Since $F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R}) = \oplus_{\lambda\in I}F^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$, the claim follows.

Step 4. It suffices to verify the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ on each of the subspaces $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)_\lambda$. For this we use the theory of semi-algebraic sets (see [Hir75]). This theory implies that the space $X$ can be represented as a union of increasing sequence of compact subsets $Y_1 \subset Y_2 \subset \dots$ with the following properties:

(1) the union of the topological interiors of $Y_n$ in $X$ coincides with $X$;
(2) each $Y_n$ has the structure of a finite simplicial complex;
(3) the restrictions of the sheaves $\mathcal{C}_{X,\lambda}$ and $\overline{M}^{gr}_X$ to each open cell of $Y_n$ are constant.

Proposition 10.2.1 and the property (3) imply that the same property holds for all of the sheaves $\mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$ and, therefore, the spectral sequence

$$E^{p,q}_2 = R^p\Gamma(Y_n, \mathcal{H}^q(\omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda) \Longrightarrow R^{p+q}\Gamma(Y_n, \omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$$

implies that the groups $R^q\Gamma(Y_n, \omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda = R^q\Gamma(Y_n, L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})$ are of finite dimension over $\mathbf{C}$. It follows that $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)_\lambda\widetilde{\to}\varprojlim_n R^q\Gamma(Y_n, \omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$. We can therefore find $m \geq n \geq 1$ such that the homomorphism $H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)_\lambda \to R^q\Gamma(Y_n, \omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$ is injective and its image coincides with that of $R^q\Gamma(Y_m, \omega^\cdot_{X/R})_\lambda$. Since $Y_m$ is compact, the canonical homomorphism $\varinjlim_p R^q\Gamma(Y_m, {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda}) \to R^q\Gamma(Y_m, L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})$ is a bijection. Again, since the group on the right hand side is of finite dimension over $\mathbf{C}$, we can find $p$ for which the homomorphism $R^q\Gamma(Y_m, {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda}) \to R^q\Gamma(Y_m, L^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda})$ is surjective. In this way, we get a surjective homomorphism of $W(R)$-modules

$$R^q\Gamma(Y_m, {}^pL^{(\varpi)\cdot}_{X,\lambda}) \to H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/R)_\lambda .$$

Thus, the equality $\sigma^{(\varpi)} = \exp(-2\pi i\delta_\varpi)$ for the action on the left hand side implies the same equality for the action on the right hand side. □

11.5. **Proof of Theorem 11.1.5.** Step 1. Consider the commutative diagram, in which the horizontal arrows are isomorphisms, provided by Corollary 10.3.2, and the left vertical arrow is an isomorphism, by Theorem 9.2.1,

$$\begin{array}{ccc} H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_\eta, \mathbf{F}) & \longrightarrow & H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_\eta, \mathbf{F}) & \longrightarrow & H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}}) \end{array}$$

It follows that the right vertical arrow is an isomorphism, and this gives the statement (i).

Step 2. Consider the similar commutative diagram, in which the horizontal arrows are isomorphisms, provided by Proposition 10.6.1 and Theorem 11.1.1,

$$\begin{array}{ccc} H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} & \longrightarrow & H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\mathbf{C}}/\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \otimes_{\mathbf{F}} \widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}} & \longrightarrow & H^q_{\mathrm{dR}}((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_{\mathbf{C}}/\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}}) \end{array}$$

By Theorem 9.2.1, one has $H^q(\mathcal{X}^h(\mathcal{Y}^h)_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F}) \widetilde{\to} H^q((\widehat{\mathcal{X}}_{/\mathcal{Y}})_{\overline{\eta}}, \mathbf{F})$, and the statement (ii) easily follows from Theorem 11.1.1(ii).

Step 3. The upper and lower horizontal arrows in the above diagram are compatible homomorphisms of $W(\mathcal{K}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$ and $W(\widehat{\mathcal{K}}^\circ_{\mathbf{C}})$-modules, respectively, by the construction of §10.5. This implies the statements (iii) and (iv). □

## References


[AG71] Alling, N.; Greenleaf, N.: *Foundations of the theory of Klein surfaces*, Lecture Notes in Math. **219** Springer-Verlag, Berlin-New York, 1971.

[Ber90] Berkovich, V. G.: *Spectral theory and analytic geometry over non-Archimedean fields*, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs, vol. 33, American Mathematical Society, 1990.

[Ber93] Berkovich, V. G.: *Étale cohomology for non-Archimedean analytic spaces*, Publ. Math. IHES **78** (1993), 5-161.

[Ber94] Berkovich, V. G.: *Vanishing cycles for formal schemes*, Invent. Math. **115** (1994), 539-571.

[Ber95] Berkovich, V. G.: *On the comparison theorem for étale cohomology of non-Archimedean analytic spaces*, Israel J. Math. **92** (1995), 45-60.

[Ber96a] Berkovich, V. G.: *Vanishing cycles for non-Archimedean analytic spaces*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **9** (1996), no. 4, 1187-1209.

[Ber96b] Berkovich, V. G.: *Vanishing cycles for formal schemes. II*, Invent. Math. **125** (1996), no. 2, 367-390.

[Ber99] Berkovich, V. G.: *Smooth p-adic analytic spaces are locally contractible*, Invent. Math. **137** (1999), no. 1, 1-84.

[Ber00] Berkovich, V. G.: *An analog of Tate's conjecture over local and finitely generated fields*, Internat. Math. Res. Notices **2000**, no. 13, 665-680.

[Ber06] Berkovich, V. G.: *Integration of one-forms on p-adic analytic spaces*, Annals of Mathematics Studies **162**, Princeton University Press, Princeton and Oxford, 2006, 156 pp.

[Ber15] Berkovich, V. G.: *Finiteness theorems for vanishing cycles of formal schemes*, Israel J. Math. **210**, No. 1 (2015), 147-191.

[BGR84] Bosch, S.; Güntzer, U.; Remmert, R.: *Non-Archimedean analysis. A systematic approach to rigid analytic geometry*, Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften, Bd. 261, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1984.

[BL93] Bosch, S.; Lütkebohmert, W.: *Formal and rigid geometry. I. Rigid spaces*, Math. Ann. **295** (1993), no. 2, 291-317.

[Bou] Bourbaki, N.: *Commutative Algebra*, Hermann, Paris, 1972.

[Con07] Conrad, B.: *Deligne's notes on Nagata compactifications*, J. Ramanujan Math. Soc. **22** (2007), no. 3, 205-257.

[Del70] Deligne, P.: *Équations différentielles à points singuliers réguliers*, Lecture Notes in Math. **163** Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1970.

[Del71] Deligne, P.: *Théorie de Hodge. II*, Publ. Math. IHES **40** (1974), 5-57.

[Del74] Deligne, P.: *Théorie de Hodge. III*, Publ. Math. IHES **44** (1974), 5-77.

[deJ95] de Jong, A. J.: *Crystalline Dieudonné module theory via formal and rigid geometry*, Publ. Math. IHES **82** (1995), 5-96.

[EGA1] Grothendieck, A.; Dieudonné, J.: *Eléments de Géométrie Algébrique. I. Le langage des schémas*, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1971.

[EGA3] Grothendieck, A.; Dieudonné, J.: *Eléments de Géométrie Algébrique. III. Étude cohomologique des faisceaux cohérents*, Publ. Math. I.H.E.S. **11** (1961), **17** (1963).

[EGA4] Grothendieck, A.; Dieudonné, J.: *Eléments de Géométrie Algébrique. IV. Étude locale des schémas et des morphismes de schémas*, Publ. Math. I.H.E.S. **20** (1964), **25** (1965), **28** (1966), **32** (1967).

[Fri67] Frisch, J.: *Points de platitude d'un morphisme d'espaces analytiques complexes*, Invent. Math. **4** (1967), 118-138.

[GG73] Golubitsky, M.; Guillemin, V.: *Stable mappings and their singularities*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics, Vol. 14. Springer-Verlag, New York-Heidelberg, 1973.

[Gro57] Grothendieck, A.: *Sur quelques points d'algèbre homologique*, Tôhoku Math. J. **9** (1957), 119-221.

[Gro66] Grothendieck, A.: *On de Rham cohomology of algebraic varieties*, Publ. Math. I.H.E.S. **29** (1966), 95-103.

[GMT86] Guaraldo, F.; Macrì, P.; Tancredi, A.: *Topics on real analytic spaces*, Advanced Lectures in Mathematics. Friedr. Vieweg & Sohn, Braunschweig, 1986.

[Har75] Hartshorne, R.: *On de Rham cohomology of algebraic varieties*, Publ. Math. I.H.E.S. **45** (1975), 5-99.

[Hir75] Hironaka, H.: *Triangulations of algebraic sets*, Algebraic geometry (Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Vol. 29, Humboldt State Univ., Arcata, Calif., 1974), pp. 165-185. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, R.I., 1975.

[HoAt55] Hodge, W. V. D.; Atiyah, M. F.: *Integrals of the Second Kind on an Algebraic Variety*, Ann. of Math. **62** (1955), 56-91.

[Ill94] Illusie, L.: *Autour du théorème de monodromie locale*, Astérisque **223** (1994), 9-57.

[Ill02] Illusie, L.: *An overview of the work of K. Fujiwara, K. Kato, and C. Nakayama on logarithmic étale cohomology* in *Cohomologies p-adiques et applications arithmétiques, II*, Astérisque **279** (2002), 271-322.

[Kap12] Kappen, C.: *Uniformly rigid spaces*, Algebra Number Theory **6** (2012), no. 2, 341-388.

[Kato89] Kato, K.: *Logarithmic structures of Fontaine-Illusie* in *Algebraic analysis, geometry, and number theory*, Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore, 1989, 191-224.

[KN99] Kato, K.; Nakayama, C.: *Log Betti cohomology, log étale cohomology, and log de Rham cohomology of log schemes over* **C**, Kodai Math. J. **22** (1999), 161-186.

[KO68] Katz, N.; Oda, T.: *On the differentiation of De Rham cohomology classes with respect to parameters*, J. Math. Kyoto Univ. **8** (1968), 199-213.

[Kie67] Kiehl, R.: *Die de Rham Kohomologie algebraischer Mannigfaltigkeiten über einem bewerteten Körper*, Publ. Math. I.H.E.S. **33** (1967), 5-20.

[KS11] Kontsevich, M.; Soibelman, Y.: *Cohomological Hall algebra, exponential Hodge structures and motivic Donaldson-Thomas invariants*, Commun. Number Theory Phys. **5** (2011), no. 2, 231-352.

[MW68] Monsky, P.; Washnitzer, G.: *Formal cohomology. I*, Ann. of Math. **88** (1968), 181-217.

[Nak98] Nakayama, C.: *Nearby cycles for log smooth families*, Compos. Math. **112** no. 1 (1998), 45-75.

[Ogus03] Ogus, A.: *On the logarithmic Riemann-Hilbert correspondence*, Doc. Math. Extra Vol. (2003), 655-724.

[Ray74] Raynaud, M.: *Géométrie analytique rigide d'après Tate, Kiehl, ...*, Bull. Soc. Math. France, Mém. **39-40** (1974), 319-327.

[SGA4] Artin, M; Grothendieck, A; Verdier, J.-L.: *Théorie des Topos et Cohomologie Étale des Schémas*, Lecture Notes in Math. **269, 270, 305**, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1972-1973.

[SGA4$\frac{1}{2}$] Deligne, P. et al.: *Cohomologie Étale*, Lecture Notes in Math. **569**, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1977.

[SGA7] Grothendieck, A; Deligne, P.; Katz, N.: *Groupes de Monodromie en Géométrie Algébrique*, Lecture Notes in Math. **288, 340**, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg-New York, 1972-1973.

[Sh76] Shiota, M.: *Some results on formal power series and differentiable functions*, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci. **12** (1976), 49-53.

[Siu69] Siu, Y.-T.: *Noetherianness of rings of holomorphic functions on Stein compact series*, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. bf 21 (1969), 483-489.

[Ste76] Steenbrink, J.: *Limits of Hodge structures*, Invent. Math. **31** (1976), no. 3, 229-257.

[Tem04] Temkin, M.: *On local properties of non-Archimedean analytic spaces. II*, Isr. J. Math. **140** (2004), 1-27.

[Tem08] Temkin, M.: *Desingularization of quasi-excellent schemes in characteristic zero*, Advances in Math. **219** (2008), 488-522.

[Tem18] Temkin, M.: *Functorial desingularization over* **Q***: boundaries and the embedded case*, Israel J. Math. (to appear) arXiv:0912.2570

[Ver76] Verdier, J.-L.: *Classe d'homologie associée à un cycle*, Asterisque **36-37** (1976), 189-228.

## Index of Notations

# Index of Terminology

Department of Mathematics, The Weizmann Institute of Science, P.O.B. 26, 7610001 Rehovot, ISRAEL
*E-mail address*: vladimir.berkovich@weizmann.ac.il